



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

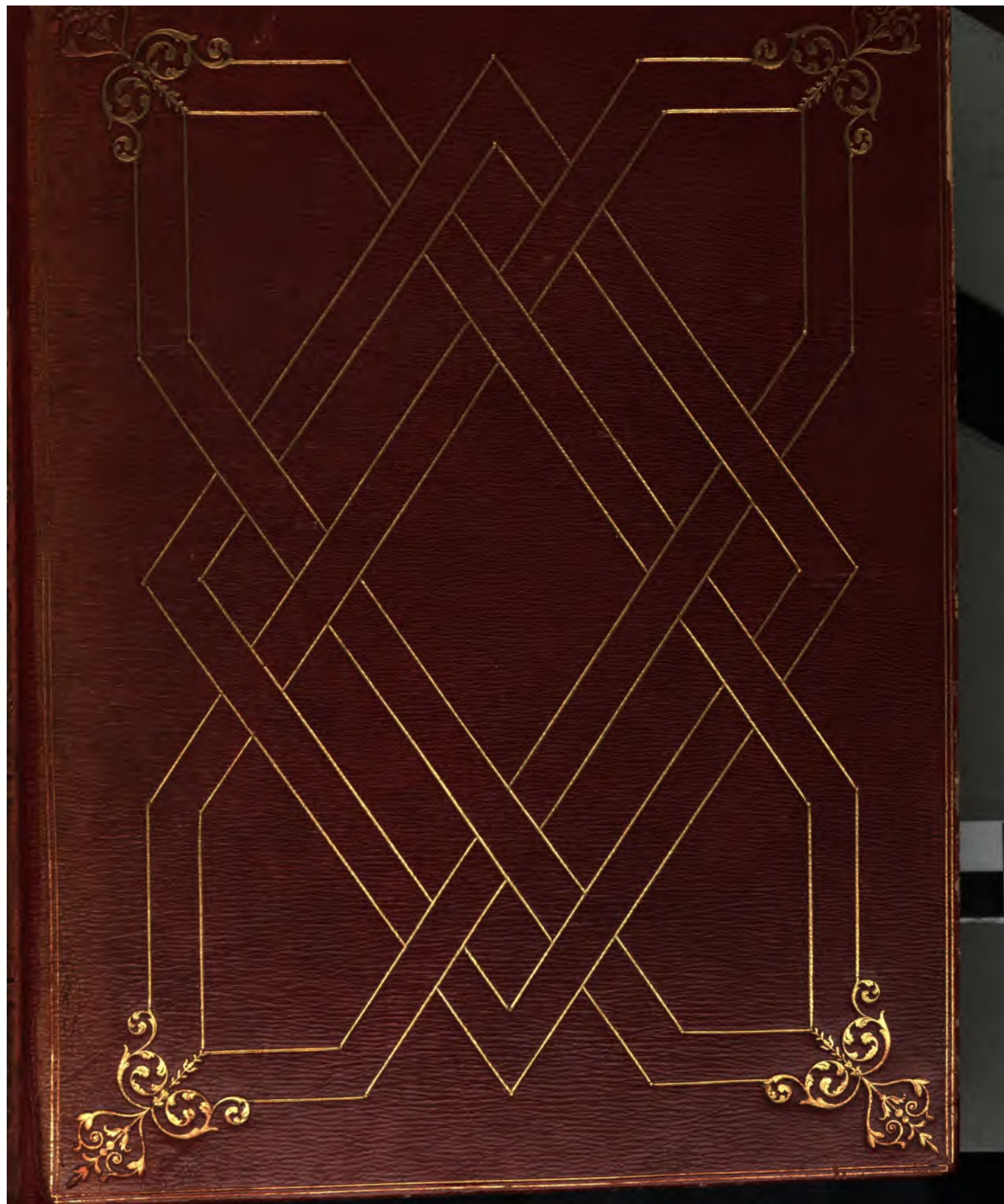
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

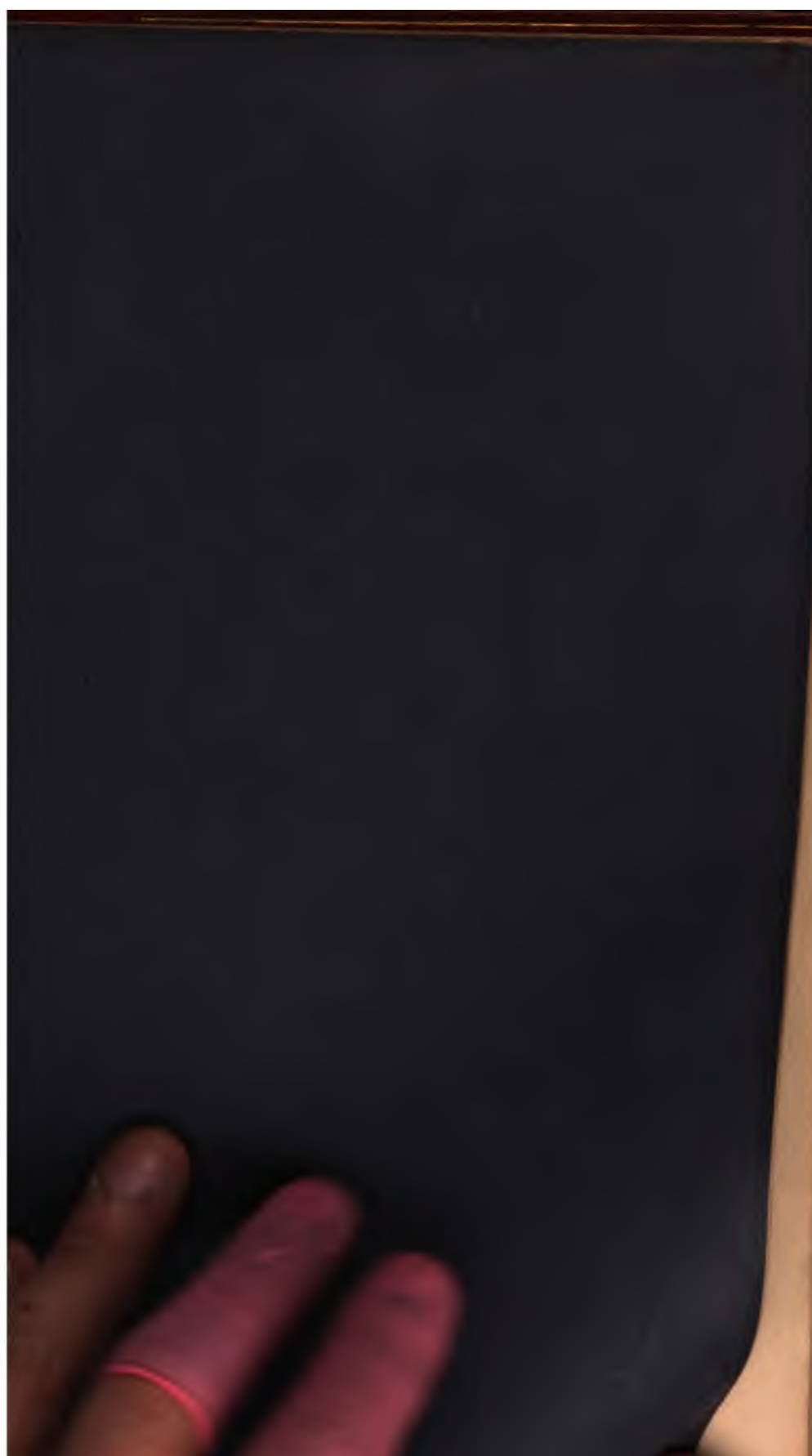




046236R



Baron Northwick



2

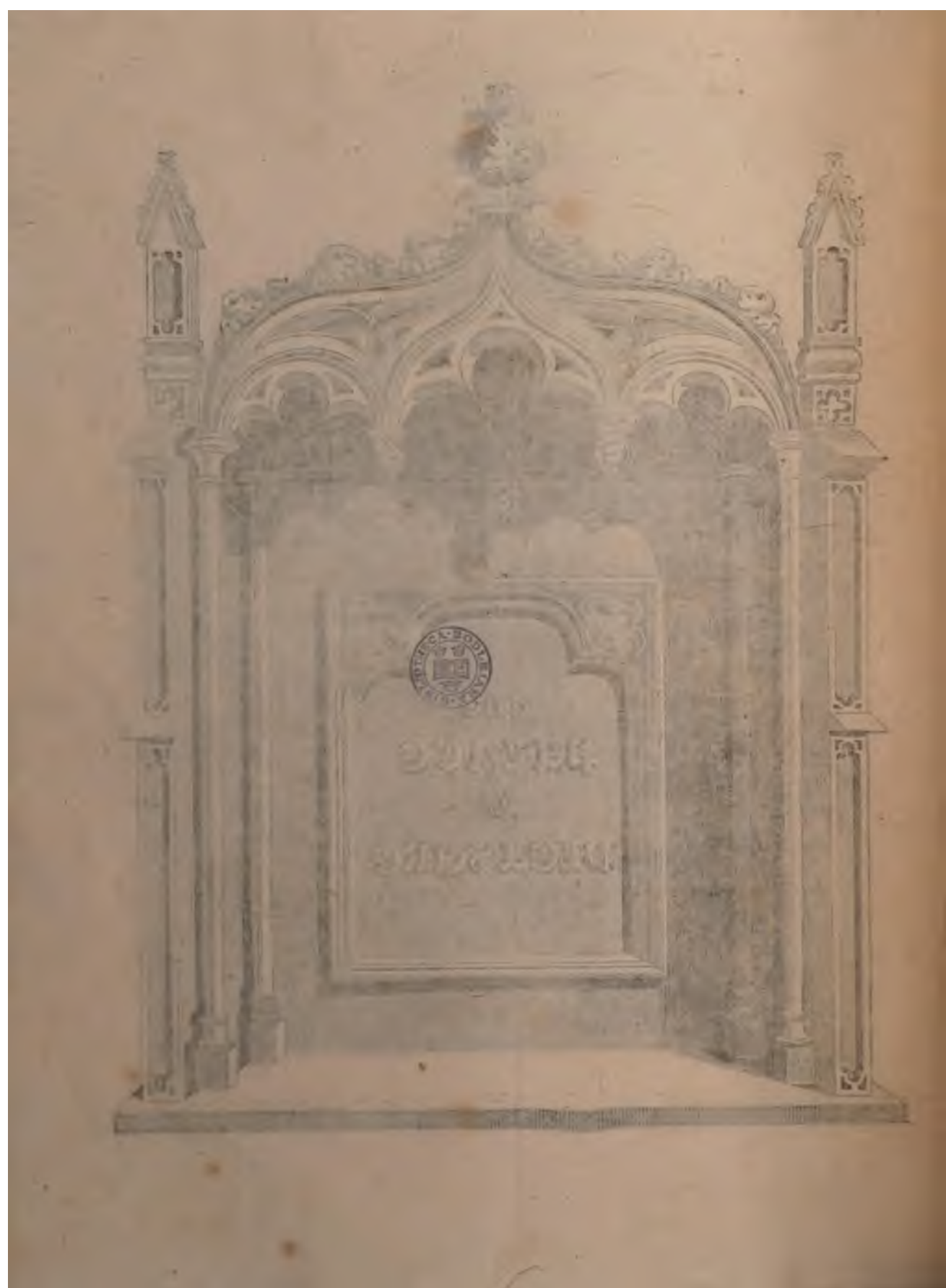
2698

d.

$\frac{77}{1}$







THE FIRST TOME

OF THE

Palace of Pleasure,

TIFIED, ADORNED, AND WELL FURNISHED WITH
PLEASANT HISTORIES AND EXCELLENT NOVELS.

Very requisite for Delight and Profit.

CHOSEN AND SELECTED OUT OF DIVERS GOOD AND
COMMENDABLE AUTHORS.

By William Painter.

From the Edition printed by Thomas Marsh, 1575.

EDITED BY JOSEPH HASLEWOOD.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR ROBERT TRIPHOOK, ST. JAMES'S STREET,
HARDING AND WRIGHT, ST. JOHN'S SQUARE.

1813.

100

Preliminary Matter.

OF THE TRANSLATOR.

WILLIAM PAINTER was, probably, descended from some branch of the family of that name which resided in Kent. Except a few official dates there is little else of his personal history known. Neither the time nor place of his birth has been discovered. All the heralds in their Visitations are uniformly content with making him the root of the pedigree.* His liberal education is, in part, a testimony of the respectability of his family, and, it may be observed, he was enabled to make purchases of landed property in Kent, but whether from an hereditary fortune is uncertain.

The materials for his life are so scanty, that a chronological notice of his Writings may be admitted, without being deemed to interrupt a narrative, of which it must form the principal contents.

He himself furnishes us with a circumstance,† from whence we may fix a date of some importance in ascertaining both the time of the publication and of his own appearance as an author. He translated from the Latin of Nicholas Moffan, (a soldier serving under Charles the Fifth, and taken prisoner by the Turks)‡ the Relation of the Murder which Sultan Solymán caused to be

* The Visitation Book of 1619, in the Heralds College, supplied Hasted with his account. There may also be consulted Harl. MSS. 1106, 2230 and 6138.

† Palace of Pleasure, Vol. II. p. 663.

‡ The translation is reprinted in the second volume. Of the original edition there is not any notice in Herbert.

perpetrated on his eldest Son Mustapha.* This was first dedicated to Sir William Cobham Knight, afterwards Lord Cobham, Warden of the Cinque Ports; and it is material to remark, that that nobleman succeeded to the title Sept. the 29th, 1558;† and from the author being a prisoner until Sept. 1555, it is not likely that the Translation was finished earlier than circa 1557-8.

In 1560 the learned William Fulke, D. D. attacked some inconsistent, though popular, opinions, in a small Latin tract called "Antiprognosticon contra invtiles astrologorum prædictiones Nostrodami, &c." and at the back of the title are Verses,‡ by friends of the author, the first being entitled "Gulielmi Painteri ludimagistri Seuenochensis Tetrasticon." This has been considered by Tanner as our author,§ nor does there appear any reason for attempting to controvert that opinion; and a translation of Fulke's Tract also seems to identify our author with the master of Sevenoaks School. The title is "Antiprognosticon, that is to saye, an Inuective agaynst the vayne and vnprofitable predictions of the Astrologians as Nostrodame, &c. Translated out of Latine into Englishe. Wherevnto is added by the author a shorte Treatise in Englyshe as well for the vtter subuersion of that fained arte, as also for the better vnderstandynge of the common people, vnto whom the fyrst labour semeth not sufficient. *Habet & musca splenem & formice sua bilis inest.* 1560" 12mo. At the back of the title is a sonnet by Henry Bennet: followed in the next page by Painter's Address. On the reverse of this last page is a prose address "to his louyng frende W. F." dated "From Seuenoke xxii of Octobre," and signed "Your familiar frende Willyam Paynter."||

* This happened in 1552, and Moffan remained a captive until Sept. 1555.

† Brydges's *Peerage*, Vol. IX. p. 466. Banks's *Dormant Peerage*, Vol. II. p. 108.

‡ These verses were answered by another Kentish writer. "In conuersium Palengenii Barnabæ Gogæ carmen E. Deringe Cantiani," prefixed to *the firste sixe booke of the mooste christian poet Marcellus Palingenius, called the Zodiacke of Life*. Translated by Barnabe Googe, 1561. 12mo. See Cens. Lit. Vol. II. p. 212. Where it appears that Barnaby Googe was connected with several Kentish families. He married a Darell. His grandmother was Lady Hales.

§ *Bibliotheca*, p. 570.

|| M. S. Ashmole, 302. Mr. H. Ellis has kindly furnished me with the above,

By the regulations of the school, as grammar-master, he must have been a bachelor of arts, and approved by the Archbishop of Canterbury, and to the appointment was attached a house and salary of 50l. per annum.*

Of the appointment to the School I have not been able to obtain any particulars. That situation† was probably left for one under government, of less labour, as he was appointed by letters patent of the 9th of Feb. in the 2d of Eliz. (1560-1) to succeed John Rogers, deceased, as Clerk of the Ordinance in the Tower, with the official stipend of eightpence per diem, which place he retained during life.

In 1562 there was a license obtained by William Jones to print "The Cytie of Cyvelite, translated into Englesshe by william paynter." Probably this was intended for the present work, and entered in the Stationers Register as soon as the translation was commenced, to secure an undoubted copy-right to the Publisher. Neither of the stories bear such a title, nor contain incidents in character with it. The interlocutory mode of delivery, after the manner of some of the originals, might have been at first intended, and of the conversation introducing or ending some of those taken from the collection of the Queen of Navarre, a part is even now, though incongruously, retained.‡ By rejecting the gallant speeches of the courtiers and sprightly replies of the ladies, and making them unconnected stories, the idea of civility was no longer appropriate, and therefore gave place to a title equally alliterative in the adoption of the Palace of Pleasure.

Under this conjecture Painter was three years perfecting the

during a late visit to Oxford, and observes that the reference in Tanner is wrongly stated, the article being in Ashmole's study.

* Hasted's *Hist. of Kent*, Vol. III. p. 98.

† If Painter laid in this School the foundation of that fortune, which he afterwards appears to have realised in land, he did no more than was done by a celebrated successor, Thomas Farnaby, a well-known annotator on Horace, who settled his male posterity at Keppington in the parish of Sevenoaks, where they remained in rank and opulence, till the late Sir Charles Farnaby, Bart. who at one time in the present reign represented the County of Kent, sold that seat and estate to Francis Motley Austen, Esq. the present owner.

‡ George Whetstone has *An Heptameron of Ciuill Discourses*, &c. 1582.

Translation of the first volume of the Palace of Pleasure. He subscribes the dedicatory Epistle "nere the Tower of London the first of Januarie 1566," using the new style, a fashion recently imported from France.* It must be read as 1565-6 to explain a passage in another Epistle before the second volume, where he speaks of his histories "parte wherof, two yeares past (almost) wer made commune in a former boke," concluding "from my poore house besides the Toure of London, the fourthe of Nouember, 1567." The two volumes were afterwards enlarged with additional novels, as will be described under a future head, and with the completion of this task ends all knowledge of his literary productions.

It no where appears in the Palace of Pleasure that Painter either travelled for information, or experienced, like many a genius of that age, the inclination to roam expressed by his contemporary Churchyard,

"Of running leather were his shues, his feete no where could reste." †

Had he visited the Continent, it is probable, that in the course of translating so many novels, abounding with foreign manners and scenery, there would have been some observation or allusion to vouch his knowledge of the faithfulness of the representation, as, in a few instances, he has introduced events common in our own history.

He probably escaped the military fury of the age by being appointed "Clerk to the great Ordinance," contentedly hearing the loud peals upon days of revelry, without wishing to adventure further in "a game," which, "were subjects wise, kings would not play at." In the possession of some competence he might prudently adjust his pursuits, out of office, to the rational and not unimportant indulgence of literature, ‡ seeking in the retirement

* In France the style was altered in 1564. *Clavis Calendaria*. Vol. I. p. 64.

† *Bibliographical Miscellanies*, 1813. p. 2.

‡ This is confirmed by his making the following observation: "When labour resteth him selfe in me, and leisure refresheth other affairs, nothing delights more that vacant tyme than readinge of Histories in such vulgar speache, wherein my small knowledge taketh repast." *Epistle Dedicatory*, Vol. II. p. 4.

of the study, of the vales of Kent, and of domestic society, that equanimity of the passions and happiness which must ever flow from rational amusement, from contracted desires, and acts of virtue; and which the successive demands for his favourite work might serve to cheer and enliven.

As the founder of the family* his money must be presumed to have been gained by himself, and not acquired by descent. It would be pleasing to believe some part of it to have been derived from the labours of his pen. But his productions were not of sufficient magnitude to command it, although he must rank as one of the first writers who introduced novels into our language, since so widely lucrative to—printers. Yet less could there accrue a saving from his office to enable him to complete the purchases of land made at Gillingham, co. Kent.

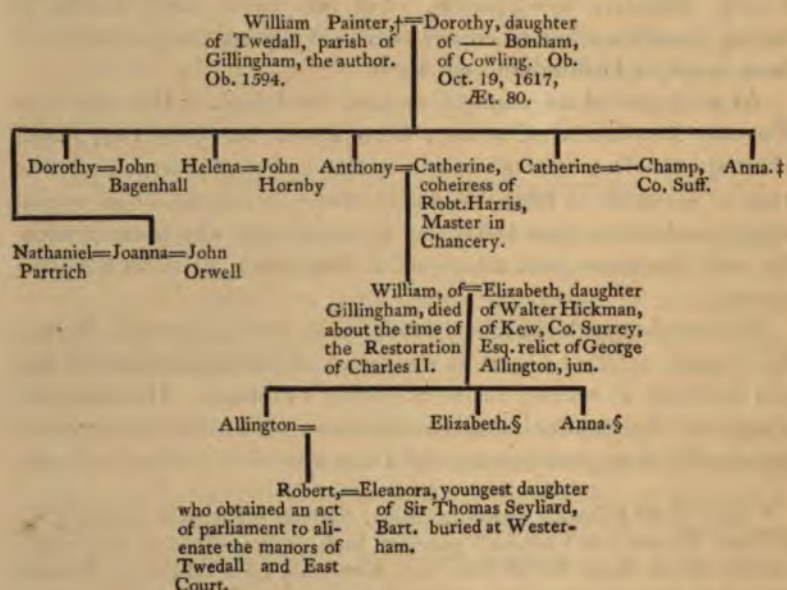
At what period he married cannot be stated. His wife was Dorothy Bonham of Cowling, born about the year 1537, and their six children were all nearly adults, and one married, at the time of his death in 1594. We may therefore conclude that event could not be later than 1565; and if he obtained any portion with his wife the same date allows of a disposition of it as now required.

It is certain that he purchased of Thomas and Christopher Webb the manor of East-Court in the parish of Gillingham, where his son Anthony P. resided during his father's lifetime. He also purchased of Christopher Sampson the manor of Twidall in the same parish with its appurtenances, and a fine was levied for that purpose

* Some of the following notices, probably, relate to branches of the family.—William Paynter "de Vkefield," possessed lands at Horsemonden, Benynden, and Merden, co. Kent. He left three sons, Alexander, John and Robert. His will dated 25th Feb. 24. Hen. 7th. (1509) and proved in November following.—John P. Citizen and Freemason of London, by Will dated 26th Nov. 1532, proved 1537, gave to the children of his late brother Richard P. late of Littleport, co. Kent, 6s. 8d. each. He was to be buried at St. Albans, Wood Street, where on inquiry I am informed the Registers of that period do not exist.—John P. twice Mayor of Dover, died 14th July, 1540, buried at Rainham, same co. See Weever's *Funeral Monuments*.—Edmonde P. Steward to the Bishop of Ely, held a patent place, and by his will dated 7th Sept. 14 Eliz. (1572) gave to his brother's daughter "Johane" forty pounds. Probably the eldest daughter of our Author.

in Easter Term 16 Eliz. Both the manors remained in the family, and passed by direct line from the above named Anthony, through William and Allington, his son and grandson, to his great grandson Robert, who resided at Westerham, in the same county, and obtained an Act of Parliament, 7 Geo. 1. "to enable him to sell the manors of Twydal and East-Court."*

* Hasted's *History of Kent.* art. GILLINGHAM. The following pedigree of the family is collected from Hasted and the Harleian MSS.



ARMS. *Gules, a chevron between three griffins' heads erased or, on a chief of the second an helmet sable between two pellets.* CREST. *A lizard (as supposed) vert, escaping from the trunk of an old tree, proper.*

† Also spelt Paynter and Paynter; but neither used by the above-named William Painter, if we may rely upon the repetition of ten printed authorities.

‡ That Anna was the youngest child, is doubtful, from her father only naming her, besides Helena, as entitled to a portion. She resided with her mother, unmarried, 1617.

§ One of these married William Wiseman, a civilian.

Not any part of the real Estate was affected by the will of William Painter, who appears, from its being nuncupative, to have deferred making it, until a speedy dissolution was expected. It is as follows:

" In the name of God, Amen. The nineteenth day of February in the Year of our Lord God one thousand five hundred ninety four, in the seven and thirtieth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lady Elizabeth, &c. William Painter then Clerk of her Maj. Great Ordinance of the Tower of London, being of perfect mind and memory, declared and entered his mind meaning and last Will and Testament, nuncupative, by word of mouth in effect as followeth, viz. Being then very sick and asked by his wife who should pay his son in law John Hornbie the portion which was promised him with his wife in marriage, and who should pay to his daughter Anne Painter her portion, and to the others his children which had nothing; * and whether his said wife should pay them the same, the said William Painter answered, Yea. And being further asked whether he would give and bequeath unto his said wife all his said goods to pay them as he in former times used to say he would, to whom he answered also, yea. In the presence of William Pettila, John Pennington, and Edward Songer. Anon after in the same day confirming the premises; the said William Painter being very sick, yet of perfect memory, William Raynolds asking the aforesaid Mr. Painter whether he had taken order for the disposing of his Goods to his wife and children, and whether he had put all in his wives hands to deal and dispose of and to pay his son Hornby his portion, † and whether he would make his said wife to be his whole Executrix, or to that effect, to whose demand the said Testator Mr. William Painter then manifesting his will and true meaning therein willingly answered, yea, in the presence of William Raynolds, John Hornbie and Edward Songer." ‡

He probably died immediately after the date of the will. Among the quarterly payments at the ordinance office at Christmas 1594 is entered to "Mr. Painter Clerke of thōdiñce xvijth, xvth." and upon Lady Day or New Year's Day 1595. "To Willm Painter and to St. Stephen Ridleston ‡ Clarke of thordñce for the

* Dorothy P. (the Executrix) by her will, dated 3d July, 1617, gave a specific legacy to her granddaughter Thomasine Hornby, which was to be void if she sued or impleaded her executor, relative to any gift, legacy or bequest, under the above will; from which it may be concluded the portion of John Hornby's wife was never properly adjusted.

† Proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 3d Feb. 1595.

‡ His patent, dated 21st June 1595, gives all emoluments from the day of the death of William Painter.

like quarter also warranted xvij^{lb}. xv^s." He was buried in London.* After his death the widow retired to Gillingham, where she died Oct. 19th 1617. Æt. 80, and where she was buried.†

* In the Will of Dorothy P., already noticed, is the following direction. "In case I dye or departe this life in the Citie of London, to be buried in the same parish in London where my late loving husband Mr. William Paynter, Clerke of the great Ordinance of the Tower of London, was buried, and as neere to the place where he was buried as conuenientlie may be, with some memoriall there to be engraven sett vp or placed as shalbe devised and appoynted by my executor and overseers hereafter named; yf elsewhere then allso at their like discretions and with the like memoriall." Had she set up such a memorial for her husband, the name would probably have been found in Stowe's *Survey of London*. It does not occur in the Registers of the Tower Chapel; Allhallows Barking; St. Catherine's; or Aldgate. At St. Dunstan's, Tower Street, the register has been destroyed, and also at St. Alban's, Wood Street, where there was probably a family vault, and not being the church frequented when he lived by the Tower, the name might have been forgotten by the widow.

† Her Will was not proved until July 1620. It is unusually long, and the bequests are trifling. She particularizes all her grand-children, whom, in the language then used, she calls nephews and nieces. There had probably been some difference in the family to occasion the following passage, whereby she bequeaths the only memorial mentioned of our author. "Item, whereas my very welbeloued neiphue William Paynter, and I, and all my children, nowe are and I trust in God so shall continue loving hartie and inward frends, whereof I receyue great ioye and contentment, vnto the which my saied neiphue, for a gentle remembraunce, I give and bequeethe my tablet of gould with a pearle to yt which sometymes was his graundfather's, beyng nowe all readie in his owne keeping and possession." The will is subscribed with a cross, which the feebleness of age might render necessary.

BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTICES.

OF the first volume of THE PALACE OF PLEASURE there were three editions, but of the second only two are known. Each of these, all uncommonly fair and perfect, through the liberal indulgence of their respective owners, are now before me; a combination which has scarcely been seen by any collector, however distinguished for ardour of pursuit and extensiveness of research, since the age of Q. Elizabeth. Their rarity in a perfect state may render an accurate description, though lengthened by minuteness, of some value to the bibliographer. The account of them will be given in their chronological order.

The Palace of Pleasure | Beautified, adorned and | well
furnished, with Plea- | saunt Histories and excellent |
Nouvelles, selected out of | diuers good and commen- |
dable authours. | ¶ By William Painter Clarke of the |
Ordinaunce and Armarie. | [Wood-cut of a Bear and
ragged Staff, the crest of Ambrose Earl of Warwick,
central of a garter, whereon is the usual motto | HONI:
SOIT: QVI: MAL: Y: PENSE. | 1566. | **JMPRINTED**
AT | London, by Henry Denham, | for Richard Tottell
and William Iones.*— 4to. Extends to sig. Nnnij. besides
introduction, and is folded in fours.

This title is within a narrow fancy metal border, and on the back of the leaf are the Arms of the Earl of Warwick, which fill the page. With signature * 2 commences the dedication, and at ¶ 2 is "a recapitulacion or briefe rehersal of the Arguments of euery Nouell, with the places noted, in what author euery of the same or the effect be read and contayned." These articles occupy four leaues each, and five more occupy the address "to the reader,"

* Herbert has this edition entered as printed by Thomas Marshe, upon the authority of Mr. William White, p. 856. It was licensed to Jones as "certen historyes collected out of dyuers Ryght good and profitable authours by William Paynter." ib. 1319.

followed by the names of the Authors from whom the "nouels be selected;" making the whole introduction, with title, 14 leaves.

The nouels being lx. in number, conclude with folio 345, but there are only 289 leaves, as a castration appears of 56.* On the reverse of the last folio are "faultes escaped in the printing;" and besides those corrected, there are "other faultes [that] by small aduise and lesse payne may by waying the discourse be easely amended or lightly passed ouer." A distinct leaf has the following colophon:

Imprinted at Lon- | don, by Henry Denham, | for
Richard Tottell and | William Jones | Anno Domini.
1566 | Ianuarij 26. | These booke are to be solde at the
long shoppe | at the Weast ende of Paules.

This volume is rarely discovered perfect. The above was purchased at the late sale of Col. Stanley's library for 30l. by Sir Mark Masterman Sykes, Bt.

The second Tome | of the Palace of Pleasure, | con-
teynning manifolde store of goodlp | Histories, Tragicall
matters and | other Forall argument, | very requisite for
de- | light & profit. | Chosen and selected out of | diuers
good and commen- | dable Authors. | By William Painter,
Clarke of the | Ordinance and Armarie. | ANNO. 1567. |
Imprinted at London, in | Pater Noster Rowe, by Henrie
| Bynneman, for Nicholas | England.† 4to. Extends,
without introduction, to signature P. P. P. P. p. iiij.
and is folded in fours.

A broad metal border, of fancy pattern, adorns the title page. At signature a. ij. begins the Epistle to Sir George Howard, which the author subscribes from his "poore house besides the Toure of London, the fourthe of Nouember 1567:" and that is

* There is a lapse of signatures from O o. j. to A a. j. and of folios from 145, (misprinted 135) to 201. What occasioned the castration it is impossible to conjecture; the volume is certainly perfect, as the table of Contents has no article for the omitted leaves.

† Herbert, 967. Entered in the Stationers' Register (as Mr. G. Chalmers obligingly informs me) in 1566-7, "to Nycholas Englonde."

by a summary of the contents and authorities, making, title, 10 leaves. There are xxxiiij novels, and they end. Two leaves in continuation have "the conclusion," vers faultes escaped in printyng," and on the reverse of is the printer's colophon.

Printed at London | by Henry Bynneman | for
Englande | ANNO M.D.LXVII. | *Nouembris* 8.

of this volume was lately in the possession of Messrs. Cornhill, Booksellers, with a genuine title, though disarranged from the above, and varied in the spelling.* Compared, some unimportant alterations were found, as printed commas on the margin of one of the pages in the with the correction of a fault in printing more in one the other, though the same edition.†

allace | of Pleasure Beautified, | adorned and wel
with | Pleasaunt Historyes and excellent |
selected out of diuers | good and commenda- |
ours. | ¶ By William Painter Clarke | of the
ce and | Armarie. | 1569. | Imprinted at London
strete neare to S. Dunstones | Church by
Marsh.—4to. Extends to K k. viij, & is folded

thus: The second Tome | of the Palace of Pleasure, | conteyning
Histories | Tragicall matters and other mo- | rall argument, very
r delighe | and profit. | Chosen and selected out of | diuers good
| dable authors. | By William Painter, Clerke of the | Ordinance
Anno. 1567. | Imprinted &c."

rences are found in the earliest stage of the English press. Thus
ton's Cato, 1483, in possession of the Duke of Devonshire, has the

re begynneth the prologue or prohemye of the booke callid:

copy belonging to the Library of Lee Priory, it stands

begynneth the prologue or prohemye of the booke callyd.

d volume is undoubtedly the rarest of the two. The industrious
not appear to have seen it, as in the *Account of the English Dra-*
1891, he refers more than once to the originals for stories contained

The title is in the compartment frequently used by Marsh, having the stationers' arms at the top, his own initials at the bottom, and pedestals of a Satyr and Diana, surmounted with flowers and snakes, on the sides. It is a reprint of the first volume without alteration, except closer types. The introduction concludes on the recto of the eleventh leaf, and on the reverse of fo. 264 is the colophon. *Imprinted at London in Flete | streate neare vnto Sainct Dunstones | Church by Thomas Marshe | Anno Domini. 1569.**

THE PALACE | of Pleasure Beautified | adorned and well furnished | with pleasaunt Histories and | excellent Nouels, selected out | of diuers good and commendable Authours. Bp William Painter Clarke | of the Ordinaunce | and Armarie. | Eftsones perused corrected | and augmented. | 1575. | Imprinted at London | by Thomas Marshe.—4to. Extends to signature O o, iiij. and is folded in eights.†

Title in same compartment as the last. The introduction is given in nine leaves, and the novels commence the folio, and end at 279. The arguments of every novel, transposed from the beginning, continue for three leaves to reverse of O o iiij, having for colophon,

Imprinted at London by | Thomas Marshe.

Seven novels were added to the former number, and the language improved.

* Dr. Farmer's copy was Vol. I. 1569, and Vol. II. 1567. Purchased at the sale by Mr. Payne for fifteen guineas. [Bibl. Farm. No. 5993.] The opinion Dr. Farmer entertained of their rarity may be given in his own words: "The *Two Tomes*, which Tom Rawlinson would have called *justa volumina*, are almost annihilated. Mr. Ames, who searched after books of this sort with the utmost avidity, most certainly had not seen them, when he published his *Typographical Antiquities*, as appears from his blunders about them: and possibly I myself might have remained in the same predicament, had I not been favoured with a copy by my generous friend, Mr. Lort." *Essay on the Learning of Shakespeare*.

† Hence Tanner and others have been erroneously supposed to describe an edition in Octavo, and I have seen copies where the margin, cropped by the intolerable plough of the binder, might have been shown in proof of the conjecture.

SECOND | Tome of the Palace of | Pleasure
 ing store of goodlye | Histories, Tragical
 & other | Morall argumentes, very requi- |
 delight and | profp̄te. | Chosē and selected
 diuers good and commendable au- | thors, and now
 yn correc- | ted and encreased. | By Wiliam
 Clerke of the | Ordinance and Armarie. | Im-
 at London | In Fleatstrete by Thomas | MARSH.
 Has signature Z z 4, and is folded in eights.

the compartment last described. The introduction has
 res, and the "conclusion" is at fo. 360.* The summary
 , which stand as part of the introduction in the former
 follows, making four leaves after discontinuing the folio.
 o printer's colophon, and the type throughout is smaller
 used before. The translator added one historic tale, and
 erial alterations in the text.

spect to the date the year 1582 has been several times
 it is doubtful if I have discovered the source of the au-
 oldys, among the manuscript notes upon Langbaine,
 W. Painter's Palace of Pleasure, &c. 4to. 1569, and in
 5, and 1582:" and Mr. Bindley, whose friendly assist-
 always gratifying to record, pointed out to my attention
 ue of the library of the Honorable Bryan Fairfax,†
 volumes are increased in number, and with only a single
 and thus, Lot "336, Painter's Palace of Pleasure, 3
 . 1582:" again in the Osterley catalogue, p. 87, is No.

and 6 are repeated, and several others are erroneously numbered.
 for sale by auction by Mr. Prestage, of Savile Row, in April, 1756,
 vate contract to Mr. Child. It forms the principal part of the
 ley Park.

e expected that the third volume was formed by adding the inferior
 George Pettie, who imitated our author's title; but that was the
 succeeding lot. Pettie's work is called: A petite Pallace | of
 are: | contayning many pretie Histories | by him set foorth in
 | and most delightfully dis-coursed. | *Omne tulit punctum, | qui*
ci. | Col. Printed at London, by R[ichard] W[atkins]. n. d. but
 ationers' books 1576. Again by Wolfe, n. d. and other editions

"26, Palace of Pleasure, 1582."* To decide positively on such an unexpected repetition of the date made it desirable to obtain a sight of the copy. † That, with some difficulty, has been effected. On visiting Osterley, strange as it may appear, I found the two volumes bound in one, the same editions as those now printed from, and both wanting title pages!!

There is not much temerity in decisively pronouncing that there never was an edition in three volumes; that the date of 1582 was intended by Oldys to be only applied to the second volume; and that that date was founded on an erroneous conjecture. Two of these points are already disposed of, and the last can require but few words. The translation of the tale of Sultan Soliman, from the circumstance of the dedication to Sir William Cobham, as shewn in a former page, must have been finished about 1557-8, and Painter, on the reprinting, mentions that fact as "twenty-two yeares past or thereabouts," which decides that the printing the above volume could not be later than 1580.

1598, 1608, and 1613. The contents of the volume are described in an article by Mr. Utterson in the *British Bibliographer*, Vol. II. p. 392. For an Account of the author see Wood's *Ath. Oxon.* by Bliss, 1813, Vol. I. col. 552.

* Class (or rather case, the library not being classed) IX; division 2; shelf 7; book 26. This explains the numerals used in the Osterley Cat.

† To the unequalled store of bibliography, possessed by the Rev. T. F. Dibdin, there has lately been added a copy of the Fairfax catalogue, priced according to the private valuation. There may be found Caxton's Prince Arthur rated at only fifty-five shillings, and lot 336 (the P. of Pleasure) at *four guineas*: undoubtedly, from the above description in the catalogue, the copy was supposed *UNIQUE*.

NOTES ON THE NOVELS.

VOLUME THE FIRST.*

- Novel 1. The Horatii and Curiatii.—In the recapitulation of contents in the first edition this and the four following novels are said to be taken from Livy.
2. Tarquin and Lucrece.—Though the translator noticed the original source for his histories, it is not improbable that he sometimes was content with intermediate translations, either in the French or Italian languages; and from his familiar knowledge of Bandello's Novels, as presently appears, he might here abbreviate the story in that writer, Part II. Nov. 21, as in the original Lucca edition, reprinted by Harding, London, 1740, 4 Vols. 4to. and at Leghorn, under the date of London, in 1792, 9 Vols. 8vo. The other editions are castrated, and want about sixty novels. Shakespeare has a long poem on the *Rape of Lucrece*, first printed 1594.
3. Mutius Scævola.
4. Martius Coriolanus.
5. Appius and Virginia.—In the *Pecorone* of Ser. Giovanni Fiorentino, written in 1378, this story forms the second novel of the twentieth day. See also Gower's *Confessione Amantis*, 1554. lib. 7, fol. cxxxi. and the Doctour's Tale in the *Canterbury Tales* of Chaucer.

* In the first edition of this volume, the names of the authors are inserted in the table of contents from whose works the novels were selected. That distinct reference is not afterwards repeated, only the general list of authorities after the dedications.—The novels added in the last edition, are 56, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, and 65, and distinguished by an asterisk against the number.—

It was early dramatised for our stage in a rare piece entitled, *A new tragical comedy of Apius and Virginia, wherein is expressed a lively example of the virtue of Chastitie by Virginia's constancy in wishing rather to be slain at her own father's hands then to be deflowered by the wicked Judge Apius, by R. B. Imprinted by W. How. 1575. 4to.* See also the names of Webster, Betterton, Dennis, Crisp, Moncreiff, Brooke, Bidlake, &c. in the *Biographia Dramatica*.

6. Gyges and the Ring. From Herodotus.
7. Cræsus and Solon. From the same.
8. The Father that sought justice against his son. From Ælian.
9. Artaxerxes and Sinetas. From the same.
12. Chariton and Menalippus. From the same.
11. Cyrus and Panthea. From Xenophon, according to the reference given by the translator, but more probably taken from Bandello, Part III. Nov. 9. The same story is to be found in *Histoires tragiques*, par Belleforest, tom. 4. p. 265.
12. Abdohominus made King of Sidon by Alexander, and
13. The Oration of the Scythian Ambassadour, are both from Quintus Curtius.
14. Metellus upon Marriage. This and the twelve short stories following are from Aulus Gellius.
15. Lais and Demosthenes.
16. Fabritius Consul of Rome.
17. The Schoolmaster and Camillus.
18. Papyrius Pretextatus.
19. Plutarch's Anger.
20. Æsop's Lark.
21. Hannibal's jest.
22. Andreodus and the Lion. Also told in "Sivqila: Too good to be true," &c. by Thomas Lupton. 1587, p. 159.
23. The Philosopher Phavorinus.
24. Sestorius.

Novel 25. The Sybil Leaves.

26. The Master and Scholar.
27. Seleuchus and Antiochus. From Plutarch, according to the table, but the text more fitly refers to Bandello. See Part II. nov. 55. and Belleforest, tom. 4. p. 152.
28. Timon of Athens. Also from Plutarch.
29. Marriage of a Widower and Widow. From "S. Hierome and Pedro de Messia's *Selva di varia Lezzioni*," Part I. ch. 34, but through the medium of the Italian translation, as acknowledged in the text.
30. Melchisedech. This and the nine following are gathered from Boccaccio's *Decamerone*. See *Giornata*, I. nov. 3.
31. Borsieri and Grimaldi. *Giorn.* I. nov. 8.
32. Alberto of Bologna. *Giorn.* I. nov. 10.
33. Rinaldo. *Giorn.* II. nov. 2.
34. The King of England's daughter. *Giorn.* II. nov. 3. Reprinted, from the second edition, in the *British Bibliographer*. Vol. I. p. 261.
35. Landolfo. *Giorn.* II. nov. 4.
36. Andruccio. *Giorn.* II. nov. 5.
37. Earl of Angiers. *Giorn.* II. nov. 8.
38. Giletta of Narbonne. *Giorn.* III. nov. 9. The principal events in this story form the plot of the Comedy of All's well that ends well, and which Dr. Farmer observes, "came immediately to Shakespeare from Painter's Palace of Pleasure."
39. Gismonda and Guiscardo. *Giorn.* IV. nov. 1. The invention of this story, as far as we know, is due to Boccaccio, unless he drew from some real occurrence the principal incidents, and worked them up into their present interesting form. Or, as he is known to have derived materials from the Old *Fabliaux and Romans*, it is possible that the Romance of Raoul de Coucy and the Lady of Faïel, which is supposed to have its foundation in truth, and to have happened in the 12th century, may have suggested it to him. The stories

have a sufficient degree of similitude to render this probable, and if it was the case, Boccaccio has evinced much judgment in the alterations he has made. It was, soon after its first appearance, translated into Latin by Leonardo Aretino, one of the restorers of learning, and was printed several times in the 15th century, under the title *Leonardi Aretini Epistola, de Amore Guistardii et Sigismundâ filiâ Tancredi Principis Salernitani*. It appears also in some early editions of Laur. Valla's translation into Latin of Æsop's Fables. Another translation into Latin verse was made by Fillippo Beroaldo, a learned and celebrated man of the 15th Century, and which was printed at Paris, 1499.

Jean Fleury translated it into French verse, and in this form it was printed in 1493, and entitled, *Traité très plaisant et récréatif de l'amour parfaite de Guisgardus et Sigismunde, fille de Tancredus (traduit du Latin en vers François,) par Jehan Fleury, dit Floridus. Paris P. le Caron. 1493. 4to. Let. Goth.* There is another edition of the 15th century, also in 4to. without date, as well as one printed at Lyons. 1520, 16mo.

About the Year 1600 it was turned into Italian verse (*Ottava Rima*,) by Annibal Guasco, and printed at *Venice*. The first regular translation in our vernacular tongue, was made by William Walter, who calls himself servant to Sir Henry Marney, Knight, Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster. It forms a poem in the octave stanza, and was first printed by Wynkin de Worde, in 1532, 4to. Again with *Certaine worthy Manuscript Poems*, &c. 1595, 12mo; which last has lately been reprinted, in a small impression, at Edinburgh. For the juxta-position, may be mentioned the elegant and popular poem, of that title, by Dryden.

Among the dramatic writers of each country, it was

a favourite subject, and the pieces are too numerous to claim notice beyond the English Stage. For that it was formed into a tragedy by Robert Wilmot and four of his fellow students, all members of the Society of the Inner-Temple. It was written in rhyme, and acted before Queen Elizabeth about 1568. A fragment of the original drama, from a manuscript, *penes me*, was inserted in the *Censura Literaria*, Vol. VII. p. 350. The play was afterwards altered, and printed, as "newly revived and polished," in 1592, and may be found in Dodsley's Collection, Vol. II.—Another piece is said to have been written by Sir Henry Wotton, called *Tancredo*, which is lost. The present Earl of Carlisle has also written a tragedy thereon, called *The Father's Revenge*. This was, in the first instance, privately printed, and adorned with engravings from some elegant designs by Mr. Westall: Also in crown octavo, 1801.—The celebrated picture of Sigismunda, supposed by Correggio, and engraved by Mac-Ardell, is believed to have excited Hogarth, rather unfortunately, to paint another upon the same subject. For the opinions of the critics, with a copy of the etching made by Basire, see *The genuine Works of Hogarth*, &c. by Nichols, 1808. Vol. I.

- 40 Mahomet and Hyerene. From Bandello, Part I. nov. 10. Similar. Belleforest, tom. I. p. 30. Among the once popular productions of George Peele, the title remains of *the famous play of the Turkish Mahomet and Hyren the Fair Greck*. And this author, who died in 1598, might, like some of his contemporaries, be content with the authority of the translation by Painter. The story has since been repeatedly dramatised and printed. By Lodowic Carlell, under the title of *Osmond the Great Turk*, 1657; by Gilbert Swinhoe, as the *Unhappy fair Irene*, 1658; and, as *Irene*, by Charles Goring, 1708; and Dr. Johnson, 1749.

Novel 43. Lady of Turin. Band. P. II. nov. 12, and Belleforest, tom. I. p. 78. The near resemblance of this story to the 57th Novel in the same volume seems conclusive that they had the same origin. Several of the novels of Bandello, and the Queen of Navarre, who were contemporaries, are the same, and both collected many of their tales in France.

44. Aleran and Adelasia. Band. P. II. nov. 27. and Belleforest, tom. I. p. 157.

45. Duchess of Savoy. Band. P. II. nov. 44. and Belleforest, tom. I. p. 107. A metrical version of this tale, as the *History of John Lord Mandozze*, was made by Thomas De La Peend, and licensed as early as 1565. Of this rare production a copious account has been given by my intelligent friend Mr. J. J. Park, in the *British Bibliographer*, Vol. II. p. 523. That De La Peend found his materials in the P. of Pleasure seems confirmed by his allusion in another poem to Tancred and Gismund, and Romeo and Juliet. Ib. p. 347.

46. Countess of Salisbury. Band. p. II. nov. 46. and Belleforest, tom. I. of xviii. Lyons, 1578. p. 6.

Upon the English incidents in the preceding novel, which describe the Duchess of Savoy as sister to the King of England, and her final marriage in London to the Lord Mandozze, our translator has not ventured to make any observation ; and from the uncertainty of the relation having any thing like fact, or history to support it, there needed no commentary : but of the Countess of Salisbury, where the whole of the events are supposed to have arisen in England, he has, in the introduction to the tale, shown what appears the origin of the romantic narrative. There the reference seems happily correct to Froissart, as the historian in whose work Bandello discovered his principal materials, and which led him into the error of introducing Edward the Third as the lover, in place of his son

- Edward, Prince of Wales. The brief relations in the Chronicle of St. Albans, Polychronicon, and other histories, are uniform on this point. To know "howe the Kyng of England was in amours with the Contesse of Salysbury," the curious reader may refer to Froissart, in Pynson's edition, Vol. I. c. 77. fol. 40: in the accurate reprint, edited by Mr. Utterson, 1812, Vol. I. c. 77. p. 98: Johnes' edit. Vol. I. c. 76. p. 198. Further "of the feast and iustynge made at London, by the King of England for the loue of the Countesse of Salysbury." Pynson, Vol. I. c. 89, fol. 45. Ed. 1812, c. 89, p. 111. Johnes, Vol. I. c. 88. p. 225.
47. Galgano and Minoccia. From Ser Giovanni Fiorentino. See *Pecorone Giorn.* I. nov. I. The same story in Masuccio's *Novellino*, written about 1450. nov. 21.
48. Bindo and Ricciardo. Our translator gives this also as from Ser Giovanni Fiorentino; but it was originally related by Herodotus: translated from that writer by Laurentius Valla into Latin; by the learned Henry Stephens into French, for *L'introduction au traite de la Conformite des Merveilles Anciennes avec les modernes: ou, traite preparatif à l'Apologie pour Herodote.* 1566. Oct. And the last made English as *A World of Wonders, or an Introduction, &c.* London, 1607, fol. See also *Pecorone Giorn.* IX. nov. I. and a similar relation in *Bandello*, Part I. nov. 25.
49. Philenio Sisterno, from the *Tredici Piacevolissime notti de Straparola*, Notte II. nov. 2. Similar stories are the first of the *Cent Nouvelles Nouvelles*, the third of the first part of *Bandello*, the second of the second day in the *Pecorone*, and the *fabliaux des deux Changeurs* (Méon's edition of Barbazan, Paris 1808-9) Vol. III. p. 254. Also Malespini *Ducento Novelle*, Venez. 1609, 4. Tom. II. nov. 53.

Novel 50. Queen of Navarre's, Muleteer's Wife. "Out of the Heptameron of the Queen of Navarre," as also the nine following. This is novel 2, and may be found in Codrington's translation,* 1654, at p. 11.

51. King of Naples. Hept. Nov. 3. Codrington. p. 15.
See also Bandello, Part IV. nov. 10.

52. Princess of Flanders. Hept. nov. 4. Codr. p. 22.

53. Amadour and Florinda. Hept. nov. 10. do. p. 52.

54. Duke of Flanders. Hept. nov. 12. do. p. 97.

55. Francis I. and Count Guillaume. Hept. nov. 17. do. p. 148.

*56. Gentlewoman of Pampeluna. Hept. nov. 26. do. p. 236.

57. Wife punished. Hept. nov. 32. do. p. 279. A story with similar conclusion is in the third day's exercise of the *Heptameron of Civil Discourses*, by George Whetstone, 1582. Another in the Latin *Gesta Romanorum* analysed by Warton.† There is also the

* Robert Codrington of Didmarton, co. Gloucester. See further Atkyns' *Hist. of Gloucestershire*, 1712, p. 391. Wood's *Ath. Oxonienses*, Vol. II. col. 355. *Harleian Miscellany*, 1808. Vol. I. p. 216. He was author of many productions, and among them a translation of the following work: *Heptameron, or the History of the Fortunate Lovers: Written by the most Excellent and most virtuous Princess, Margaret de Valois, Queen of Navarre. Published in French by the privilege and immediate approbation of the King. Now made English by Robert Codrington, Master of Arts. London, printed by F. L. for Nath: Ekins, and are to be sold at his shop at the Gun, by the West-end of St. Pauls.* 1654. 8vo. pp. 528, without table and introduction. It is dedicated to a well-known poet, as "the truly honourable, the true lover of all good learning, Thomas Stanley Esquire, &c." In a short address from "the translator to the reader," he observes, "I am informed that the queen had fully finished the tenth day's work, but the friars and religious men, who have deprived us of the two last journals, and of the greatest part of the eighth, would have deprived us also of all the rest if possibly they could have prevented it." Then follow translations of the original dedication; the poem of *La Charité*, by Ronsard; the sonnets by "Johan Passeratus and J. Troyen;" and the Preface. The original plan of ten novels to each day is preserved, and the language is divested of that unsettled orthography which, at the time of the translation, the press too commonly exhibited.

† *Hist. of English Poetry*, Vol. III. p. xxiv. ch. 56.

German ballad of Count Stolberg. Warton also mentions the similarity of this story to the one of Albovine King of Lombardy, related by Caxton. There is another by Gower in the *Confessio Amantis*, liber primus; by Bandello, Part III. nov. 18; and in Belleforest, ed. 1580, p. 297. Also the tragedy of Albovine by Sir W. Davenant. Another singular relation is made by Robert Greene, in a tale wherein Jupiter, on his visiting the earth, saw in Scythia, a lady who "burning frankencence vpon coales, and holding the heart of a man in her hand, violently stab'd it through in many places; which when she had done, two of her maides presented vnto her two dead mens' skulles full of wine: whereof when she had drunke a little of either, gushing forth aboundaunce of teares, she called for a lute, &c."* This dismal exhibition, repeated daily, was to gratify revenge, and indulge fraternal sorrow. The heart was that of the murderer of the lady's two brothers, from whose skulls she sipped wine. Novel writers of every age have indulged in the horrific, and the above unites the principal events of the tale of Sigismunda with that of the Wife punished. The original carries an air of truth, by the conclusion making the painter, John de Paris, take a portrait of the fair adulteress for his royal master. The Queen of Navarre might, by that incident, expect the story to be selected for the canvas. If the hint was ever adopted by a foreign artist, the production is, I believe, unknown. In England, the romance has been ably treated by the powerful pencil of Mr. Fuseli. A highly finished composition by that artist was exhibited many years since at the Royal Academy, which represented that moment when the husband and companion were entering the room, the lady playing on a viol, with the skeleton in a grated recess, in the

* Jupiter's Tragedy in the *Planetomachia*, by R. Greene, 1585.

back-ground. Of the same subject there is a masterly drawing in existence by a distinguished Amateur. It is doubtful if the graver has been employed on the subject. The near resemblance between this novel and the 43d is noticed above.

58. President of Grenoble. Hept. nov. 36. Codrington p. 305. Similar Bandello, Part I. nov. 35. The story was used by James Shirley in *Love's Cruelty*, a Tragedy, 1640.
59. Gentleman of Perche. Hept. Nov. 47, Codrington, p. 375.
60. Miracle at Lyons. Hept. nov. 105. do. p. 472.
- *61. Gentleman who died for love. Hept. nov. 9. do. p. 47.
- *62. Lady of the French Court. Hept. nov. 58. do. p. 431.
- *63. Rolandine. Hept. nov. 21. do. 174.
- *64. The prudent Gentlewoman. Hept. nov. 37. do. p. 311.
- *65. Lady of Tours. Hept. nov. 38. do. p. 316.
66. Doctor of Laws. "Out of a little French book, called *Comptes du Monde*" *Avantureux*. See Masuccio's *Novellino*, Part II. nov. 17. and *Mensa Philosophica*. Paris. n. d. 12mo.—This piece of subtle knavery was introduced by John Marston, in the comedy of the *Dutch Curtezan*, 1605. And I also find it in a manuscript play, *penes me*, entitled, *The Cuck-queanes and Cuckolds Errants; or, the bearing down the Inne, a Comedy*, 1601, fol.†

† The author, T. P. Esq. (probably Thomas Pelham) resided at Wolves Hill, Sussex. He also wrote *A Country tragedye in vacunium, or Cupid's Sacrifice*, 1602. M. S. in the same volume, where he introduces the title of this work in a witty dialogue between a young Lord and his lacquey, while trussing his points.

Amadour. Whoope; Hast done my points, ha?

Vasco. I haue done your points, and I have vndone your points.

Am. As howe, saye?

Vas. I have vndone the points of your problems, and have done the points of your Lordship's hose, trewlye.

Am. Hast not play'd foole with my taggs, Sirrha?

Vas. Tag and rag, not any one of them be amisse, I assure you.

Am. Then come, and follow mee, incontinently, to my Pallace of Pleasure, Sir.

Vas. The Pallace of your Pleasure is not prepared yet, &c."

VOLUME THE SECOND.

- Novel 1. Of the Amazons.
 2. Alexander and Sisigambis.
 3. Timoclia.
 4. Ariobarzanes. From Bandello, Part I. nov. 2. and Belleforest, tom. IV. f. 9.
 5. Aristotemus. Do. Part III. nov. 5. Do. tom. 4. p. 234.
 6. Tanaquill.
 7. Sophonisba. From Bandello, who, in his Epistle to Rinuccio, prefixed to the Novel, seems to hint, that he was led to the story by the relation of it in Petrarch's *Trionfi*; Part I. nov. 41. Belleforest tom. III. p. 356. This story was first adapted for the stage,* by John Marston, under the title of a *Wonder of Women, or Sophonisba her tragedy*, acted at the Black-friars, and printed 1606. Again by Nathaniel Lee, as *Sophonisba, or Hannibal's Overthrow*, printed 1676. And also by James Thomson as *Sophonisba*, performed for the first time at Drury Lane, the 28th Feb. 1730, when the *Dramatis Personæ* had all new habits.
 8. Theoxena and Poris.
 9. Hidrusa. Taken from Bandello, Part I. nov. 56. and in Belleforest, tom. IV. p. 214.
 10. Faustina. Do. Part I. nov. 36. Do. tom. IV. p. 83.
 11. Two Maids of Carthage. See the *Hecatommithi of Cinthio*. Decameron IX. nov. 8. Similar the Ballad of the Heir of Linne, in Dr. Percy's *Reliques of Ancient Poetry*, Vol. II. p. 128.
 12. Plutarch's Letters.
 13. Lamia, Flora, and Lais.

* A tragedy on this subject in Italian, by Trissino, was printed as early as 1524. Walker's *Historical Memoir on Italian Tragedy*, 1799, p. 29.

14. Queen Zenobia.
15. Euphemia and Acharisto. In Cinthio's *Decameron*, VIII. nov. 10.
16. Marchioness of Montferrato. Taken from Boccaccio, *Giorn.* I. nov. 5.
17. Ansaldo and Dianora. From the same, *Giorn.* X. nov. 5. Chaucer has a similar story, told by the Franklin, as derived from a British Lay. See *Canterbury Tales*, by Tyrwhitt. Vol. IV. p. 164. This amusing fiction was dramatised by Beaumont and Fletcher, as the *Triumph of Honour*, in the four moral plays in one; and their authority was Chaucer, the task being to remove rocks instead of producing a garden. It also forms a material incident in the comedy of the *Two Merry Milkmaids*.
18. Mithridanes and Nathan. From Boccaccio, *Giorn.* X. nov. 3.
19. Katherine of Bologna. Do. X. nov. 4. and a similar one in Cinthio's *Decam.* III. nov. 5.
20. Theorella and Saladine. Also from Boccaccio, *Giorn.* X. nov. 9.
21. Ann of Hungary. From Bandello, Part I. nov. 45.
22. Alexander of Medici, and the Miller's Daughter. Bandello, Part II. nov. 15. It forms the plot of Fletcher's comedy of the *Maid of the Mill*.
23. Dutchess of Malfy. From the same, Part I. nov. 26. And in Belleforest, nov. 19. It was adopted by John Webster for a tragedy, which was performed at the Black-friars, under the same title, and printed 1623, 1640, 1678, 1708, 4to.
24. Bianca Maria, Countess of Celant. From Bandello, Part I. nov. 4. And in Belleforest, Vol. II. nov. 20. From the last authority, I suppose, it was translated by Geffray Fenton, for his *Certaine Tragical Discourses*.* A poem upon "the disordered life of

* In the same year as the second volume of the *Palace of Pleasure* was published, there also appeared *Certaine Tragical Discourses writen out of Frenche and*

Bianca Maria, Countesse of Celant, in forme of her complainte, supposed at the houre of her beheading," is in the *Castle of Delight*, Part I. of *The Rocke of Regard*: by George Whetstone, 1576. The subject is there continued by "an Invective, written by Roberto San Severino, Earle of Giazzo, against Bianca Maria." And the same author, in his *Heptameron*, 1582, again relates the story, briefly, in prose; adding, as a marginal note, "the fall of Maria Bianca, is written by the author in his booke, intituld *The Rocke of Regarde*." Upon the stage it gives title to the tragedy of the *Insatiate Countess*, of which more at large presently.

25. *Romeo and Juliet*. Painter's authority for this adventurous and popular tale was *Bandello*, Part. II. nov. 9. An English metrical version by Arthur Brooke was printed as early as November 1562, and the title says, "written first in Italian by Bandell and nowe in Englishe by, &c." However the story was originally related by Luigi da Porto, and posthumously printed, six years after his death, in 1535. It may also be found in *Belleforest*, Vol. I. and in the *Otto Novelle Rarissime*.

Other references have been discovered by the Commentators upon Shakespeare, whose notes may be

Latin, by Geffray Fenton, no lesse profitable then pleasaunte, and of like necessity to all degrees that take pleasure in antiquities or forreine reportes. A second edition by Thomas Marshe, 1579, (from which I quote.) In the Epistle Dedicatory to Lady Mary Sydney, the translator declares he had bestowed some void hours whilst over the seas in "forcing certayne tragicall discourses out of their French tearmes into our English phrase," and subscribes from his chamber "at Paris xxij Junij, 1567." This volume has four commendatory poems prefixed; one by George Turberville, wherein he says

"Now men of meanest skill what Bandel wrought may view,
And tell the tale in English well, that erst they never knew."

Fenton has thirteen histories, and four of those may also be found in Painter. Probably this writer was the same person as Sir Jeffray F. who went over to Ireland, and whose daughter Catherine married Richard Boyle, first Earl of Corke. See Collins's *Peerage*, ed. 1812. Vol. VII. p. 141.

easily consulted. When the argument was first "set foorth on stage with commendation," as mentioned by Brooke,* is not ascertained. The only dramatic piece now known, of any repute, is the production of our immortal bard, which has undergone several alterations from the prurient fancies of Otway, Howard, Betterton, Theophilus Cibber, Garrick, Sheridan, and others.

26. Two Gentlewomen of Venice. From *Bandello*, Part. I. nov. 15, and in *Belleforest*, tom. III. p. 58. The adventure of Foscari with the widow, and the comic incidents arising from the two Gentlewomen plotting against their amorous husbands, are closely followed as underplots in the tragedy of the *Insatiate Countess*. This introduction nearly alters the character of the play to a tragi-comedy.†
27. Lord of Virle. *Bandello*, Part III. nov. 17. and in *Hist. Trag.* tom. 1. p. 289. This is also in Fenton's *Tragicall Discourses*. *Hist.* XI.‡

* See the address "to the reader" before the poem, in the *British Bibliographer*, Vol. II. p. 113, or Harris's *Shakespeare*, 1813. Vol. XX. p. 266.

† The *Insatiate Countess* was acted at the White-friars theatre, and printed in 1603, 1611, 1613, 1616, 1631. 4to. The first four editions are all, I believe, anonymous. Of the last Mr. Kemble has obligingly communicated to me the following title, from a copy in his possession. *The Insatiate Countesse, a Tragedy, acted at White-friers. Written by William Barksteed. London, printed for Hugh Perrie, and are to be sold at his shop at the signe of the Harrow in Brittaines Burse, 1631.* In other copies it stands, "written by John Marston London printed by J. N. for Hugh Perrie," &c. The name of Marston is registered in several of the early catalogues of plays, and his known obligations to the P. of Pleasure rather support his pretensions. As both titles are to the same edition, the ascertaining which is the cancelled title may help to determine the name of the author.

‡ Fenton materially abridged his translation, as is shown by the following extract, when compared with Vol. II. p. 448.

"The poor gentleman suspectyng no one thought of such tyranny in his mistris, and much lesse that he should buy his kisses at so deare a pryce, tolde her he attended the onely sommonce of her commaundement, to the end she myght witnes his ready indeuor to obey her: shee enioyned him, that from that houre

28. Lady of Boeme. Bandello, Part I. nov. 21. It was also translated by George Whetstone, in the *Arbours of Vertue*, or third part of the *Rocke of Regard*, 1576. In the dedication he declares he had "faithfully though not curiously translated the modest and noble life of a Bohemian lady," &c. He also added a poem as "The complaint of the Lorde Alberto and Vdislao, the two Hungarian Barons, that vnadvisedly wagered their land, to winne the vertuous Ladie Barbara to wantonnesse: Who hauing the foyle (besides the losse of their liuings) for their slaunderous opinions, were condemned to perpetual exile." As a subject for the drama there is a master-piece in *The Picture*, by Massinger; whose works have recently obtained the advantage of being twice edited by Mr. W. Gifford; and the investigation before the play may be satisfactorily consulted for further information relative to the novel.

29. Dom Diego. From Bandello, Part I. nov. 27. and in til three yeres were expyred, hee should become mute, without speakinge in anye sorte to any creature liuing, how greate soever his occasion appeared. "In the true obseruyng whereof (sayth shee) shal appeare an experience of your fayth, which also may force hereafter a further benefyte for you, where the contrary wil not only discover your vilanye, but be ready to accuse you of periurye on the behalfe of a gentlewoman." Me thinks I see the perplexed countenance of the pore knight, who hearyng the sentence of his hard penaunce, iudged as great iniustice in her, for taxing hym at so cruel a rate as difficulty in hymselfe to performe the effect of so straunge a charge, albeit hys hart was so great, and he so papistical in performing his vowe, that euen then hee began to enter into the poyntes of her commaundement, declaryng by signes that she shoulde bee obeyed, wherwith he gaue her an humble reuerence and retyred immediately to his lodging, fayning to such as were about him, that the extremity of a cold rheume dystillyng from the part of the braiue, had taken away the vse of his tounge. And because his domnes should not be a greefe to his frendes, nor they moue his disquiet in demanding the cause, he determined to be a straunger to his countrey, till the yeaeres of penaunce wer runne out, wherwyth committing the order of his affayres at Mountcal, or elsewhere in Pyemount, to the credit of such as he thought meete to supply the place of such trust, tooke two or three of hys familiar companions to assist his voyage, whych he directed rightly into Fraunce, as a countrey most meete for hys abode, chiefly for the mortal warres as then betweene Charles the seuenth, and the valyaunt englysh men possessing hys countrey, in the yeare 1451."

- Belleforest, tom. I. p. 382. This is Fenton's History XIII. and, I believe, forms the "dolorous discourse of Dom Diego," in the *Garden of Unthriftiness*, Part II. of Whetstone's *Rock of Regard*.
30. Salimbene and Angelica. Bandello, Part I. nov. 49. It also occurs in the novels of Gentile Sermini, written about 1450, and was separately written and published by Bernardo Illicini, in 1474. It is the first History in Fenton's volume.
31. Helena of Florence. From Boccaccio, Giorn. VIII. nov. 8.
32. Camiola and Roland.
33. The Lords of Nocera. From Bandello, Part I. nov. 55. and in Belleforest, tom. II. p. 162.
- 34.* Soltan Solyman. This, as said in the text, is taken from the Latin of Nicholas Moffa, a Burgonian.
35. King of Marocco. From Bandello, Part I. nov. 57. and in Belleforest, tom. II. p. 190.

THE Palace of Pleasure, as enlarged by the Translator, is now reprinted. The text of the latest edition of each volume has been carefully preserved; except that, instead of numberless abbreviations, every word is given at length. The character of the work did not require such minuteness, being followed for authority; and the rejecting what might seem a disfigurement of the page, it is hoped, will obtain the sanction of the reader: and it may be observed, that in the later editions many words are contracted which were first printed at length, and others given at length which were before contracted.

In the punctuation some slight alterations have been made, where the sense or uniformity materially required it.

From Earl Spencer, with that marked attention which always distinguishes the interest his Lordship takes in every literary undertaking, I received the unsolicited offer of the use of the copy belonging to the library at Althorpe. As there was the first edition of the second volume, it proved a needful and valuable

acquisition, and from that source several obscure passages have been corrected, and whole sentences restored, which, in the last edition, appear to have been negligently omitted in the hurry of the press.

For the purpose of collation, Sir Mark Masterman Sykes, Bart. obligingly assisted me with his copy, purchased at the Roxburghe sale; and has since also favoured me with the first edition, to perfect the Bibliographical Notices.

Of an hundred and one novels, the whole number, the larger portion have been traced, as supposed, to their respective originals. In attempting this task, I have derived material assistance from the extensive researches made in that class of literature by Mr. Weber, who, though personally unknown, most promptly supplied the wanted information. The ingenious conjecture as to the origin of the story of Gismonde and Guiscardo, is by Mr. Singer.

It is probable that many of the stories were appropriated as soon as published by the dramatic writers to the purposes of the English Stage.* To the instances discovered by the indefatigable Langbaine I have made some addition.

From the application of Mr. Freeling to Mr. Crewe, I obtained an inspection of the earliest records preserved in the Ordnance Office; and the research was further facilitated by the assistance of Mr. Banovin.

Sir Egerton Brydges, with his accustomed ardency to promote literary investigation, aided my endeavours to discover some trace of the translator as master of the school at Sevenoaks.

To Mr. George Chalmers and Mr. Utterson, I am indebted for some bibliographical communications, and also to the Rev. T. F. Dibdin for long extracts made from the work by Herbert, preparatory to a new edition of the *Typographical Antiquities*.

* Malone, in a note on the *Historical Account of the English Stage*, has the following extract from Gosson's *Plays confuted in five Actions*, printed about the year 1580. "I may boldly say it (says Gosson) because I have seeene it, that *The Palace of Pleasure, The Golden Asse, The Æthiopian Historie, Amadis of Fraunce, The Round Table*, bawdie comedies in Latin, French, Italian and Spanish, have beene *thoroughly ransackt* to furnish the playe-houses in London." *Reed's Shakespeare*, Vol. III. p. 40.

When the present edition was announced, it was intended to consist of only one hundred and fifty copies. In order, however, to meet the common hazard of the press, seven quires of each sheet were printed, making about one hundred and sixty-five saleable copies; seven were also taken off on vellum.

JOSEPH HASLEWOOD.

Conduit Street, November 5th, 1813.

*To the Right Honourable, my very good Lord, Ambrose Earle of
Warwike, Baron of Lisle, of the most noble order of the Garter
Knight, Generall of the Queenes Maiesties Ordinaunce within her
Highnes Realmes and Dominions.*

PROVOKED, or rather vehemently incited and moued, I haue been
(right honorable my very good Lorde) to imagin and deuise all
meanes possible to auoyde that vglie vice of ingratitude (which as
it is abhorred amonge creatures voyde of reason and deuine know-
ledge, so of men indued and full possessed with both, specially to
be detested.) And that I might not be touched with that vnkind
vice, odible to God and man, I haue many times, with myselfe
debated how I might by any meanes shew my selfe thanckfull and
beneuolent to your honour, which hath not onely by frequent
talke vnto my frendes priuately, but also vpon my selfe openly
imployed benefits and commendation vnderdeserued. The one I haue
receiued by frendly report of your dere and approued frends, the
other I do feele and tast to my great stay and comfort. For when it
pleased your honour of curteous inclination, vpon the first vew,
willingly to consent and agree to the confirmation of that which I
do enioy: for that bounty then, euer sithens I haue studied by
what meanes I might commend my good will and affection to the
same. Wherefore incensed with the generositie, and naturall
instinct of your noble minde, I purposed many times to imploy
indeuor by some small beginniges, to giue your honor to vnder-
stande outwardly, what the inwarde desire is willinge to do, if
abilitie thereunto were correspondent. And as oportunitie serued
(respiring as it were from the waighty affaires of that office
wherin it hath pleased our most drad soueraigne Ladye worthely
to place you the chiefe and generall) I perused such volumes of
noble Authors as wherwith my poore Armarie is furnished: and
amonges other chaunced vpon that excellent Historiographer

Titus Liuius. In whom is containd a large campe of noble facts and exploits atchieued by valiaunt personages of the Romaine state. By whom also is remembred the beginning and continuation of their famous common wealth. And viewing in him great plenty of straung Histories, I thought good to select such as were the best and principal, wherein traauailing not far, I occurred vpon some which I deemed most worthy the prouulgation in our natiue tongue, reducing them into such compendious forme, as I truste shall not appeare vnpleasant. Which when I had finished, seing them but a handfull in respect of the multitude I fully determined to procede in the rest. But when I considered mine owne weakenes, and the maiestie of the Authour, the cancred infirmitye of a cowardlye minde, stayed my conceyued purpose, and yet not so stayed as vtterlye to suppress mine attempt. Wherefore aduauncing againe the ensigne of courage, I thought good (leauing where I left in that Authour, till I knew better how they would be liked) to aduenture into diuers other, out of whom I decerped and chose (*raptim*) sondry proper and commendable Histories, which I may boldly so terme, because the Authors be commendable and well approued. And thereunto haue ioyned many other, gathered oute of Boccacio, Bandello, Ser Giouanni Fiorentino, Straparole, and other Italian and French Authours. All which I haue recueled and bound together in this volume, vnder the title of the Palace of Pleasure, presuming to consecrate the same and the rest of my beneuolent minde to your honour. For to whome duly appertayneth mine industry and diligence, but to him that is the patrone and imbracer of my wel doinges? Whereunto also I may apply the words of that excellent Orator Tullie, in his firste booke of Offices. *De beneuolentia autem, quam quisq' ; habeat erganos, primum illud est in officio, vt ei plurimum tribuamus, à quo plurimum diligimur.* Of beueuolence which ech man beareth towards vs, the chieftest duty is to giue most to him, of whom wee be most beloued. But how well the same is done, or how prayse worthy the translation I referre to the skilful, crauing no more prayse, than they shall attribute and giue. To nothing do I aspyre by this my presumption (righte

honourable) but cherefull acceptation at your handes: desirous hereby to shew my selfe studious of a frend of so noble vocation. And where greater things cannot be done, these small I truste shall not be contempned: which if I doe perceiue, hereafter more ample indeuor shal be imployed to atchieue greater. In these histories (which by another terme I call Nouelles) be described the liues, gestes, conquestes and highe enterprises of great princes, wherein also be not forgotten the cruell actes and tiranny of some. In these be set forth the great valiance of noble gentlemen, the terrible combates of couragious personages, the vertuous mindes of noble dames, the chaste hartes of constant ladyes, the wonderful patience of puissaunt Princes, the mild sufferance of well disposed gentlewomen, and in diuers, the quiet bearing of aduers fortune. In these Histories be depainted in liuely colours, the vglye shapes of insolencye and pride, the deforme figures of incontinencie and rape, the cruell aspectes of spoyle, breach of order, treason, ill lucke and ouerthrow of states and other persons. Wherein also be intermixed, pleasaunte discourses, merie talke, sportinge practises, deceitfull deuises, and nipping tauntes, to exhilarate your honor's minde. And although by the first face and view, some of these may seeme to intreat of vnlawfull loue, and the foule practises of the same, yet being thoroughly reade and well considered, both old and yonge may learne how to auoyde the ruine, ouerthrow, inconuenience and displeasure, that lasciuious desire and wanton wil doth bring to their suters and pursuers. All which maye render good examples, the best to be followed, and the worst to be auoyded: for which intent and purpose be all things good and bad recited in histories, chronicles and monumetes, by the first authors and elucubrators of the same. To whom then may these histories (wherin be containned many discourses of nobilitie) be offered with more due desert than to him that in nobilitie and parentage is not inferiour to the best? To whom may factes and exploites of famous personages be consigned, but to him whose prowesse and valiant actes be manifest and well knownen to Englishmen, but better to straungers, which haue felt the puissance thereof? To whom may the combats,

gests, and courses of the victorious be remembred, but to him whose frequent vse of mightye incountrie and terrible shooke of shield and launce: is familier in court, and famous in towne and country? In whom may pacient bearing of aduersitie, and constante suffrance of fortune's threates more duly to the world appeare, than in him that hath constantly susteyned and quietly passed ouer the brutes thereof? To whom may be giuen a theatre of the world, and stage of humaine misery, more worthely than to him that hath with comely gestures, wise demeanor, and orderly behauiour, been an actor in the same? Who is he that more condignelye doth deserue to be possest in a Palace of Pleasure, than he that is daily resiant in a Palace of renowned fame, guided by a Queene adorned with most excellent beautie indued and garnished with great learning, passing vertues and rare qualities of the minde. To whom (I say) may constancie of ladies, and vertuous dedes of dames, more aptly be applied than to him that hath in possession a Lady and Countesse of noble birthe (whose sire was the old Earle of Bedford, a graue and faithfull counsellor to her Maiesties most noble progenitors, and father is the same, in deare estimation and regard with her highnesse, vnder whom he trustily and honourably serueth) whose curteous and countesse like behauiour glistereth in court amongs the troupe of most honourable dames: and for her toward disposition, first preferred by her Maiesty into her secret chamber, and after aduaunced to be Countesse of your noble Earldome. Besides all which rare giftes, by nature grafted in your honor, and by her bountifully bestowed, the perfect piety and brotherly loue betweene you and the right noble and vertuous the Earle of Leycester your honourable brother is had in greatest admiration. Whose noble courage in deedes of honour and passing humanity to his inferiours, is very commendable to the worlde. But here I wyll staye, leste whilst I goe about to extolle your fames, I doe (for want of perfit skill in due prayse) seeme to diminishe that whiche among all men by commune prooffe is sufficientlye renowned. And as your honor doth with great prudence gouerne that office of the Ordinance (whereof I am a member) euen so, the same hath

with greate care and diligence commended suche vnto her highnes, to ioyne and serue in the same, as officers right worthy their vocations, specially the worshipfull Edward Randolfe Esquire, Lieutenaunt of that office a man for his experience and good aduise rather fostred in the bosome of Bellona, than nourced in kentish soile (although in the scholehouse of curtesie and humanitie he appeareth ful carefully to haue ben trained vp by his vertuous parents) which is familiarly knowne vnto me and other that domestically (as it were) do frequent his companie. But alas my lorde, among the mid of my reioyce of those before remembred, I cannot pretermit the lamentable losse of the best approued Gonner that euer serued in our time his Prince and countrie, Robert Thomas, the Maister Gonner, who for skill and seruice, a title of Prince of Gonners iustly did deserue: And see the lucke, when he thought best to signifie his good will, by honouring Hymeneus bed, at nuptial night, a clap of that he neuer feared did ende his life. Such is the dreadful furie of Gonners art, and hellish rage of Vulcane's worke. And therefore that daungerous seruice by skilful men is specially to be recommended and cherished. Whereunto as your honour hitherto hath borne singuler affection, by preferring to her maiestie suche as from their infancie haue bene trayned vp in that necessarie seruice and very painefullye haue imployed their time, euen so I humbly beseche your honour for continuance of the same, specially in those, that be indewed with greatest experience, in whome only resteth the brunte of our defence. A seruice and science so rare and nedefull, as none more. But what neede I to prouoke your willing mynde, whiche is more prest to cherishe such, than I am able by wysing heart for to conceiue? Finallie, yet once againe, I humblie besech your honour gratefully to accept this booke, and at your leisure and conuenient time to reade and peruse it. By reuoluing whereof your honour I trust shall be delighted with the rare Histories and good examples therin contained, such as to my knowledge heretofore haue not bene published. And which with all my good wil and indeuour I dutifully exhibite. Beseching almightie God fauourably to defende and gouerne your honour,

prosperously to maintaine and keepe the same, godlye to directe my right honourable Ladie in the steppes of perfect vertue, bountifullie to make you both happye parentes of manie children : and after the expence of Nestor's yeares in this transitorie life mercifully to conducte you both to the vnspeakeable ioyes of his kingdome.

Nere the Tower of London the first of Ianuarie, 1566.

By your L. most bounden

WILLIAM PAINTER.

Authours out of whom these Nouelles be selected, or which be remembered in diuers places of the same.

GREEKE AND LATINE AUTHORS.

Titus Liuius.	Cicero.
Herodotus.	Polidorus Virgilius.
Aelianus.	Aeneas Syluius.
Xenophon.	Paludanus.
Quintus Curtius.	Apeleius.
Aulus Gellius.	L. Cælius Rhodoginus.
S. Hierome.	

ITALIAN, FRENCH, AND ENGLISHE.

Pietro Messia di Siuiglia	A booke in French intituled
Boccaccio.	Comptes du Monde.
Bandello.	Francois Belleforest.
Ser Giouanni Fiorentino.	Pierre Boaistuau, surnamed
Straporole.	Launay.
The Queene of Nauarre.	Froisarde.
	Fabian.

TO THE READER.

NOTHING in mine opinion can be more acceptable vnto thee (friendly Reader) then oft reading and perusing of varietie of histories, which as they be for diuersitie of matter pleasaunt and plausible, euen so for example and imitation good and commendable. The one doth reioyce the werie and tedious minde, many times inuolued with ordinarie cares, the other prescribeth a directe pathe to treade the tracte of this present life. Wherefore if in these newes or Nouelles here presented, there do appeare any thing worthy of regarde, giue thanks to the noble gentleman to whome this booke is dedicated, for whose sake onely, that paine (if any seme to bee) was wholly employed. Inioy therefore with him this present booke, and curteously with frendly talke report the same, for if otherwise thou do abuse it, the blame shal light on thee, and not on me, which only of good will did meane it first. But yet if blaming tongues and vnstayed heades, wil nedes be busy, they shal sustain the shame, for that they haue not yet shewen forth any blamelesse dede to like effect, as this is ment of me, which when they do, no blame but prayse they can receiue. For prayse be they well worthy for to haue which in well doing do contende. No vertuous dede or zelous worke can want due prayse of the honest, though faulting fooles and youthly heades full ofte do chaunt the faultles checke, that Momus mouth did once finde out in Venus slipper. And yet from faultes I wyll not purge the same, but whatsoeuer they seme to be, they be in number ne yet in substaunce such, but that thy curteous dealing may sone amende them or forget them. Wherefore to giue the full aduertisement of the whole collection of these nouels, vnderstande that sixe of them haue I selected out of Titus Liuius, two out of Herodotus, certayn out of Aelianus, Xenophon, Aulus Gellius, Plutarche, and other like approued authors. Other Nouels haue I adioyned, chosen out of diuers Italian and Frenche wryters. Wherein I confesse my selfe not to be so well trayned, peraduenture as the fine heads of suche trauailers would desire, and yet I trust sufficiently to expresse the sense of euerye of the same. Certaine

haue I culled out of the Decamerone of Giouan Boccaccio, wherein be contained one hundred Nouelles, amanges whiche there be some (in my iudgement) that be worthy to be condemned to perpetual prison, but of them such haue I redemed to the libertie of our vulgar, as may be best liked, and better suffered. Although the sixt part of the same hundreth may full well be permitted. And as I my selfe haue already done many other of the same worke, yet for this présent I haue thought good to publish only tenne in number, the rest I haue referred to them that be able with better stile to expresse the authour's eloquence, or vntil I adioyne to this another tome, if none other in the meane time do preuent me, which with all my heart I wishe and desire: because the workes of Boccaccio for his stile, order of writing, grauitie, and sententious discourse, is worthy of intire prouulgation. Out of Bandello I haue selected seuen, chosing rather to follow Launay and Belleforest the French Translatours, than the barren soile of his own vain, who being a Lombard, doth frankly confesse himselfe to be no fine Florentine, or trimme Thoscane, as eloquent and gentle Boccaccio was. Diuers other also be extracted out of other Italian and French authours. All which (I truste) be both profitable and pleasaunt, and wil be liked of the indifferent Reader. Profitable they be, in that they disclose what glorie, honour, and preferment eche man attaineth by good desert, what felicitie, by honest attempts, what good successe, laudable enterprises do bring to the coragious, what happy ioy and quiet state godly loue doth affecte the imbracers of thesame. Profitable I say, in that they do reueale the miseries of rapes and fleshly actions, the ouerthrow of noble men and princes by disordered gouernment, the tragical ends of them that vn timerely do attempt practises vicious and horrible. Wilt thou learne how to behaue thy selfe with modestie after thou hast atchieued any victorious conquest, and not to forget thy prosperous fortune amyde thy glorious triumphe, by committing a facte vnworthy of any valiance: reade the first Nouel of the fortunate Romane Horatius? Wilt thou vnderstande what dishonour and infamie, desire of libidinous lust doth bring, read the rape of Lucrece? Wilt thou know what an vnkinde part it is vnnaturally to abuse the state of

thine own countrie, reade Martius Coriolanus? Wilt thou learne what fruite is reaped of wicked luste, to dispoyle virgins and maydens of their greatest vertue see the hystorie of Appius Claudius and Sir Didaco the Spanish knight? Desirest thou to knowe howe closely thou oughtest to keepe the secrets of honorable mariage, peruse the history of Candaules? Dost thou couet to be aduertised what is true felicitie, reade of kyng Cræsus and the wyse man of Solon? Hath the lady, gentlewoman, or other of the feminine kinde, a desire to beholde a mirrour of chastitie, let them reade ouer the nouelles of the lady Panthea, of the Duchesse of Sauoy, of the Countesse of Salesburie, of Amadour and Florinda? Is the nobleman affected to vnderstand what happy end the vertue of loyaltie and fidelitie doth conduce, the Earle of Angiers may be to him a right good example? Will gentlemen learne howe to prosecute vertue, and to profligat from their minde, disordinate loue, and affection, I referre them to the Historie of Tancredi, and to Galgano of Siena? Is not the marchaunt contented with his goodes already gotten, but will needes go seeke some other trade, let him note and consider the daungers wherein the aduenturer Landolpho was. Is he disposed to sende his factor beyonde the seas, about his affaires, let him first bidde him to peruse Andreuccio, and then commaunde him to beware of Madame Floredelice? If the yeoman intendeth to be carefull of his businesse, meaning to reape that he hath sowed in due time, let him take hede howe he repose any trust in friendes and kinsmen, least in haruest he be deceiued, which Æsopes larke doth pretely note. If the artificer will not faithfully deale according to the truste reposed in him, I would not wyshe him to suffer that whiche Bindo did, but aduisedly to reade the Historie, and trustelye to accomlishe that he taketh in hande. If scornefull speache or flouting sport do flowe in ripe wittes and lauishe tongues of womankind let them beware they do not deale with the learned sort, least Maister Alberto with phisicke drougues, or Phileino with Sophist art do staine their face, or otherwise offende them with the innocencie of their great Graundmother Eue when she was somoned from Paradise ioye. If the poore mayden of base birth be aduaunced (by fortune's grace) to highe estate: let her

fixe in mynde the lady of Thurin. Finallye, for all states and degrees, in these Nouelles be sette forth singuler documentes and examples, right commodious and profitable to them that will vouchsafe to reade them.

Pleasaunt they be, for that they recreate and refreshe weried mindes, defatigated either with painefull trauaile, or with continuall care, occasioning them to shunne and auoid heauinesse of minde, vaine fantasies, and idle cogitations. Pleasaunt so well abroade as at home, to auoyde the grieffe of Winter's night and length of Sommer's day, which the trauailers on foote may vse for a staye to ease their weried bodye, and the iourneors on horsback for a chariot or lesse painful meane of trauaile, insteade of a merie companion to shorten the tedious toyle of wearie wayes. Delectable they be (no doubt) for al sortes of men, for the sad, the angry, the cholericke, the pleasaunt, the whole and sicke, and for al other with whatsoeuer passion rising either by nature or vse they be affected.

The sad shal be discharged of heauinesse, the angrie and cholericke purged, the pleasaunt mainteined in mirth, the whole furnished with disporte, and the sicke appaysed of grieffe. These Nouelles then, being profitable and pleasaunt Histories, apt and meete for all degrees, I truste the indifferent Reader, of what complexion, nature and disposition so euer he bee, will accepte in good parte, althoughe perchaunce not so set forth or decked with eloquent stile, as this age more braue in tongue then manners dothe require, and do praye thee to receiue them into thy curteous hands, with no lesse good wil (though not with like regard) then Alphonsus king of Arogon did Q. Curtius, out of whome be some of these selected, Who vpon a time beinge sicke at Capua, receiuing at the handes of diuers Phisitions manye medicines, in his greatest fit called for the historie of Q. Curtius, in whome hauing great delight for his eloquent description of gestes and factes of king Alexander, when he was restored to health, sayd: Farewell Auicen, Adieu Hipocrates and other Phisitions, welcome Curtius the restitutor and recouerie of my health. Whereby he declared what pleasure he had in the exercise and reading of Histories, not contempning for all that, the honor-

able science of Phisicke, which in extremities be holisomely vsed. What commoditie and pleasure histories doe yelde to the diligent serchers and trauailers in the same, Tullie in his fift booke *De finibus bonorum et malorum ad Brutam*, doth declare who affirmeth that he is not ignorant, what pleasure and profit the reading of Histories doth import. And after hee hath described what difference of commoditie, is betweene fained fables, and liuely discourses of true histories, concludeth reading of histories to be a certain prouocation and allurement to moue men to learne experience. If Tullie then, the Prince of Orators, doth affirme profite and pleasure to be in perusing of histories, then fitlye haue I intituled this volume the Palace of Pleasure. For like as the outwarde shew of Princesse Palaces be pleasaunt at the viewe and sight of echeman's eye, bedecked and garnished with sumptuous hanginges and costlye arras of splendent shewe, wherein be wrought and bet with golde and sylke of sondrye hewes, the dedes of noble states: Euen som this our Palace here, there bee at large recorded the princelye partes and glorious gestes of renowned wights represented with more liuely grace and gorgeous sight then tapestrie or arras woorke, for that the one with deadlye shape doth shewe, the other with speaking voyce declare what in their time they were. Vpon whom do wayte (as meete it is) inferiour persones, eche one vouchsafing to tell what hee was, in the transitorie trade of present life.

Wherefore accepte the same in gratefull wise, and thinke vpon the mynde of him that did the same, which fraughted is with no lesse plentie of good will, then the coafers of kyng Cræsus were, with store of worldlye pelfe. Farewell.

A
BRIEFE REHEARSALL
OF THE
ARGUMENTES OF EUERY NOUELL,
CONTEYNED IN THIS
FIRST TOME
OF
THE PALACE OF PLEASURE.

- Nouell I. The Romaines and Albanes beinge at Warres, for iniuries mutually in-
ferred, Metius Suffetius the Albaine captaine deuiseeth a way by a
combate to ioynе both the cities in one victorie falling to the Ro-
maines. The Roman Victor killeth his sister, who notwithstanding
is condempned to die. Afterwards vppon his father's sute is de-
liuered Page 1.
- II. Sextus Tarquinius rauisheth Lucrece whō bewayling the losse of her
chastitie killeth herselfe 8.
- III. The Siege of Rome, by Porsenna, and the valiant deliury thereof
by Mutius Scaeuola 12.
- IV. Martius Coriolanus going about to repressе the common people of
Rome by Dearth of corne, was banished. For reuenge whereof he
perswaded Accius Tullius, king of the Volscians, to make warres
vppon the Romaines, and hee himselfe in their ayde, came in his
owne person. The citie brought to great miserie the fathers deuised
meanes to deliuer the same, and sente into the Volscian Campe, the
mother, the wyfe, and the children of Coriolanus, vppon whose
complaints Coriolanus withdrewe the Volscians and the Citie was
reduced to quietenesse 15.
- V. Appius Claudius one of the Decemuii of Rome, goeth aboute to
rauish Virginia a yonge maiden, which indeuor of Appius when her
father Virginius vnderstoode, being then in the warres he repaired
home to rescue his daughter. One that was betrouthed vnto her,
claimed her, whereuppon rose great contencion. In the end her
owne father to saue the honor of his stock killed her with a butcher's
knife and commeth into the forum, crying vengeance vppon Appius.
Then after much contencion and rebellion the Decemuii were de-
posed 21.

Nouell VI.	Candaules king of Lydia, shewing the secretes of his wiue's beutie, to Gyges one of the Guard: was by counsaile of his wyfe slaine by the sayde Gyges and depriued of his kingdome	32.
..... VII.	Kinge Cræsus of Lydia reasoneth wyth the wyse man Solon of the happie life of man. Who litle esteeming his good aduise, vnderstode before his death that no man (but by vertue) can in his life attaine felicitie	35.
..... VIII.	Of a father that made sute to haue his owne sonne put to death	39
..... IX.	Water offered of good will to Artaxerxes the king of Persia, and the liberall reward of the king to the giuer	40.
..... X.	The loue of Chariton and Menalippus.	42.
..... XI.	Kinge Cyrus perswaded by Araspas, to dispose himselfe to loue a lady called Panthea, entreth into a pretie disputation and talke of loue and beutie. Afterwards Araspas himself falleth in loue with the sayd Lady, but she indued with great chastetie, auoydeth his earnest loue. And when her husband was slaine in the seruice of Cyrus she killed herselfe	44.
..... XII.	Abdolominus is from poore estate aduanced by Alexander the great, through his honest life to be King of Sydone	55.
..... XIII.	The Oracion of the Scythian ambassadours to Alexander the Great, reprouing his ambicion and desire of Empire.	52.
..... XIV.	The words of Metellus of mariage, and wyuinge, with the praise and dispraise of the same	60.
..... XV.	Of Lais and Demosthenes	63.
..... XVI.	C Fabritius and Æmilius consules of Rome, beinge promised that kinge Pyrrhus for a somme of money shoulde bee slaine (whoe was a notable ennemye to the Romaine state) aduertized Pyrrhus thereof by Letters, and other notable thinges, done by the same Fabritius	64.
..... XVII.	A Scholemaister, trayterously rendring the noble mennes sonnes of Faleria to the hands of Camillus was well acquitted and rewarded for his paynes and labour	66.
..... XVIII.	The Historie of Papirius Pretextatus	69.
..... XIX.	How Plutarcke did beate his man, and of pretie talke touchinge Agnes of Anger	71.
..... XX.	A pretie tale of Æscope, of the Larke	72.
..... XXI.	A mery iest vttered by Hanniball to King Antioqus	74.
..... XXII.	The marueylous knowledge of a Lion being acquainted with a man called Androdus	75.
..... XXIII.	A proper disputation of the Philosopher Phauorinus, to perswade a woman, not to put forth her child to nurse, but to nourish it herselfe with her owne milke	77.
..... XXIV.	Of Sertorius a noble Romaine Captaine	81.

Nouell	XXV.	Of the bookes of Sybilla	84.
...	XXVI.	A difference and controuersie betwene a master and a scholer so subtile that thej udges could not giue sentence	85.
.....	XXVII.	Seleucus king of Asia gaue his wyfe to his owne sonne in marriage, being his mother in lawe: who so feruently did loue her that hee was like to die, whiche by a discrete and wyse inuencion was discovered to Seleucus by a phisicion.	88.
.....	XXVIII.	Of the straunge and beastly nature of Timon of Athens enemy to mankind with his death, buriall and Epitaph	98.
.....	XXIX.	The marriage of a man, and woman, he beinge the husbände of twenty wiues: and she the wyfe of twenty-two husbands..	100.
.....	XXX.	Howe Melchisedech a Jewe, by telling a pretie tale of three ringes saued his life	102.
.....	XXXI.	One called Guglielmo Borsiere with certaine wordes well placed, taunted the couetous life of Ermino Grimaldi.	105.
.....	XXXII.	Maister Alberto of Bologna by a pleasaunte aunsweare, made a gentlewoman to blashe which had thought to haue put him out of countenance, in telling hym that he was in loue wyth her	108.
.....	XXXIII.	Rinaldo of Esti beyng robbed, arriued at Castell Guglielmo and was succourd by a widow: and restored to hys losses, retournig safe home to hys owne house	111.
.....	XXXIV.	Three yong men hauing fondely consumed all that they had, became very poore, whose nephew (as he retourned out of Englande into Italye by the waye) fell in acquaintaunce with an Abbot, whom (vppon further familiaritie) he knew to be the kinge of England's daughter, whych toke him to her husband. Afterwards she restored his vnles to all theyr losses, and sent them home in good state and reputacion	116.
.....	XXXV.	Landolfo Ruffolo being impouerished: became a pirate, and taken by the Geneuois, was in daunger of drowninge who sauing himselfe vppon a little coafer full of rich Jewelles, was receaued at Corfu, and being cherished by a woman, retorned home very rich ...	124.
.....	XXXVI.	Andreuccio of Perugia being come to Naples, to buy horse, was in one night surprised with three marueylous accidents. All which hauinge escaped, wyth one rubie he retorned home to his house	129.
.....	XXXVII.	The earle of Angiers beyng falsely accused, was banished out of Fraunce, and lefte hys two sonnes in sondry places in Englande, and retournig (vnknownen) by Scotland, founde them in greate authoritie, afterwarde he repayred in the habite of a seruaunt to the French king's army, and being knowen to be innocent, was againe aduauced to his first estate	142.
.....	XXXVIII.	Giletta a phisitian's daughter of Narbona, healed the Frenche king of a fistula, for reward whereof she demaunded Beltramo	

- Countie of Rosiglione to husband. The Countie being married against his wyll for despite fledde to Florence, and loued an other. Giletta his wyfe; by policie found meanes to lye wyth her husband in place of his louer, and was begotten wyth child with two sonnes, which knowen to her husband, he receyued her againe, and afterwards shee liued in great honor and felicitye 157.
- XXXIX. Tancredi prince of Salerne caused his doughter's louer to be slain and sent his harte vnto her in a cup of golde: which afterwarde she put vnto poysoned water, and drinking thereof dyed 166.
- XL. Mahomet one of the Turkishe emperours, executeth cursed crueltie vpon a Greeke mayden, whom he toke prisoner at the winning of Constantinople 176.
- XLI. A Ladye falsely accused of adultrye, was condemned to be deuoured of Lions, the maner of her deliury, and how (her innocencie being knowen) her accuser felt the paine for her prepared..... 184.
- XLII. Didaco a Spaniard is in loue with a poore mayden of Valentia and secretly marieth her, afterwards lothinge his firste mariage because shee was of base parentage, hee maryeth another of noble birth. His first wyfe by secreete messenger prayeth his company whose request he accomplisheth. Being a bed, she and her maide killeth him. She throweth him into the streat. She in desperate wise confesseth the fact before the maiestates, and is put to death. . 204.
- XLIII. Wantones and pleasaunte life being guides of incolencie, dothe bringe a miserable ende to a fayre ladye of Thurin, whom a noble man aduanced to highe estate, wherein he executeth great cruelye vpon his sayd lady taken in adultrie 226.
- XLIV. The loue of Alerane of Saxon, and of Adelasia the daughter of the Emperour Otho third of that name. Their flight and departure into Italy and how they were knowen againe, and what noble houses of Italy descended of their race. 235.
- XLV. The Duchesse of Sauoye being the king of England's sister, was in the Duke her husband's absence, vniustly accused of adultrie: by a noble man, his Lieutenaunt. And should haue bin put to death if by the prowesse, and valiaunt cumbate of Don John di Mendozza (a gentleman of Spaine) she had not bin deliuered. With a discourse of maruellous accidents, touching the same, to the singular prayse and commendacion of chaste and honest ladies..... 271.
- XLVI. A king of Englande, loued the doughter of one of his noblemen which was Countesse of Salesburie, who after greate sute to achieue that he could not winne, for the intire loue he bare her and her great constancie, made her his queene and wyfe 320.
[An Advertisement to the Reader. 350.]
- XLVII. A gentleman called Galgano long time made sute to Madonna Minoecia, her husband (not knowing the same) diuers times

- prayed and commended the sayd gentleman to his lady : by reason wherof in the absence of her husband, shee sente for him and yelded herself vnto him, telling him what good words her husband had spoken of him, for recompence wherof, he refused to dishonor her 351.
- XLVIII. Bindo a notable Architect, and his sonne Ricciardo wyth all his family, from Florence, came to dwel at Venice, where being made Citizens for diuers monuments by them erected there, through his inordinate expences was forced to rob the Treasure House. Bindo being slaine by a Pollicie deuised by the Duke and the State, Ricciardo by fine subtelties deliuereth himselfe from foure daungers. Afterwards the Duke (by his owne confession) vnderstandinge the sleight giueth him pardon and his daughter in mariage 356.
- XLIX. Philenio Sisterno a scholer of Bologna being mocked of three faire gentlewomen at a banquet made of set purpose, was reuenged vpon them all 366.
- L. The pitious and chaste death of one of the Muliters wiues of the Queene of Nauarre 377.
- LI. A king of Naples abusing a gentleman's wyfe, in the end did wear the hornes himself 380.
- LII. The rashe enterprise of a gentleman against a Princesse of Flaunders, and of the damage and shame that he receaued thereof. 386.
- LIII. The loue of Amadour and Florinda, wherein be contayned many sleighes and dissimulations together with the renowmed chastitie of the sayd Florinda 393.
- LIV. The incontinencie of a Duke and of his impudencie 423.
- LV. One of the French kinges called Fraunces the first of that name, declared his gentle nature to Counte Guillaume that would haue killed him. 429.
- LVI. A pleausant discourse of a great lord to enioye a gentlewoman of Pampelunæ 432.
- LVII. A punishment more rigorous then death executed by a husbnde vpon his wyfe that was found in adulterie 445.
- LVIII. A president of Grenoble aduertised of the ill gouernment of his wyfe, tooke suche order that his honestie was not diminished and yet reuenged the fact 449.
- LIX. A gentleman of Perche suspecting iniurie done vnto him by his friend, prouoked him to execute and put in prooffe the cause of his suspicion 452.
- LX. The piteous death of an amorus gentleman, for the slack comfort giuen hym to late by hys beloued. 455.
- LXI. A gentlewoman of the courte, very pleasauntly recompenced the seruice of a kinde seruauant of her's that pursued her wyth seruice of Loue 461.

xviii

- Novell LXII.** The honest and marvellous loue of a mayden of noble house and
of a Gentleman that was base borne, and how a queene did impeche
and let theyr mariage, wyth the wyse aunswere of the mayd to the
queene 464.
- **LXIII.** The wysedome of a woman to wythdrawe the foolishe loue of
her husband wherewyth he was tormented. 483.
- **LXIV.** The notable charitie of a woman of Towres towards her husband
..... 487.
- **LXV.** The simplicite of an old woman that offered a burning candle
to S. John of Lions 489.
- **LXVI.** A Doctour of the Lawes bought a cup, and by the subtilty of
two false verlets, lost both his money and his cup 490.

FINIS.

The
Palace of Pleasure.

THE FIRST NOUELL.

The Romaines and the Albanes being at warres, for iniuries mutually inferred, Metius Suffetius the Albane captaine deuised a waye by a combate, to ioygne bothe the cities in one. Victorie falling to the Romaines, the Romaine victor killed his sister and was condemned to die. Afterwardes vpon his fathers sute he was deliuered.

AS the name of Palace doth carie a port of Maiestie as propre for princes and greatest estates, and as a Palace and Court by glorious viewe of loftie towers, doe set forth an outwarde showe of greate magnificence; and as that glittering sight without importeth a brauer pompe and state within, whose worthiest furniture (besides the golden and curious ornamentes) resteth in the princely train of courtly personages, most communely indowed with natures comliest benefites and rarest giftes incident to earthly goddes, as well for the mindes qualities, as for the bodies acts. So, here at our first entrie, I thought to staye as it were at the gate of this palace, to discover the incountrie of sixe renowned Gentlemen, brethren of equal numbre, that, by consent of either state, fought and vsed dedes of armes, not for sportes of Ladies, or for precious prizes, but for countrie quarell and libertie of native soyle. For the vpper hand and vniting two most mighty Italian cities, that before bare eche other moste mortall spite and deadlye foode, whiche in ende after the bloudie skirmishe of those chosen brethren (for sauing of a bloudier battell) were conioyned in

vnited Monarchie. An historie though dreadfull to hearing as fitter for the Campe then Courte, yet, for the worthinesse of the quarell, not to bee shunned from tendrest eares, for that it spreadeth foorth a victorious paterne of valiant chiuallrie. And so do the rest succeding, which speake of glorious chastitie, of inuincible mindes, of bold aduentures for Countries saufetie, of naturall pietie in parentes and children, and the othe of other honorable causes, fitte to be displaid to eche degree, and practised by such whose functions principally do or ought to aspire semblable valiaunce, for defence of that whiche their Elders by bloudie swette haue honorably gotten, and most carefully kept. But not by tedious proeme to holde the desirous minde from what is promised, thus it beginneth.

Numa Pompilius the second king of the Romaines being dead, Tullus Hostilius succeeded, which was a lustie and courageous younge gentleman: and as Numa was giuen to peace, so was he to warres and valiance. It chaunced in his time that certaine peasauntes of the Romaine dition, and the like of the Albanes, were foraging and driuing of booties the one from the other. At that time raigned in Alba one C. Cluilius, from whence and from Rome ambassadours were sent to redemaunde the thinges stollen. Tullus commaunded his people that they should deliuer nothing till commaundement were giuen in that behalfe: for than he knewe right well that the Alban king would not restore at all and therefore might vpon iust cause, proclaime warres. Hee receiued the Alban Ambassadours in verie courteous manner, and they as courteously celebrated his honourable and sumptuous intertainment. Amitie proceded on either parties, till the Romanes began to demaunde the first restitution which the Albanes denied, and summoned warres to bee inferred vpon them within thirtie daies after. Whereupon the Ambassadours craued licence of Tullus to speake, which being graunted, they first purged themselues by ignoraunce, that they knewe no harme or iniurie done to the Romaines, adding further, that if any thing were done that should not please Tullus, it was against their willes, hoping he would remember that they

were but Ambassadors, subiect to the commaundement of their Prince. Their comming was to demaunde a restitution, without whiche, they were straightlye charged to proclayme defiaunce. Whereunto Tullus aunswered: "Tell your maister, that the king of the Romaines doth call the Gods to witnes, whether of them first maketh the quarel, to thintent all men may expect the reuenge of those warres." Which answere the Albane Ambassadors retourned to their maister. Great prouision for the warres was made on both partes, much like to a ciuile contention, almost betwene the father and the sonne, for the citie of Lauinium was builded by the Troians, and Alba by the Lauinians, of whose stocke the Romaines toke their beginning. The Albanes seing that they were defied of the Romaines, began first to enter in armes, and with a maine power perced the land of the Romaines, and encamped within fiue miles of the citie, enuironing their campe with a trenche, which afterwarde was called Fossa Cluilia, of their capitaine, wherin Cluilius the king died. Then the Albanes appointed one Metius Suffetius, to be their Dictator. Tullus vnderstanding the death of their Prince, with great expedition marched into the countrie about Alba, passing by the Albanes campe in the night which by the watche and scoutes was skried. Then he retired to lodge as nere the enemye as hee could, sending an Ambassadour before, to require Tullus that he would come to parle before they fought, and than he had a thing to saye, no lesse profitable to the Romaines, then to the Albanes. Tullus not contempning that condition, agreed. Whereupon both did put them selues in readines, and before they ioyned, both the captaines with certain of their chiefe officers, came forth to talke, where Metius sayde these wordes: "The mutuall iniuries that hath been done, and the withholding and keeping of thinges caried away, contrary to the truce, and that our king Cluilius, is the authour and beginner of these warres, I do heare and assuredly vnderstande for a trothe. And I do not doubte, Tullus, but thou also doest conceiue the same, to be the only occasion of this hostilitie. Notwithstandinge, if I may speake rather the truthe, then vtter any glosing woordes by waye of flatterie, the ambitious desire of both the empires, doth

moste of all stimulate and prouoke both the cities, being of one affinitie, and neighbours, to vse this force of armes. But whether this my coniecture bee righte or wrong, they oughte to consider whiche firste began the warres. The Albanes haue created me their Captaine of this enterpryse. I come to geue aduertisement to thee, O Tullus, of this one thing: which is, that the Thuscans being a great nation, and of power right famous, doth enuironne vs both rounde about, and the nerer they be vnto you, the more knowledge you haue of them: they be mightie vpon lande, and of great power vpon sea. Call to thy remembraunce and consider, that when thou geuest the signe and watch worde of the battell, our twoo armies shall bee but a ridiculous spectacle to them. So sone as they doe perceiue vs twoo to bee spent, and weried with fighting, they will bothe assaile the vanquished, and him also that doeth ouercome. Wherefore if the Goddes do fauour eyther of vs, let vs not shewe our selues to bee wearie of our libertie and franchise that is certaine, and hazard the dice to incurre perpetuall seruitude and bondage. Therfore let vs deuise some other waye, wherby the one of vs may gouerne the other without effusion of eithers bloud."

This condition nothing displeased Tullus, although in courage, and hope of victorie, he was more fierce and bolder then the other. And being in consultation about the purpose, fortune ministred an apt occasion to them both: for in either campes there were thre brethren, of age and valiance semblable. The brethren that were in the Romaine campe were called Horatij, the other Curiatij. Whereupon a combate was thought meete betwene these sixe persones. After the Romaines had vsed their solempne maners of consecrating the truces, and other rites concerning the same, either partes repaired to the combate. Both the armies stode in readines before their campes, rather voyde of present perill then of care: for the state of either of their Empires, consisted in the valiance and fortune of a fewe. Wherefore their mindes were wonderfullie bent and incensed vpon that vnpleasant sight. The signe of the combat was giuen. The thre yonge men of either side do ioigne with furious and cruel onset, representing the courages of two battelles of puissaunt armies. For the losse

consisted in neither those three, but the publique gouvernement or common thraldome of both the cities, and that was the future fortune, whiche they did trie and proue. So sone as the clashing armour did sound at their first incountrie, and their glittering swordes did shine, an incredible horror and feare perced the beholders, and hope inclining to either partes, their voyce and myndes were whist and silent. But after they were closed together, not onely the mouing of their bodies, and doubtfull welding and handling of their weapons, but bloudye woundes appeared, two of the Romaines falling downe starke dead one vpon an other: But before the three Albanes were sore hurt. Whereat the Albane hoste shouted for ioye. The Romaine Legions were voyde of hope, amazed to see but one remayne against three: It chaunced that hee that lyued whyche as hee was but one alone (an vnmeete matche for the rest) so he was fierce, and thought himselfe good enough for them all. Therefore to separate their fight, he fledde backe, meaning thereby to geue euery of them their welcome as they followed. When he was retired a good space from the place wher they fought, loking back, he sawe them followe some distance one from an other, and as one of them approached, he let driue at him with great violence. And whiles the Albane hoste cried out vpon the Curiatij, to helpe their brother, Horatius had killed his enemy, and demaunded for the seconde battaile. Then the Romaines encouraged their champion with acclamations and shoutes, as fearefull men be wont to do vpon the sodaine, and Horatius spedeth himselfe to the fight. And before the other could ouertake him, which was not farre of, hee had killed an other of the Curiatij. Nowe were they equally matched one to one, but in hope and strengthe vnlike. For the one was free of wounde or hurte: cruell and fierce by reason of double victorie, the other faint for losse of bloud, and wearie of running, and who with panting breath, discomfited for his brethrens slaughter, slaine before him, is now objected to fight with his victorious enemy. A match altogether vnequall. Horatius reioysing sayd, two of thy brethren I haue dispatched, the thirde, the cause of this battaill, I will take in hand: that the Romaines maye bee lordes of the Albanes. Curiatius not able to sustaine his blowe, fell downe, and lying

vpon his backe, he thrust him into the throte with his sworde, whiche done he dispoyled him of his armure. Then the Romaines in great triumphe and reioyse intertaigned Horatius, and their ioye was the greater, for that the feare of their ouerthrowe was the nearer. This combate being ended, the Albanes became subiecte to the Romaines, and before Metius departed, he asked Tullus if hee would commaunde him any further seruice. Who willed him to kepe the younge souldiours still in intertainment, for that hee woulde require their aide against the Veientes. The armie dissolved, Horatius like a Conquerour marched home to Rome, the three spoyles of his enemies being borne before hym.

The said Horatius had a sister, which was espoused to one of the Curiatij that were slaine, who meeting her brother in the triumphe, at one of the gates called Capena, and knowing the coate armure of her paramour, borne vpon her brothers shoulders, which she had wrought and made with her owne handes: She tore and rent the heare of her heade, and most piteously bewayled the death of her beloued. Her brother being in the pride of his victorie taking the lamentation of his sister, in disdainful part, drew oute his sword, and thruste her through speaking these reprochfull woordes: "Auaunt with thy vnreasonable loue, gette thee to thy spouse. Hast thou forgotten the deathe of thy two brethren that be slaine, the prosperous successe of thy victorious brother, and chieflye the happye deliuerance of thy countrie: Let that Romaine woman whatsoeuer she be, take like rewarde, that shall bewaile the death of the enemye." Which horrible facte seemed most cruell to the fathers and people. For which offence he was brought before the kinge, whom he deliuered to be iudged according to the lawe. The law condempned him, then he appealed to the people. In which appeale P. Horatius his father spake these wordes: "My doughter is slaine, not without iust desert, which if it were not so, I would haue sued for condigne punishmente, to be executed vpon my sonne, according to the naturall pietie of a father: Wherefore I beseech you do not suffer me, whom you haue seene in time past, beautified with a noble race and progenie of children, nowe to be vtterlye destitute and voyde of all together."

Then hee embrased his sonne amonges them all, and shewed the spoiles of the Curatiens, sayinge: "Can you abide to see this noble Champion (O ye Romaines) whom lately ye behelde to go in order of triumphe in victorious maner, to lye nowe bounde vnder the gibet, expecting for tormentes of death: Which cruell and deformed sight, the Albanes eyes can not well be able to beholde, goe to then thou hangman, and binde the handes of him, who hath atchieued to the Romaine people a glorious Empyre: Goe, I saye, and cover the face of him that hath deliuered this citie out of thraldome and bondage. Hang him vpon some vnhappie tree, and scourge him in some place within the Citie, either amongs these our triumphes, where the spoiles of our enemies do remaine, or els without the walles, amonges the graues of the vanquished. Whether can yee deuise to carrie him, but that his honourable and worthye actes, shal reueng the villanie of his cruel death." The people hearing the lamentable talke of his father, and seinge in him an vnmoueable minde, able to sustaine al aduersity, acquitted him rather through the admiration of his vertue and valiance, then by iustice and equity of his cause. Such was the straite order of iustice amonges the Romaines, who although this yonge gentleman had vindicated his countrie from seruitude and bondage (a noble memorye of perfecte manhode) yet by reason of the murder done vpon his owne sister, were very straite and slacke to pardon: because they would not incourage the posteritie to like inconuenience, nor prouoke wel doers in their glorye and triumphe, to perpetrate thinges vnlawfull.

THE SECOND NOUELL.

Sextus Tarquinius rauished Lucrece. And she bewayling the losse of her chastitie, killed her selfe.

GREAT preparation was made by the Romaines, against a people called Rutuli, who had a citie named Ardea, excelling in wealth and riches which was the cause that the Romaine king, being exhausted and quite voyde of money, by reason of his sumptuous buildinges, made warres vppon that countrie. In the time of the siege of that citie the yonge Romaine gentlemen banqueted one another, amonges whom there was one called Collatinus Tarquinius, the sonne of Egerius. And by chaunce they entred in communication of their wiues, euery one praysing his seuerall spouse. At length the talke began to grow hot, whereupon Collatinus said, that words were vaine. For within few houres it might be tried, how much his wife Lucretia did excel the rest, wherefore (quoth he) if there be any liuelihod in you, let us take our horse, to proue which of oure wiues doth surmount. Wheruppon they roode to Rome in post. At their comming they found the kinges doughters, sportinge themselues with sondrye pastimes: From thence they went to the house of Collatinus, where they founde Lucrece, not as the other before named, spending time in idlenes, but late in the night occupied and busie amonges her maydes in the middes of her house spinning of woll. The victory and prayse wherof was giuen to Lucretia, who when she saw her husband, gentlie and louinglie intertained him, and curteouslye badde the Tarquinians welcome. Immediatly Sextus Tarquinius the sonne of Tarquinius Superbus, (that time the Romaine king) was incensed wyth a libidious desire, to construpate and defloure Lucrece. When the yonge gentlemen had bestowed that night pleasantly with their wiues, they retourned to the campe. Not long after Sextus Tarquinius with one man retourned to Collatia vnknownen to Collatinus, and ignorant to Lucrece and the rest of her household, for what purpose he came: who being well intertayned, after supper was conueighed to his chamber. Tarquinius burn-

inge with the loue of Lucrece, after he perceiued the housholde to be at reste, and all thinges in quiet, with his naked sworde in his hande, wente to Lucrece being a sleepe, and keeping her downe with his lefte hande, saide: "Holde thy peace Lucrece, I am Sextus Tarquinius, my sworde is in my hand, if thou crie, I will kill thee." The gentlewoman sore afrayed, being newly awaked oute of her sleepe, and seeing imminent death, could not tell what to do. Then Tarquinius confessed his loue, and began to intreate her, and therewithall vsed sundry minacing wordes, by all meanes attempting to make her quiet: when he saw her obstinate, and that she woulde not yelde to his request, notwithstanding his cruell threatens, he added shameful and villanous speach, saying: That he would kill her, and when she was slaine, he woulde also kill his slaue, and place him by her, that it might be reported howe she was slaine, being taken in adulterie. She vanquished with his terrible and infamous threate, his fleshlye and licentious enterprice, ouercame the puritie of her chaste and honest hart, which done he departed. Then Lucrece sent a post to Rome to her father, and an other to Ardea to her husbnde, requiringe them that they would make speede to come vnto her, with certaine of their trustie frendes, for that a cruell facte was chaunced. Then Sp. Lucretius with P. Valerius the sonne of Volesius, and Collatinus with L. Iunius Brutus, made hast to Lucrece: where they founde her sitting, very pensife and sadde, in her chamber. So sone as she sawe them she began pitiously to weepe. Then her husband asked her, whether all thinges were well, vnto whom she sayde these wordes.

"No dere husbnde, for what can be well or safe vnto a woman, when she hath lost her chastitie? Alas Collatine, the steppes of an other man, be now fixed in thy bed. But it is my bodye onely that is violated, my minde God knoweth is giltles, whereof my death shalbe witnesse. But if you be men giue me your handes and trouth, that the adulterer may not escape vnreuenged. It is Sextus Tarquinius whoe being an enemie, in steede of a frende, the other night came vnto mee, armed with his sword in his hand, and by violence caried away from me (the Goddes know) a woful ioy." Then euery one of them gaue her

their faith, and comforted the pensife and languishing lady, imputing the offence to the authour and doer of the same, affirming that her bodye was polluted, and not her minde, and where consent was not, there the crime was absente. Whereunto shee added: "I praye you consider with your selues, what punishmente is due for the malefactor. As for my part, though I cleare my selfe of the offence, my body shall feelee the punishment: for no vncast or ill woman, shall hereafter impute no dishonest act to Lucrece." Then she drewe out a knife, which she had hidden secretly, vnder her kirtle, and stabbed her selfe to the harte. Which done, she fell downe grouelinge vppon her wound and died. Whereupon her father and husband made great lamentation, and as they were bewayling the death of Lucrece, Brutus plucked the knife oute of the wound, which gushed out with aboundance of bloude, and holding it vp said: "I sweare by the chast bloud of this body here dead, and I take you the immortall Gods to witnes, that I will driue and extirpate oute of this Citie, both L. Tarquinius Superbus; and his wicked wife, with all the race of his children and progenie, so that none of them, ne yet any others shall raigne anye longer in Rome." Then hee deliuered the knife to Collatinus. Lucretius and Valerius, who marueyled at the strangenesse of his words: and from whence he should conceiue that determination. They all swore that othe, and followed Brutus, as their captaine, in his conceiued purpose. The body of Lucrece was brought into the market place, where the people wondred at the vilenesse of that facte, euery man complayning vppon the mischief of that facinorous rape, committed by Tarquinius. Whervpon Brutus perswaded the Romaynes, that they should cease from teares and other childishe lamentacions, and to take weapons in their handes, to shew themselues like men.

Then the lustiest and most desperate persons within the citie, made themselues prest and readie, to attempte any enterprise: and after a garrison was placed and bestowed at Collatia, diligent watche and ward was kept at the gates of the citie, to the intent the kinge should haue no aduertisement of that sturre. The rest of the souldiours followed Brutus to Rome.

When he was come thither, the armed multitude did beate a

marneilous feare throughout the whole citie: but yet because they sawe the chieffeste parsonages goe before, they thought that the same enterprise was taken in vaine. Wherefore the people out of all places of the citie, ranne into the market place, where Brutus complained of the abhominable rape of Lucrece, committed by Sextus Tarquinius: and thereunto he added the pride and insolent behauiour of the king, the miserie and drudgerie of the people, and howe they, which in time paste were victours and conquerours, were made of men of warre, artificers, and labourers. He remembred also the infamous murder of Seruius Tullius their late kinge. These and such like he called to the peoples remembraunce, whereby they abrogated and deposed Tarquinius, banishing him, his wife, and children. Then he leuiued an armie of chosen and piked men, and marched to the campe at Ardea, committing the gouernement of the citie to Lucretius, who before was by the king appointed lieutenant. Tullia in the time of this hurlie burlie, fledde from her house, all the people cursing and crying vengeance vpon her. Newes brought into the campe of these euentes, the king with great feare retourned to Rome, to represse those tumultes, and Brutus hearinge of his approche, marched another waye, because hee would not meete him. When Tarquinius was come to Rome, the gates were shutte against him, and he himselfe commaunded to auoide into exile. The campe receiued Brutus with great ioye and triumphe, for that he had deliuered the citie of such a tyraunte. Then Tarquinius with his children fledde to Cære, a citie of the Hetrurians. And as Sextus Tarquinius was going, he was slaine by those that premeditated reuengement, of olde murder and iniuries by him done to their predecessours. This

L. Tarquinius Superbus raigned xxv yeares. The

raigne of the kinges from the first foundation of

the citie continued CCxliiii. yeares. After

which gouernement two Consuls were

appointed, for the order and admi-

nistration of the citie. And

for that yeare L. Iuni-

us Brutus, and L.

Tarquinius, Col-

latinus.

THE THIRD NOUELL.

*The siege of Rome by Porsenna, and the valiaunt deliuerie thereof
by Mutius Scauola, with his stoute aunswere vnto the kinge.*

WHEN P. Valerius and T. Lucretius were created consuls, Porsenna kinge of Hetruria, vppon the instigation of the banished Tarquinians, came before the citie with an huge armie. The brute wherof did wonderfully appall the Senate: for the like occasion of terroure, neuer before that time chaunced to the Romaines, who did not onely feare their enemies, but also their owne subiects, suspecting lest they should be forced to retaine the kinges againe. All which afterwards, were through the wisdom and discretion of the fathers quietlie appeased, and the citie reduced to such vnitie and courage, as all sorts of people despised the name of king. When the enemies were approched, the rurall people abandoning their colonies, fled for rescue into the citie. The citie was diuided into garrisons: some kept the walles, and some the waye ouer Tiber, which was thought very safe and able to be defended. Although the wodden bridge made ouer the riuer, had almost been an open way for the enemies entrie, whereof Horacius Cocles, as fortune serued that day, had the charge. Who so manfully behaued himselfe, as after he had broken vp and burned the bridge, and done other notable exploits, he defended that passage with such valiance, that the defence therof seemed miraculous, to the great astonishment of the enemies. In fine Porsenna seing that he coulde litle preuaile in the assault, retourned to the campe, determining neuerthelesse to continue his siege. At which time one Caius Mutius, a yonge gentleman of Rome, purposed to aduenture some notable enterprise: saying to the senators these words: "I determine to passe the riuer, and enter if I can, into the campe of the enemies, not to fetch spoile, or to reuenge mutual iniuries, but to hazard greater matters, if the Gods be assistant vnto me." The senate vnderstanding the effect of his indeuour, allowed his deuise: and then hauinge a sword vnder his garment, went forth. When he was come into the throng, he conueighed himselfe as nere the kinges pavilion as he could. It chaunced that he was paying wages that

day to his souldiours, by whom his secretarie did sit in such apparell, almost as the king himselfe did weare. Mutius being a fraide to demaunde which of them was the king, lest he should bewray himselfe, sodainly killed the secretarie in steede of the king, and as he was making waye with his bloudie sworde to escape, he was apprehended and brought before the king, and with maruailous stoutnesse and audacitie, spake these words: "I am a citizen of Rome, and my name is Mutius, and beinge an enemy, I woulde faine haue killed mine enemy. For which attempt I esteeme no more to die, then I cared to commit the murder. It is naturally giuen to the Romaines, both valiantly to do and stoutly to suffer. And not I alone haue conspired thy death, but a greate number of vs, haue promised the like, and hope to prosecute semblable prayse and glorie: wherfore if this beginninge do not please thee, make thy selfe ready euerye houre to expect like perill, and to fight for thy selfe. And make accompt, that euery day euen at the dore of thine owne lodging, thy enemye armed doth waite for thee: we alone yong gentlemen of the citie do stand at defiance, and pronounce vpon thee this kinde of battaile. Feare no armies or other hostilitie, for with thee alone, and with euerye one of vs these warres shalbe tryed." The king astonied with that bold and desperate enterprise, fell into a great rage and furie, commaunding Mutius presentlye to be consumed with fyre, vnlesse he would out of hand tell him the order of the purposed and deuised treason. "Behold O king (quoth hee) how litle they care for theyr bodies, that do aspire and seeke for fame and glorie." And then he thrust his right hand into the fire, and rosted the same in the flame, like one that had been out of his wits. The king amazed wyth the straungnes of the fact, stepped downe from the seate, and caused him to be taken from the fire, saying: "Away, frend (quoth the king) thou hast killed thy selfe, and aduentured hostilitie vpon thy selfe rather then against mee. Surely I would thincke mine estate happie, if like valiaunce were to be found wythin the boundes of my countrye. Wherfore by law of armes I set the at libertie to go whither thou list." Whereunto Mutius for acquiting that desert, aunswered: "For as much as thou hast thus honourably delt with me, I

wil for recompence of this benefite, saye thus muche vnto thee, whych by threates thou shouldest neuer haue gotten at my handes. Three hundred of vs that be yonge noble men of Rome, haue conspired thy death, even by the like attempt. It was my lot to come first, the reste when fortune shall giue opportunitie, euerye one in his tourne will giue the aduenture." Whereupon he was dismissed, and afterwards was called Scaeuola, for the losse of his right hande. Then peace was offered to the Romaines, who vpon conditions that the enemies garrisons should be withdrawn from Ianiculum, and that the country wonne of the Veientes, should be restored againe, gaue hostages. Amonges whom there was a gentlewoman called Cloelia deliuered into the handes of the Hetrurians, who deceyuinge her keepers, conueighed herselfe and the other pledges from their enemies, and swimming ouer the riuer of Tiber, arriued at Rome in safetie, which being redemaunded by Porsenna, were sent backe againe. The king driuen into a wonderfull admiration for the desperate and manly enterprises, done by the Romaine nation, returned the maiden home againe to Rome. In whose honour the Romaines erected an image on horse backe, placed at the vpper ende of the streete called Sacra via. And so peace was concluded betweene Porsenna and the Romaines.

THE FOURTH NOUELL.

Martius Coriolanus goinge about to repress the common people of Rome with dearth of corne was banished. For reuengement whereof he perswaded Accius Tullius king of the Volscians, to make warres vpon the Romaynes, and he himselfe in their ayde, came in his owne person. The citie brought to greate miserye, the fathers deuised meanes to deliuer the same, and sent vnto the Volscian campe, the mother, the wife and children of Coriolanus. Vpon whose complaintes Coriolanus withdrewe the Volscians, and the citie was reduced to quietnes.

In the yeare that Titus Geganius and Publius Minutius were Consuls, when all thinges were quiet abroad, and dissention at home appeased, an other great mischiefe inuaded the citie. First a dearth of victuals, for that the land was vntilled, by the peoples departure, then a famine, such as chaunceth to the besieged: which had brought a great destruction of people, had not the consuls forseene the same, by prouision in forren places. They sent purueiours into Scicilia: but the malice of the cities adioyning, stayed the prouision that was made a farre of. The corne prouided at Cumas was stayed for the goodes of Tarquinius by Aristodemus the tyrant, that was his heire. The next yere followinge, a greate masse of corne was transported oute of Scicile, in the time of the consuls, M. Minutius and A. Sempronius. Then the senate consulted, vpon the distribution of the same vnto the people. Diuers thought that the time was then come, to bridle and suppress the people, that thereby they mighte the rather recouer those priuileges, which were extorted from the fathers. Amonges whom Martius Coriolanus a yonge gentleman was the chiefest, who being anemie to the Tribune authoritie, said these wordes. " If the people will haue victuals and corne at that price, whereat it was assised and rated in time past, then it is meete and necessarie, that they render to the fathers, their auncient auctoritie and priuilege: for to what purpose be the plebeian magistrates ordained? For what consideration shall I suffer my selfe to be

subiugate vnder the authoritie of Sicinius, as though I were conuersaunte amonges theeues? Shal I abide these iniuries any longer to continue, then is necessarie? I that could not suffer Tarquinius the king, shal I be pacient with Sicinius? Let Sicinius depart if he will, let him draw the people after him: the way yet is open to the sacred hill, and to the other mountaines. Let them rob vs of our corne which they toke away from our owne land, as they did three yeares paste, let them enioy the victuals, which in their furie they did gather. I dare be bold to saye thus much, that being warned and tamed, by this present penurie, they had rather plow and til the land, then they would suffer the same to be vncultured, by withdrawing themselves to armure. It is not so easy to be spoken, as I thincke it may with facilitie be brought to passe, that vpon conditions the prices of victuals should be abated, the fathers might remoue the auctoritie of the Tribunes and disanul all those lawes, which against their wills were ratefied and confirmed." This sentence seemed cruel to the fathers, and almost had set the people together by the eares, whoe woulde haue torne him in peeces, had not the Tribunes appointed a day for his appearance. Whervpon their furie for that time was appeased, Coriolanus seinge the peoples rage to encrease, and consideringe that they should be his Iudge, when the day of his apparance was come, he absented himselfe, and therfore was condempned. Then he fled to the Volscians, of whom he was gently interteigned: and lodged in the house of Accius Tullius, the chiefe of that citie, and a deadly enemy to the Romaines. Vpon daily conference and consultation had betwene them, they consulted by what sleight or pollicie, they might comence a quarrell against the Romaines. And because they doubted, that the Volscians would not easely be perswaded thereunto, beinge so oft vanquished and ill intreated, they excogitated some other newe occasion. In the meane time T. Latinius one of the plebian sorte, perceyuing that the Romaines went about to institute great pastimes, conceiued a dreame, wherein hee sawe Iupiter to speake vnto him, and said that he liked not the towardnes of those games, and in case the same were not celebrated, with great royaltie and magnificens, they would ingender perill to the

citie, which dreame he declared to the consuls. Then the senate gaue order, that the same shoulde be addressed with great pompe and triumphe: whereunto through th'instigation of Accius, a greate number of the Volscians resorted. But before the plaies begunne, Tullius according to the compact agreed vpon, betwene him and Coriolanus, secretly repaired to the consuls, and taking them a syde, declared that he had to say vnto them a matter touching the publike wealth of their citie, in these words. "I am forced against my will to signifie vnto you a matter, that toucheth the condition of mine owne subiectes and countrie men. I come not to accuse them, as though they had already admitted any thinge, but I come to giue you a premonition, lest they should perpetrate some occasion, contrary to the order of your citie. The disposition of my countrie men, is more inconstant then I would wish: which we haue felt, to our great losse and decaie. The cause of oure security at this present, is rather suffered by your pacience, then by our desert. Here be at this instant a great multitude of Volscians: Here be games prepared, and the citie throughlye bent to behold them. I do remember what was done vpon like occasion in this citie by the Romain youth: I tremble to thincke, what may be rashly attempted, wherfore I thought good both for your owne sakes and for auoyding of mutual displeasure, to foretel you of these things. And for mine owne part I purpose immediatlye to returne home, because I wil auoide the daunger and peril, that maye chaunce by my presence." When he had spoken those words, he departed. The consuls immediatly recompted the request of Accius to the senate: who more esteeming the personage, from whence the same did procede, then the matter that was spoken, determined to prouide a remedie for the same, and immediatlye caused the Volscians to auoide the citie, sending officers about, to commaund them to depart that night: vpon which sodain edict, at the first they began to marueile. And afterwards they conceiued great griefe and offence, for that their vnneighbourlye entertainment. and as they were passing out of the citie in a long traine, Tullius being vpon the top of the hill called Ferrentine, to waite for the people, as they passed by, called vnto him the chiefe and principal parsonages, to prouoke them to take that aduauntage,

and then assembled the multitude in the valleie, hard by the high way, to whom he pronounced these words. "Forgetting all iniuries and displeasures past, done by the Romaine people against the Volscians, how can you abide the shame you suffer this daye, wherein to oure great reproch, they begin to ostentate and shew forth their plaies. Do not you beleeeue, that euen to day, they triumph ouer you? Is not your departure (thincke ye) ridiculous to all the Romaines, to strangers, and other cities adioyning? Be not your wiues and children (trow ye) now passing homewards, laughed to scorne? What thincke ye your selues to be, which were warned to depart, at the sound of the trumpet? What (suppose ye) wil all they thinke, which do meete this multitude retiring homewards, to their great reproch and shame? Truly excepte there be some secrète occasion, whereby we should be suspected to violate the plaies or commit some other crime, and so forced to relinquish the company and fellowship of the honest, I know not what should be the cause of this repulse? Were we lyuing, when we made such festination to depart? If it may be called a departure, and not a running away, or shamefull retire. I perceiue ye did not accompt this to be a citie of our enemies, wher I thinck if ye had taried but one day longer, ye had all beene slaine. They haue denounced warres vppon you, which if you be men of courage, shall redounde to the vtter destruction of them, which first gaue the defiaunce. The Volscians perceyuing themselves greatly derided, for considerations before remembred, determined by common accord, to inferre warres vppon the Romaines, vnder the conduction of Actius Tullius, and Coriolanus. After they had recovered diuers of the Romaine cities, they proceded further, and in sondrie places spoiled and destroyed the same, encamping themselves fīue miles from Rome, besides the trenches called Fossas Cluiliās. In the meane time contention rose betwene the people and the fathers, howbeit the feare of forren partes, linked their mindes together, in the bands of concord. The consuls and fathers reposed their whole confidence in battel, which the common people in no wise could abide. Wherefore they were constrained to assemble the senate, in which consult was determined, that ambassadours should be sent to Coriolanus to demaund peace: who

retourned them againe with a froward answere, to this effect: that first they should restore to the Volscians their countrie, which they had conquered, and that done, he willed them to seke for peace. Yet they sent againe ambassadours, but in no wise they were suffered to come into their campe. Then the priestes cladde in their ornamentes, and other diuine furniture, were sent humblye to make petition for peace: And yet they coule not perswade them. Then the Romaine dames repayed to Veturia the mother of Coriolanus, and to his wyfe Volumnia. But whether the same was done by common consent, or by the aduise of the feminine kind, it is vncertaine. It was appointed that Veturia, being an auncient gentlewoman, and mother of Coriolanus and Volumnia his wife, with her two yonge children, should repaire to the campe, to the intent that they by their pitiful lamentacion, might defende the citie, which otherwise by force, was not able to be kept. At their arriuell, Veturia was knowne by one of her sonnes familier friends, standing betwene her doughter in law, and her two neuies, who caried word immediatlye to Coriolanus, how his mother, his wife and children, were come into the campe to speake with him. Coriolanus hearing him say so, descended from his seate, like one not wel in his wits, and went forth to embrace his mother. The old gentlewoman from supplications, fell into a great rage, speaking these woordes. " Abide a while before I do receiue thy embracements, let me knowe whether I am comen to mine enemie, or to my sonne, or whether I am a prisoner in thy campe, or thy mother. Alacke how long haue I prolonged these auncient yeares, and hoare heares most vnhappie, that nowe first I do behold thee an exile, and then view thee mine enemie. Canst thou finde in thy harte, to depopulate and destroy this thy country, wherein thou wast begotten and brought vp? Could not thy rage and furie be appeased, when thou diddest first put foote into the limites of this thy country? Did not natural zeale pearce thy cruel hart, when thou diddest first cast thine eyes vpon this citie? Is not the house of thy mother, and her domesticall goddes, conteyned within the walles of yonder citie? Do not thy sorrowful mother, thy deare wife and children, inhabite within the compasse of yonder citie? (O I, cursed creature!) if I had neuer had childe, Rome had not been

now assailed. If I had neuer brought forth a sonne, I should haue laied mine old bones and ended my life in a free countrie. But I coulde neuer haue sustained, or suffred more miserie, then is nowe fallen vnto mee, nor neuer more dishonour, then to beholde thee in pitifull plight, a traytour to thy natife soile. And as I am the moste wretched wight of all mothers, so I trust I shal not long continue in that state. If thou procede in this enterprise, either sodaine death, or perpetuall shame bee thy rewarde." When his mother had ended these woordes, the whole traine of gentlewomen, brake into pitifull teares: bitterly bewayling the state of their countrie, whiche at lengthe did mitigate the stomacke of Coriolanus. And when he had imbraced his wife and children, hee dismissed them. Then hee withdrewe the Volscian campe from the citie, and out of the Romaine prouince. Vpon the displeasure of whiche facte, he died. It is sayd that when he was an old man, hee vsed many times to speake and vtter this sentence. " That verie miserable it is, for an olde man to liue in banishment." The Romans disdaigned not to attribute to women, their due prayse: for in memorie of this deliuerie of their countrie, they erected a temple, Fortunæ Muliebri, to Womens Fortune.

THE FIFTE NOUELL.

Appius Claudius, one of the decemviri of Rome, goeth about to ravishe Virginia a yonge mayden, which indeuour of Appius, when her father Virginius vnderstode being then in the warres, hee repaired home to rescue his doughter. One that was betrouthed vnto her, clamed her, whereupon rose great contention. In the ende her owne father, to saue the shame of his stocke, killed her with a bocher's knife, and went into the Forum, crying vengeance vpon Appius. Then after much contention and rebellion, the decemviri were deposed.

SPURIUS Posthumius Albus, Aulus Manlius, and P. Sulpitius Camerinus, were sent ambassadours to Athenes, and commaunded to wryte out the noble lawes of Solon, and to learne the institutions, orders, and lawes of other Greeke cities. Vpon whose retourne, the tribunes were verie instant that at length lawes might be enacted and confirmed. And for that purpose certaine officers were appointed, called Decemviri: with soueraigne authoritie and power to reduce the same into wryting, whiche were thought meete and profitable for the common wealth. The principall and chiefe of which nomber was Appius Claudius, who committed no lesse filthy facte, then was done by Tarquinius, for the rape of Lucrece. The sayde Appius conceiued a libidinous desire, to ravishe a yong virgine, the doughter of one Lucius Virginius, then a captain in the warres at Algidum, a man of honest and sober life, whose wife was also of right good behauiour, and their children accordingly brought vp, and instructed. They had betrouthed their doughter, to one L. Icilius of the order of the tribunes, a man of great stoutnesse and tried valiance in the cause of the people. This yong maide being of excellent beautie, Appius at the first began to woe by giftes and faire promises: but when he sawe that she was impregnable, he deuised by wicked and cruell pollicie, to obtaine her, committing the charge of that enterprise to one of his frendes, called Marcus Claudius, who went about to proue and maintaine, that the maide was his bondwoman, and in

no wise would giue libertie to her friendes to haue time to answere the processe made in that behalfe, thinking by that meanes, in the absence of her father, hee might at his pleasure enioye her. As the virgine was going to schole in the forum, the said Claudius, the minister of mischief, layd handes vpon her, claimed her to be his bondwoman, for that she was borne of a seruile woman, and commaunded her to folow him. The mayde being afraide was amazed, and the nurse that wayted vpon her, cried out. Whereupon the people ran out of their doores, to knowe the cause of the sturre. Claudius seing the maide like to be rescued by the multitude that was assembled, said, that there was no neede of that hurlie burlie, for that he attempted nothing by force, but that he was able to proue by lawe. Whereupon he cited the mayde to appere, her friendes promised that she should according to the lawe, make her apperance. Being come before the consistorie, where Appius set in iudgement, Claudius began to tell a tale and processe of the cause, whereof Appius being the deuiser, vnderstode the effect. The tenor of the tale was, that the maide was borne in his house, and was the doughter of his owne bondwoman, who afterwarde being stolen awaye, was caried to the house of Virginius, and supposed to be his childe, which thing he said, he was well able to proue and would referre the iudgement of his cause to Virginius him selfe: vnto whom the greater part of his iniurie did apertaine. In the meane time, he sayde, that it was meete the maide should folowe her maister: wherunto the aduocates of the mayde replied, and said, that Virginius was absent about the affaires of the commonwealth, but if he were aduertised of the matter, they knewe wel he would bee at home within twoo dayes after: wherefore, they sayd, that it were against equitie and iustice, that processe and suite should bee made for clayme of chyldren in the absence of the parentes, requiring them to deferre the matter tyll the retourne of the father. Appius not regarding the iustice of the case, to the intent hee myght satisfie his owne luste and pleasure, ordeyned in the meane tyme, that Claudius the assertor and playntife, shoulde haue the keping and placing the mayde, till the father were returned. Against whiche wrong, many did grudge, although none durst withstand it. But as fortune chaunced immediatly

ee and order was so pronounced: Publius Numito-
 les vnclie by her mother's side, and Icilius her be-
 omen home: vpon whose retourne, incontinentlye
 hed nere to Appius, and being put backe by the
 ried out a loude in these wordes: "Thou oughtest
 k from hence (O Appius) with a sworde that thou
 out let, enioye the thing thou wouldest haue kepte
 te. It is I that purpose to mary this maide, who I
 ery honest and chaste: wherefore cal together thy
 cause the rodde and axes, to be made prest and
 sure thee, the spouse of Icilius shall not remayne
 's house. No! although thou hast taken away from
 ople their tribunes aide and appeales, whiche be
 es and holdes of their common libertie. Is autho-
 e, libidinously to abuse our wyues and children?
 rueltie behinde our backes, and vpon our liues if
 at thou doe not contaminate and defile the vertue
 hereunto if thou inferre any damage or iniurie, I
 ne parte, and for the loue of my beloued, crie out
 the Romaines that be present, and Virginius shall
 e souldiours, in the quarell of his owne doughter.
 ether, will implore for the succour of goddes and
 to it, that thou shalt not enioye thy purpose be-
 haue lost our liues. Wherefore Appius I aduise
 in time, for when Virginius doth come, hee will
 efende his doughter, and will knowe in what con-
 thee is ordred, if shee be referred to the seruitude
 d for my part, my life shall soner fayle in defend-
 hen my faithe to her betrouthed." Appius per-
 tancie of Icilius, and that the people was in a
 sturre, differred the cause of Virginia til the next
 des hoped by that time, that her father would be
 ore with all expedition they addressed messen-
 the campe, bicause the saufgarde of his doughter
 presence. In the meane time the assertor re-
 , offering to put in baile; the like offer made Ici-
 o contriue and spende the time, till the ariall of

Virginus. The multitude of their owne accordes, helde vp their hands promising to become suretie for Icilius, vnto whome hee gaue thanks, weping for ioye, to se their kinde behauiour, and said: "I thanke you moste hartely my beloued frendes, to morowe I wil vse your frendly offer, but at this present I haue sureties sufficient." Whereupon Virginia was bailed. Then Appius repaired home, and wrote to his frendes in the campe, that in no wyse they should giue Virginus leaue to come to Rome, whiche vngracious deuise came to late, and tooke none effecte. Whereupon Virginus retourned home, and in poore and vile apparell, repaired to the Forum, after whom followed a great number of matrones and aduocates. Then he began to require them all of succour and ayde, alledging that he was a souldiour, and one that aduentured him selfe for the saufegarde and defence of them al: with such like perswasions to the multitude. Semblable wordes were vttered by Icilius. All which doinges being viewed and marked by Appius, in a greate furie he ascended the consistorie. Then M. Claudius the plaintife began to renewe his sute: and before the father of the mayden could make answeare to that plea, Appius gaue sentence that the mayde was bonde: which sentence semed so cruell, as it appalled the whole multitude. And as Claudius was laying handes vppon the virgine, Virginus stepped to Appius, and said: "I haue betrouthed my doughter to Icilius, and not to thee Appius. My care in the bringing of her vp, was to marrie her, and not to suffer her to be violated and defloured. It is your maner, like sauage and cruell beastes, indifferentlye thus to vse your fleshly affections: I can not tell whether the multitude here present will supporte this enormitie, but I am sure the armed souldiours, and men of warre, will not suffer it." Marcus Claudius being repulsed by the women, and aduocates that were present, silence was proclaymed by the trumpet. Then Appius began to declare how he vnderstoode, that all the night before, certaine companies were assembled within the citie, to excite and moue sedicion, for whiche cause hee came with armed men, not to hurte any that was quiet, but according to the authoritie of his office to bridle and repress those, that were troublers of the publike state. "Wherefore goe seargeant (quod he) make rounge emonges the

multitude, that the maister may enioye his seruante." Which wordes he thundered out with great furie, and therewithall the multitude gaue place, leauing the poore Puselle to be a praye to the ennemy. Her father seeing that hee was voyde of succoure and helpe, to defende the innocencie of his doughter, spake to Appius in this sorte: "I firste doe besече thee Appius, if I haue vsed any vnreasonable woordes against thee, to pardone mee, and to impute the same to the father's griefe and sorowe: suffer mee I praye thee, to examine the noursse, in the presence of the wenche, of the whole circumstance of this matter, to the intent that if I be but a supposed father, I maye departe hence with quiet conscience satisfied and contented." Virginius hauing licence to talke with his doughter and noursse, departed a side into a place called Cloacina, where the shoppes be, nowe called Tabernæ Nouæ, and plucking a sharpe knife from a bocher that stode by, he thrust the same to the harte of his doughter, sayinge: "By this onely meanes (doughter) I can make thee free:" And looking againe to the iudgement seate, he said: "This bloud Appius I consecrate and bestowe vpon thee." Whiche done, with his sworde he made waye, to passe through the thronge to conueighe him selfe out of the citie. Then Icilius and Numitorius tooke vp the dead bodie, and shewed it to the people, who cryed out vpon the wickednesse of Appius, bewayling the unhappie beautie of that fayre maiden, and deplored the necessitie of the father. The women exclaimed in lamentable wyse, saying: "Is this the condicion and state of them that bring forth children? Be these the rewardes of chastitie?" With suche like pitifull cries, as women are wonte to make vpon suche heaueie and dolorous euentes. Virginius being arriued in the campe, whiche then was at the mount Vicelius, with a traine of fower hundred persones, that fled out of the citie, shewed to the soul-diours the bloudie knife, that killed his doughter, whiche sighte astonied the whole campe: in so muche as euery man demaunded, what was the cause of that sodain chaunce. Virginius could not speake for teares, but at length he disclosed vnto them, the effecte of the whole matter, and holding vp his handes towardes the heauens, sayd: "I besече you (deare companions) do not impute the wickednesse of Appius Claudius vpon mee, ne yet

that I am a paricide and murderer of mine own children: the life of my dear doughter had bene more acceptable to me then mine owne life, if so be shee might haue continued a free woman, and an honest virgine. But when I sawe she was ledde to the rape like a bondwoman, I considered, that better it wer her life to be loste, then suffered to liue in shame: wherefore my naturall pitie was conuerted to a kynde of crueltie. And for myne owne parte, I doe not passe to lyue long after her, if I thought I should not haue your helpe and succour to reuenge her death. Consider that your selues haue doughters, sisters, and wyues, thinke not therefore, that the fleshlye desire of Appius is satisfied with the death of my doughter. And the longer that he doth continue in this securitie, the more vnbrideled is his appetite. Let the calamitie of an other be a sufficient document for you, to beware like iniuries. My wife is dead, by naturall fate and constellation, and bicause my doughter could continewe no longer in honeste and chaste life, death is befallen vnto her: whiche although it be miserable, yet the same is honourable. There is nowe no place in my house for Appius to satisfie his filthie luste: and I will fayle of my purpose, if I do not reuenge the death of my doughter with so good will vpon his fleshe, as I did discharge the dishonour and seruitude of her from his violent and cruell handes." This succlamation and pitifull complaine, so stirred the multitude, that they promised all to helpe and relieue his sorowe. Whereupon, the whole campe were in a mutine and marched in order of battayle to the mounte Auentine, where Virginius perswaded the souldiours, to chose ten principall captaines, to bee head and chiefe of that enterprise: whiche with honourable titles of the field, should be called Tribuni. And Virginius him selfe being elected the chiefe Tribune, sayde these wordes to the souldiours: "I praye you reserue this estimation, whiche you conceiue of me, vntill some better tyme and apter occasion, as well for your commoditie, as for my selfe. The death of my doughter, will suffer no honour to bee pleasaunt or welcome to me, duringe my life. Moreouer in this troubled state of the common wealth, it is not meete for them to be your gouernours, that be subiect and occurrant to enuie and reproch, if my seruice shall bee profitable vnto you when you haue

thus created me a tribune, it shall be no lesse commodious if I doe still remaine a priuate man." When he had spoken those wordes, they chose tenne tribunes. And like as the campe at the mounte Auentine, was prouoked and stirred to this sedition, euen so by meanes of Icilius and Numitorius before remembred, the armie then beinge against the Sabines began to reuolte and made the like number of Tribunes, which in array of battaile, marched through the citie, at the gate Colina, with banner displaied, to ioyne with the campe vpon the mount Auentine. And when both the campes were assembled, they chose out two amonges the twenty tribunes, to be their generalles, called M. Opius and Sextus Manilius. The senate, careful and pensife for these euentes, eft-sons assembled, but no certaine determination was agreed vpon. At length they concluded, that Valerius and Horatius, should bee sent to the mount Auentine to perswade the people, but they vtterlye refused the message, vnlesse the decemuiri were first deposed. The decemuiri made aunswere, that they would not geue ouer their authoritie, til such time as those lawes were ratified, which were treated vpon, before they wer elected to that office. Of all these contentions the people was aduertised by M. Duillius their tribune. And when both their armies were ioyned at the mount Auentine, aforesayd, al the multitude of the citie, men, women, and children, repaired thither in sorte, that Rome was like a forlorne and abandoned place. The fathers seing the citie thus relinquished, Horatius and Valerius, with diuers of the fathers, exclamed in this wise. "What do ye expect and looke for, ye fathers conscript? Will ye suffer al thinges to runne to extreame ruine and decay? Shall the decemuiri still persiste in their stubburne and froward determinacions? What maner of gouernement is this (O ye decemuiri) that ye thus lay holde vpon and enioye? Will ye pronounce and make lawes within your owne houses, and the limites of the same? Is it not a shame to se in the Forum a greater number of your catchpolles and sergeantes, then of other sober and wise citizens? But what will ye doe, if the enemie vpon the sodaine, dothe approche the walles? What will ye do if the people vnderstanding that we care not for their departure, do in armes assaile vs? Will ye finishe your gouernement, with the

ouerthrowe of the citie: But either wee must expell and abandon the people, or els wee must admitte the tribunes. We shall soner wante our fathers and senatours, then they their plebeian officers. They bereued and toke away from vs the fathers a newe kinde of authoritie, which was neuer sene before, who now feeling the sweetnesse thereof, will neuer geue it ouer. For we can not so well temper our authoritie and gouernement, as they be able to seke helpe and succour." The decemuiri perceiuing that they were hated, so well of the senate, as of the people, submitted themselves. And therupon Valerius and Horatius were sent to the campe, to reuoke the people vpon suche conditions as they thought moste meete. Then the decemuiri were commaunded, to take heede of the peoples furie. So sone as the commissioners were come to the campe, they were received with great ioye and gladnesse of the people, because they were the beginners of that sturre, and supposed that they would make an ende of the commocion, for whiche cause they rendred to them their humble thanks. Then Icilius was appointed to speake for the people, who required to haue the authoritie of the tribunes restored, and their appeale renewed, with restitution of those lawes, which before the erection of the decemuiri, were ratified and confirmed. They demanded also an impunitie and free pardon to those that firste encouraged and incited the souldiers to that enterprise, and the restoring of their liberties. They required to haue their enemies the decemuiri, to be deliuered into their handes. Whom they threatened to put to death by fire. Whereunto the commissioners aunswered in this wise: "Your requestes bee so reasonable, that they ought willingly to be graunted. All which ye desire to obtaine, as a defence and comfort for your libertie, and not to persecute and infeste others. Your furie and anger ought rather to be pardoned, then permitted or graunted. Yee beare a face and seeme to detest and hate seueritie, and ye your selues incurre, and runne headlong into all kinde of crueltie: and before ye be made free your selues, ye desire to bee lordes ouer your aduersaries. Shall our citie neuer bee voide of tortures and oppressions: sometime of the fathers towards the people, sometime of the people towards the fathers: you had more neede of a shilde to defende you, then of a sworde to fight. That

man is of a base state and courage we suppose, that liueth in a citie and beareth him self so vpright, as neither he inferreth iniurie to others, ne yet suffereth wrong him selfe. If ye shew your selues so terrible, then it is to be supposed, that after ye haue recovered your lawes and magistrates, and be placed again in your former authoritie and preeminence: ye will also ordeine and appointe lawes ouer vs, that shall concerne our liues and goodes, and euery other light matter. But for this present I would wishe you, to be contented with your former freedome." After the commissioners had willed them to consulte vppon some determinate aunswere, they retourned to Rome, to make reporte to the senate, of the peoples requestes. The decemui ri perceiuing, that contrarie to their expectation, no likelihode was of any persecution, to be done vpon them, condescended to those demaundes. Appius being a man of nature cruell and malicious, measuring the malice of others, by his owne maligne disposition, spake these wordes: "I am not ignoraunte what fortune is nowe imminente: for I do plainely see that whiles weapons be deliuered to our aduersaries, the combate is deferred against vs: with bloude, enuie muste be rewarded. I will not any longer delaie the time, but depriue my selfe of the decemuirate." When the senate was aduertised by the commissioners, Valerius and Horatius, of the peoples aunswere, they decreed that the decemui ri should be deposed, and that Q. Furius the chief bishop, should create that plebeian tribunes. Wherin also was enacted, that the departure of the people, and mutine of the souldiours should be pardoned.

When these lawes were renewed, the decemui ri went forth, and openly in the assemblie deposed them selues, to the great ioye and comforte of them all. All whiche being reported to the people: both the souldiours, and the rest of the multitude, were somoned to appeare before the commisioners, unto whom they spake these wordes. "We now besech you al, to retourne into your countrie, to your domesticall goddes, your wiues, and children, which we truste shal be right good, happie and profitable vnto you, and to the common wealth. But your modestie and sober behauour, for that no mans grounde is violated and destroyed, considering many thinges, could not suffice the hugenesse of this

multitude, that part of modestie, I saye, cary with you into the citie, to your immortall fame and glorie. Get ye therefore to the mounte Auentine, from whence ye departed, where, as in a place moste happie ye renewed the foundations of your auncient libertie, and there yee shall create your tribunes: the chiefe bishop shall be present, to kepe the comitiales." Then the Romaine people made Aulus Virginius, Lucius Icilius, and P. Numitorius the tribunes, who with their assistantes, first aduanced and confirmed the libertie of the people. Afterward Virginius was appointed to be the accuser, and Appius chosen to be the defendant. At the day appointed, Appius resorted to the Forum, with a great companie of yong gentlemen, of the patricial order, where Virginius began to renewe the cruel and abhominable facte, which Appius committed in the time of his authoritie, and said: " Oration was first deuised and found out, for ambiguous and doubtfull causes: therefore I will neither consume time, in accusing him before you, from whose crueltie, ye haue by force defended your selues, nor yet I wyll suffer hym to coyne to his former wickednesse, any impudente aunswere for his defence. Wherefore Appius, all those thynges whiche wyckedlye and cruellye one vpon an other, thou haste done these twoo yeares past, I doe freely forgeue thee: but if thou canst not purge thyselfe of this one thing, that against the order and forme of lawe (thou thy selfe being judge) wouldest not suffer the freman, to enioye the benefite of his freedome, during the processe made of seruitude, I will presently commaunde the to pryson." Appius Claudius being nowe a prysoner, and perceiuing that the iust complaintes of Virginius did vehemently incite the people to rage and furie, and that the petitions and prayers of his frendes in no wise could mollifie their hartes, he began to conceiue a desperation, and within a whyle after slewe him selfe. Spurius Oppius, also an other of the decemviri, was immediatly sent to prison, who before the daye of his iudgement died. The reste also of that order fled into exile, whose goods were confiscate. M. Claudius also the assessor was condempned: howbeit Virginius was contented he should be banished the citie, and then he fled to Tybur. Thus vpon the filthie affection of one noble man, issued paricide, murder, rebellion, hatred, depriu-

ing of magistrates, and great mischiefes succedinge one in an others necke ; whereupon the noble and victorious citie, was lyke to be a praye to forren nations. A goodlie document to men of like calling, to moderate them selues, and their magisterie with good and honest life, thereby to giue incouragement of vertue, to their vassalles and inferiours: who for the most parte doe imitate and followe the liues and conuersation of their superiours.

THE SIXTH NOUELL.

Candaules king of Lidia, shewing the secretes of his wyues beautie to Gyges, one of his garde: was by counsaile of his wife, slaine by the said Gyges, and deprived of his kingdome.

Of all follies wherewith vayne men be affected, the follie of immoderate loue is moste to bee detested. For that husband, which is beautified with a comely and honest wife, whose rare excellencie doth surpasse other, aswel in lineaments, proporcion, and feature of bodie, as with inwarde qualities of minde: if he can not retaine in the secrecie and silence of his breast, that excellling gifte and benefite, is worthy to be inaugured with a laurel crown of follie. Beautie eche man knoweth, is one of natures ornamentes, by her wisdoms ordeined, not to enter in triumphe, as victours vse vpon gaine of victorie, with brauerie to ostentate their glorie, by sound of shalme and dromme, but thankfully for the same, to proclaime the due praise to the authour of nature. For there is nothing more fraile and fading, then the luring lookes of dame beauties eies, altogether like the flaring marigold floure, which in the moste feruent heate of the sommers day, doth appeare most glorious, and upon retire of the nights shadowe, appeareth as though it had neuer bene the same. And therefore he that conceiueth, reioyce in her vncertayne state, is like to him that in his slombring dreame, doth imagine he hath founde a perelesse iewell, of price inestimable, beset with the glistring diamonde: and perfectly awaked, knoweth he hath none such. If God hath indued a man with a wife that is beautifull and honest, hee is furnished with double pleasure; such, as rather thanks to him, then vain ostentation is to be remembred: otherwise, he doateth, either in jelosie or openeth proude vauntes therof, to suche as he thinketh to be his most assured frendes. What ioye the sequele therof doth bring, let the historie insuing reporte.

Candaules king of Lydia, had a marueilous beautifull gentlewoman to his queene and wife, whome hee loued very dearlye, and for that great loue whiche he bare her, thought her the fay-

rest creature of the worlde. Being in this louing concept, hee extolled the prayse of his wife, to one of his garde called Gyges, the sonne of Dascylus (whom he loued aboue all the reste of his housholde, and vsed his counsayle, in all his weightie causes) within a while after he sayde vnto Gyges these woordes. "It semeth vnto mee Gyges, that thou doest not greatlye beleue the woordes whiche I speake vnto thee, of the beautie of my wyfe, but because eyes bee better witnesses of thinges then eares, thou shalt see her naked." With these woordes Gyges being amazed cried out, saying: "What woordes be these (sir king) me thynke you are not well aduised, to require mee to viewe and beholde the lady my maistres in that sorte? For a woman seene naked, doth with her clothes, put of also her chastitie. In olde tyme honest thinges were deuised for mannes instruction, emonges which was vsed this one thyng. That euery man ought to beholde, the thinges that were his owne. But sir, I do beleue assuredly that she is the fairest woman in the world, wherfore desire me not to thynges that bee vnlawefull." In this sorte Gyges replied, and yet feared lest some daunger might happen vnto hym. Whome Candaules encouraged, saying: "Bee of good chere, and be not afrayde, that either I or my wyfe, goe about to deceiue thee, or that thou shalt incurre anye daunger. For I wyll take vpon me so to vse the matter, as she by no meanes shall knowe that thou haste seene her. I wyll place thee behynde the portall of our chamber. When I goe to bedde, my wyfe commonly doth followe. And she being in the chamber, a chayre is sette readye, vppon whiche shee layeth her clothes, as shee putteth them of. Whiche done shee sheweth her selfe a good tyme naked: and when she ryseth from her chayre to goe to bedde, her backe beyng towarde thee, thou mayest easilye conueyghe thy selfe out again, but in any wyse take heede, she doe not see thee, as thou goest out. Whereunto I praye thee, to haue a speciall regarde." Gyges seyng that by no meanes, hee coulde auoyde the vayne requeste of the king, was readie at the tyme appoynted. Candaules about the howre of bedde tyme, went into the chamber, and conueighed Gyges into the same, and after the kyng the queene followeth, whome Gyges behelde at her going in, and at the putting of her clothes

When her back was towards him, (as he was going out) she perceived him. The queene vnderstanding by her husbande, the circumstance of the facte, neyther for shame did crie out, ne yet made countenance as though shee had seen Gyges; but in her minde purposed, to reuenge her husbandes follie. For emonges the Lydians (as for the most part, with all other nations) it is coumpted a great shame, to see a naked man. The gentlewoman counterfaieted her grief, and kepte silence. In the morning when she was redie, by such of her seruants, whome she beste trusted, shee sent for Gyges, who thought that shee had knowen nothing of that whiche chaunced. Being come before her presence; she sayde vnto hym, "Gyges I offer vnto thee nowe twoo conditions, take whether thou wylte. For eyther thou must kill Candaules, and take me to thy wyfe, and the kyngdome also, or els thou must dye thy selfe, that thou maiest vnderstande, how in all thynges not meete to be knowen, it is not necessarye to obeye Candaules. For eyther hee muste needes dye, whiche gaue thee that counsayle, or thy selfe, which diddest see me naked, and thereby committed a thing vnlawfull." Whiche words for a while, did wonderfully amase Gyges, then he besought the queene that she woulde pardon him from that vnlawfull choise. When he saw that he coulde not perswade her; he required her to shewe him by what meanes he might attempt that enterprise. "Marie (quoth she) euen in that place where thou sawest me naked, when he is a sleepe thou shalt commit that facte." After they had deuised the treason, night approched. And Gyges with stoute courage, bent himselfe thereunto, for he saw no remedye, but that he must kill, or els be killed. Wherefore with a dagger which the queene deliuered him, he killed Candaules, when he was a sleepe; and so gotte from him both his wife and kingdome. A goodly example to declare, that the secrets of marriage, ought not to be disclosed: but with reuerence to be couered, lest God do plague such offences with death or other shame, to manifest to the world, howe dearely hee esteemeth that honourable state.

THE SEUENTH NOUELL.

King Cræsus of Lydia reasoneth with the wyseman Solon, of the happie life of man. Who little esteeming his good aduise, vnderstoode before his death, that no man (but by vertue) can in this life attaine felicitie.

A NOBLE gentleman of Athens called Solon, by th' appointment of the Athenians, made lawes for that citie, and because none of the same lawes shoulde be abrogated, for the space of tenne yeares, hee bounde the citizens by othe. And that the same mighte the better be obserued; he himselfe traueyled into farre countries, as into Egypt to visite king Hamasis, and so to Sardis to kinge Cræsus, where he was liberallie intertayned. This Cræsus was king of Lydia, sonne of Haliattes, that brought to subiection great countries in Asia and Græcia, and gathered together an innumerable masse of moneye and riches. Who three or foure dayes after the arriuall of Solon (which was led aboute by his seruantes, to viewe his notable wealth and substaunce) said vnto Solon these wordes. "My frende of Athens, because thy famous wysedome is well knowne to the worlde, and I haue heard tell of the excellencie therof, and of the greatnes of thy trauaile, where thou hast attained to the singuler knowledge of philosophie; I desire to learne of thee (now hauing seene my great treasures) who is the happiest man and most blessed, that thou knowest in this world." Thinking he would haue iudged him to be the same. But Solon made aunswere, that, "Tellus was the happiest; who was an Athenien, and had vertuous and honest sonnes, and they likewise had honest children, all which were that time liuing. And when by the space of many yeares he had ledde a vertuous and godly life, he died an honourable death in the warres which the Athenians had with theyr neighbours, at the battaile of Eleusina, wher he was indued with sumptuous funerals, to his great honour and prayse." Then Cræsus asked him: "Who was happie next Tellus;" thinking hee would haue attributed to him the second place. "Forsoth (quoth he) that is Cleobis and Bito, which were

Argiues, and liued a contented life. And in all pastimes to proue force and maisterie, they bare away the prise and victorie. And of them these thinges be remembred; when the feastfull day of Iuppiter was celebrated amonges the Argiues; their mother should be caried to the temple in a chariot, drawen with a yoke of oxen, which were not come out of the countrie at the appointed time. The yonge men seinge that the hower was come, entred into the yoke themselues, and drewe the chariotte the space of XLV. stades to the temple. After this acte seene of all the people there, th'ende of their life was such, as certainly God gaue to vnderstand them, that better it is to die, then liue. For the Argiues that were assembled about Bito and Cleobis, with shoutes and acclamations, praised the good willes of those children, and the women themselues said, 'That happie was the mother, which brought forth such lineage.' Their mother then ioyfull for that fact, and of the reputation of her sonnes, kneeled downe before the image of Iuno, humbly beseeching her to giue her sonnes the thinge that were best for a man to attaine vnto. Her prayer ended, she made her sacrifice, which done, the two yonge men presently died in the temple. In token of whose noble liues, the Argiues erected two images at Delphos." And to them Solon appointed the second place of blisfulnes. Cræsus moued with these words, said vnto Solon. "Thou straunger of Athens, is our felicitie in such litle reputation with thee that thou doest preferre before vs these priuate men?" Solon aunswered: "Sir shal I assure you of humaine things, knowing that God enuieth the state of men, and troubleth them so often: in length of time many thinges be seen, which men would not see, and many thinges be suffred, that men would not suffer. Let vs assigne to mans life the terme of LXX.yeres: in which yeares are the number of xxv.M.cc. dayes, in which computation the leape moneth, which is February, is not comprehended. But if you wil that other yerres be longer, by reason of that moneth, to th'end the howers may be adioyned to them, that want then the leape monethes, maketh the time to amount (aboue LXX. yeares) to xxv. monethes, and the dayes of those monethes amount to M.v.c. But admit that LXX. yeares with their leape monethes, be the total summe of man's life, then is producted the summe of xxv.

M. cc. dayes. Truly one day is not like an other in effect, euen so Cræsus I conclude, that man is ful of miserie. But althoughe your grace, seeming both in wealth, and also in multitude of men, to be a riche and mightie king, yet I cannot aunswere fullye your demaunde, before I see howe well you doe ende your life: for the rich man is not more happie, because he hath long life, except to his riches fortune graunt that he lead a good and honest life. Many men be very rich, and yet for all that be not blessed and happie: and manye that haue but meane wealth, be fortunate. He that is rich and wealthie, and therewithal not happie, excelleth him that is fortunate and happy onely in two thinges, but th'other surmounteth the riche man in many thinges. The two thinges wherein the rich excelleth th'other be these. Th'one in satisfying his lust and affection, th'other in power and abilitie, to susteine harde fortune and aduersitie; and as the meane man is inferiour to the rich in these two points, which by fortune be denied him, yet he doth excell him, because he neuer hath experience of them; he liueth in good and prosperous health, he neuer feeleth aduersitie, he doth nothing that is wicked, he is a father of good children, he is indued with formosity and beantie, who if (besides all those thinges) he die well, it is he to aunswere your demaunde: that worthely may be called happie; for before he die he cannot be so called: and yet fortunate he may be termed. For to obtaine all (whiles you be a liuing man) it is impossible: for as one countrie is not able to serue it selfe with all commodities, but hauing one it lacketh an other: yet the same countrie that hath most commodities is the beste: and as a man's bodie hauing one perfection is not perfect, because in hauing one he lacketh another: euen so he hath most vertue, and is indued with greatest number of the aforesaid commodities, and so quietly departeth his life, he in mine opinion is worthy to be intituled with the name of a king. A man must expect th'ende of euery thinge whereunto it tendeth: for God plucketh vppe by the rootes many men, to whom hee hath giuen abundaunce of wealth and treasure." Cræsus misliking the woordes of Solon suffred him to depart saying: "He was a foole that measured present pleasures with no better regard." After whose departure, the gods began to bende their indignation and

displeasure vpon him, because he thoughte himselfe the happiest man aliue. Long time after, Cræsus receyuing courage and comfort from Apollo at Delphos, attempted warres against Cyrus kinge of Persia, who in those warres was ouerthrowen, and taken prisoner after he had raigne d xiiii. yeares, and was broughte by the Persians to Cyrus. Then Cyrus caused a stacke of woode to be piled vp, and Cræsus fettred with giues, was set vpon the same: who then remembring the saying of Solon, that no liuing man was blessed, or in all pointes happie, cried out in lamentable wyse, "O Solon! Solon! Solon!" which Cyrus hearing, caused his interpreters to demaund of him, what the same Solon was. Cræsus with much difficultie toulde what he was, and declared all the talke betwene him and Solon. Wherof when Cyrus heard the report, he acknowledged himselfe to be also a man, and sore repented that he went about to burne him, which was equal vnto him in honour and riches, confessing nothing to be stable and certaine in the life of man. Wherupon he commaunded the fire to be taken away, which then began to flame. And so with much a doe, he was deliuered. Then Cyrus asked him, who gaue him counsaile to inuade his countrie, to make his frende his foe. "Euen my selfe (saide Cræsus) through vnhappy fate, by the perswasion of the Greekish God which gaue me counsaile, to make warres vpon thee: for there is no man so madde, that had rather desire warre then peace.

For in peace sonnes burie their fathers, but in warres, fathers burie their children. But that these thinges be come to passe, I maye thancke the deuils good grace." Afterward Cyrus intertain-
ed him very honourable, and vsed his
counsell, which he found
very holosome
and good.

THE EIGHTH NOUELL.

Of a father that made suite, to haue his owne sonne put to death.

THERE was a man borne in Mardus (which is a countrie adioyning vnto Persia) called Rhacon, that had seuen children. The yongest of them (named Cartomes,) afflicted diuers honest men with greate harmes and mischiefes. For which cause the father began to reforme him with words, to proue if he would amend. But he litle waying the good discipline of his father, it chaunced vpon a time that the iustices of the countrie, repaired to the sessions in that towne, where the father of the childe did dwell, who taking his sonne, and binding his handes behinde him, brought him before the iudges. To whom hee remembred by waye of accusation, all the mischiefes, which his sonne from time to time had committed, and desired the iudges, that he might be condempned to die. The iudges amazed with that request, would not themselves giue sentence against him, but brought both the father and the sonne, before Artaxerxes the king of Persia: in whose presence the father still persisted in the accusation of his sonne. “Why (quoth the king) canst thou finde in thy harte, that thine owne sonne should be put to death before thy face?” “Yea truly (quoth the father,) for at home in my garden, when the yong lactuse begin to growe, I cutte of the bitter and sower stalkes from them: for pitie it were the mother lactuse should sustaine sorow, for those bastard and degenerate shrubbes: which beinge taken awaye, she prospereth and encreaseth to great sweetenesse and bignes. Euen so (O kinge) if he be hanged that hurteth my whole familie, and offended the honest conuersation of his brethren, both my selfe shalbe increased, and the reste of my stocke and linage shall in like sort prosper and continue.” The king hearing those words, did greatly praise the wisdom of Rhacon, and chose him to be one of his iudges, pronouncing these wordes before the multitude. “Hee that dare thus seuerely and iustly pronounce sentence vpon his owne child, doubtles he wil shew himselfe to be an incorrupt and sincere iudge vpon the offences of other.” Then the kinge deliuered the yongman, from that presente faulte, threatening him with most cruell death, if after that time, he were apprehended with like offence.

THE NINTH NOUELL.

Water offered of good will to Artaxerxes King of Persia, and the liberall rewarde of the Kinge to the giuer.

THERE was a certaine Persian called Sinetas, that farre from his owne house mette king Artaxerxes, and had not wherwith to present him. For it was an order amonges the Persians, instituted by law, that euery man which met the king, should giue him a present. Wherefore the poore man because he would not neglecte his dutie, ranne to a riuer called Cyrus, and taking both his hands full of water, spake to the king in this wise. "I beseech God that your maiestie may euermore raigne amonges vs. As occasion of the place, and mine ability at this instant serueth, I am come to honour your maiesty, to the intent you may not passe without some present, for which cause I giue vnto you this water. But if your grace had ones encamped your selfe, I would go home to my house, for the best and dearest things I haue to honour your maiestie withall. And peraduenture the same shall not be much inferiour to the giftes, which other now do giue you." Artaxerxes delighted with this fact, sayde vnto him. "Good fellowe I thancke thee for this presente, I assure thee, the same is so acceptable vnto me, as the most precious gift of the worlde. First, because water is the best of all thinges, then because the riuer, out of the which thou diddest take it, doth beare the name Cyrus. Wherefore I commaunde thee to come before me when I am at my campe." In speakinge those words, he required his Eunuches to take the present, and to put it into a cuppe of gold. The king when he was lodged in his pavilion, sent to the man a Persian robe, a cuppe of golde, and a thousande darices, (which was a coigne amonges the Persians, wherupon was the image of Darius) willinge the messenger to saye vnto him, these wordes. "It hath pleased the king, that thou shouldest delighte thy selfe, and make mery with this gold, because thou diddest exhilarate his minde, in not suffering him to passe, without the honour of a present: but as necessitie did serue thee, diddest humblie salute him with water. His plea-

sure is also, that thou shalt drinke of that water in this cuppe of gold, of which thou madest him partaker."

Artaxerxes hereby expressed the true image of a princely minde, that would not disdaine cherefully to behold the homelie gifte (in our estimation rude, and nothing worth) at the handes of his poore subiect: and liberally to reward that duetifull zeale, with thinges of greate price and valour. To the same Artaxerxes, riding in progresse through Persia, was presented by one called Mises, a very great pomegranate in a siue. The king marueiling at the bignes therof, demaunded of him out of what garden he had gathered the same: he aunswered, out of his owne. Wherat the king greatlye reioysinge, recompenced him with princelye rewards, saying:

"By the Sunne (for that was the common oth of the Persian kinges) this man is able with such trauaile and diligence in my iudgement to make of a litle citie, one that shall be large and great." Which wordes seeme to declare, that all thinges by care, sufficiente paine and continual labour, may against nature, be made more excellent and better.

THE TENTH NOUELL.

The loue of Chariton and Menalippus.

NOWE will I rehearse a fact of the tyrant Phalaris farre discrepante from his conditions, because it sauoureth of great kindnes and humanity, and seemeth not to be done by him. Chariton was an Agrigentine borne, which is a towne in Sicilia, and a great louer of beauty, who with ardent affection loued one Menalippus, which was also borne in that citie, of honest conditions and of excellent forme and comelines. This tyraunt Phalaris hindred Menalippus in a certaine sute: for he contending in iudgement with one of Phalaris frendes, the tyraunt commaunded him to giue ouer his suite: whervnto, because he was not obedient, he threatned to put him to death, except he would yelde. Notwithstanding, Menalippus ouer came him in law, and the noble men which were the frends of Phalaris, would giue no sentence, but brought the matter to a nonesuite; which the yong man takinge in ill part, said he had receiued wrong, and confessed to his frend Chariton the wrong he had sustained, requiring his ayde to be reuenged upon the tyrant: he made other yonge men priuie to his conspiracie, such as he knewe would be ready and apte for that enterprise. Chariton perceyuinge the rage and furie of his frende, knowinge that no man would take his parte for feare of the tyraunt, began to dissuade him, sayinge, that he himselfe went aboute the like attempte, a litle before, to deliuer his country into libertie from present seruitude, but he was not able to sort the same to any effect, without great daunger: wherefore he praied hym to commit the consideration thereof vnto him, and to suffer him to espie a time apt and conuenient. Menalippus was content: Chariton reuoluing with himselfe that deuise, would not make his deare frend a partaker of the fact least it shoulde be perceiued, but he alone took vppon him to do the deede, that onely himselfe might sustaine the smart; wherefore taking a sword in his hande, as he was seeking way to giue the assault vpon the tyraunt, his enterprise was disclosed, and Chariton apprehended by the garde, which for the tyrauntes defence, diligently attended about him.

From thence he was sent to the jaole, and examined vpon interrogatories to bewraye the rest of the conspiratours; for which hee suffered the racke, and the violence of other tormentes. Afterwards, Menalippus remembring the constancie of his frende, and the crueltie by him stoutly suffered, went to Phalaris and confessed vnto him that not onely he was priuy to that treason, but also was the aucthour thereof. Phalaris demaunding for what cause he did it, tolde him the consideration before rehearsed, which was the reuoking of sentence, and other iniuries done vnto him. The tyraunt maruaylinge at the constant frendshippe of those twaine, acquitted them both, but vpon condition that both shoulde depart oute of the citie and countrie of Sicilia: neuerthelesse, he gaue them leaue to receiue the fruites and commodities of their reuenues. In record and remembrance of whose amitie, Apollo sang these verses.

*The rayzers vp of heavenly loue,
Amonges the humaine kinde:
Were good Chariton and Menalippe,
Whose like vnneths we finde.*

This Phalaris was a most cruell tyraunte of the citie of Agrigentine in Scicilia, who besides other instrumentes of new deuised tormentes, had a bull made of brasse, by the art and inuention of one Perillus: into which bull, all such as were condemned to death were put, and by reason of extreame heate of fire made vnder the same, those that were executed, yelled foorth terrible soundes and noyses, like to the lowing of a bull. For which ingine and deuise, Perillus thinking to obtaine great reward, was for his labour, by commaundement of the tyraunt, throwen into the bull, being the first that shewed the prooffe of his deuise. Within a while after, also Phalaris himselfe, for his great crueltie, was by a general assault, made vpon him by the people, haled into the same bull and burned: and althoughe this tyraunte farre excelled in beastlye crueltie, yet there appeared some sparke of humanitie in him, by his mercye extended vpon Chariton and Menalippus, the two true louers before remembred. The same Phalaris wrote many proper and short epistles, full of vertuous instructions, and holosome admonitions.

THE ELEUENTH NOUELL.

Kinge Cyrus perswaded by Araspas, to dispose himselfe to loue a ladie called Panthea, entreth into a pretie disputation and talke of loue and beautie. Afterwards Araspas himselfe falleth in loue with the saide ladie, but she indued with great chastitie, auoydeth his earnest sute. And when shee heard tell that her husbände was slaine in the seruice of Cyrus, she killed herselfe.

BEFORE the beginning of this historie, I thought good by way of proeme, to introduce the wordes of an excellent writer called Lodouicus Cælius Rhodoginus, who saith that S. Hierome the most holy and eloquent father, affirmeth that vertues are not to be pondered by the sexe or kinde, by whom they be done, but by the chaste and honest minde; wherewith if euer any woman was affected, truly it was the fayre ladie Panthea: for which I would no man should blame me of vngodlines, or indiscretion, in that I do remember a woman mentioned in profane authours, because at this present I am not minded to make vewe of Christe his secretes which are his deuine scriptures, wherein be contayned the ghostly liues of sacred dames, wherein also abundantly doth shine and glitter, the celestiall mercie of our heauenly Father. But let the reader remember that we be now conuersant in the auncient monuments of other prophane authours, and out of them do select most pleasant places to recreat ech weary minde. This Panthea therfore as Xenophon writeth, and partly as S. Hierome reporteth, was the wyfe of Abradatas a noble personage, and in warlike factes very skilfull, dearely beloued of Cyrus king of Persia, with whom this lady Panthea was captiue, at the ouerthrow of the Assyrians. King Cyrus then after his enemyes were vanquished, hearinge tell of this gentlewoman, called vnto him one of his dearest frends named Araspas which was a Median borne, the very minion, playe fellow, and companion of Cyrus from his youth: to whom for the great loue that he bare him, he gaue the Median robe of from his owne backe at his departure from Astiages into

Persia. To this gentleman, king Cyrus committed the custodie of the ladie, and of her tente. Abradatas her husbände (when she was taken prisoner) was before sente in ambassage to the king of Bactria by the Assirian king, to intreate of peace, because he was his familiar frend. When Araspas had receiued the keeping of the ladie: he asked Cyrus whether he had seen her, "No truly" said Cyrus. "Then haue I (saide Araspas): and haue chosen her specially for your owne person. And when we came into her paullion, none of us could tell which was she, for she set vppon the grounde, with all her women about her, and her apparell was like vnto her maides. But we desirous to know which was the maistres, beheld them all, and by and by shee seemed to excell them all, although she satte with her face couered, loking downe vpon the grounde: and when we bad her to rise vp, all the rest rose vp also. She did farre surmounte her maides, as well in making and lineamentes of body, as in good behauiour and comelinesse, although she was clad in simple apparell: the teares manifestly ranne downe her eyes vppon her garments, distilling downe euen to her feete; to whom he that was most auncient amonges vs said: 'Be of good chere lady: we heare tell that you haue a very valiaunte man to your husbände, such one whose practize and experience is well knowen and tryed amongs greatest princes, notwithstanding we haue chosen for you a gentleman, that is not inferiour to him, either in beautie, force, wisdom or valiaunce: and we do verely beleue, that if there be any man in this world, worthie of admiration, it is Cyrus our prince and lorde, whose paragon wee haue chosen you to bee.' When the lady hearde them saye so, she tare the attirement from her head and body, she cried out, and all her maides skriched with her; at which times the greatest part of her face appeared, and so did her necke and hands: And assure your selfe (Cyrus) to vs that viewed her well, it seemed impossible, that such a creature coulde be borne of mortall parentes in Asia. Therefore sir, looke vppon her in any wise." To whom Cyrus said, "The more praise ye giue her, the lesse minde I haue to see her, if shee be such one as you haue saide." "And whye so?" (quoth Araspas). "Because (sayde Cyrus) if I should go to see her, hearing you make this reporte of her beautie (leasure not seruinge me

thereunto) I am afraide, lest she would sone allure me to go many times to behold her: whereby I might perchaunce, grow negligent in my matters of greatest importance." The yong gentleman smiling, said, "Thincke you Cyrus, that the beauty of a woman, can force a man vnwilling, to attempt a thinge that should not be meete for him: if nature haue that force in her, she would compell all men alike. Do you not see, that fire burneth all men after one sort, because it is his nature? Beautifull thinges be not had in equall estimation, some be of great price, some not so, some do regarde this, some that: for loue is a voluntarie thing, and euery man loueth what he list: the brother is not in loue with the sister, but of another she is loued: the father is not in loue with the doughter, and yet she is beloued of another: for feare and law are able enough to restraine loue. But if there were a law made to commaund men, that they which did not eate, should not be hungrie, and they that did not drinke, should not be a thirst, and that no man should be cold in winter, and hotte in sommer, that lawe could not compell men to obeye: for men by nature be subiect to those infirmities: but to loue, is a thinge free and voluntarie: euery man loueth thinges that be his owne, as his apparell and other his necessaries." Wherunto Cyrus replied: "If loue be voluntary: how can it be that a man may abandon the same, when he liste? But I haue seene men weepe for sorowe of loue: I haue knowen them that haue beene slaues to loue, who before they haue loued, haue thoughte thraldome, the greatest euill: geuing awaye manye thinges, which had beene better for them to haue kept: and haue prayed to God to be exonerated of loue, aboue all other diseases, and yet could not be deliuered, being bound with stronger imprisonment then if they had beene tied with chaines, yelding themselues to their louers, seruing them with all obedience: and when they be hampered with such mischiefes, they seeke not to auoide them." "They do so in deede as you saye (aunswered the yong man :) and therefore such louers be miserable, wishing still to die and yet still continue in their woe and calamitie: and where there be a thousande wayes to bereue them of life, yet they do not die. Some of them fall to stealing and robbing of other men: but when they haue robbed

and stolen anye thing thou with the first thinkinge theft vnnecessary, doest condemne them as theeues, whom thou dost not pardon, but punish. In like maner the beautifull doe not counsell men to loue them, or couet that is not lawful: but miserable men shewing themselues inferiour to all lustes and desires, doe in the ende accuse loue to be the authour of their miserie. Good and honest men, althoughe they desire golde, beautifull horses and faire women, yet they can well ynoughe abstaine from them all, as not subiect to them more then is meete: for I my selfe haue beholden this woman, which seemeth to be a surpassing faire wight: and yet I am now with you, I ryde and do other thinges accordinge to my dutie." "Peraduenture (said Cyrus) you went soner awaye, then loue coulde haue time to fasten vpon you: for fire touchinge a man, doth not strait burne him: and woode is not by and by in flame, yet would I not willingly touch fire, nor behold beautiful persons: and I would giue you counsaile Araspas, to beware how you suffer your eyes to rolle, and wander vpon faire women: for the fire burneth them, that touch it: and beautifull folke, do kindle them, that behold them a farre of, in such wise as they burne for loue." "I warrant you Cyrus (sayd Araspas:) for if I do continually loke vpon them, I wil not so be drowned in loue, as the same shall prouoke me to do any thing that doth not become mee." "You saye well, sayd Cyrus, therfore keepe this woman as I bid you, and loke wel vnto her: for peraduenture she is taken in good time." And so they departed: The yong gentleman marking the singuler beautie of the lady, and perceyuing her great honesty, he hauing custodie of her, thoughte he woulde do her pleasure, and by gesture sawe that she was not ingrate and vnthanckfull, but very diligent: she caused her seruantes to prepare all thinges in readines at his comming in: and if he were by chaunce sicke, shee toke order that he shoulde lacke nothinge: vpon which occasions, he fell in loue with her: and no maruaile, for she was (as before is saide) a woman very fayre and amiable. Afterwards king Cyrus desirous to send a spie into the countrie of Lydia, to learne what the Assyrians did: Araspas which had the keepinge of the fayre lady, seemed most mete for that purpose. But Araspas chaunced to fall in loue with the ladie, in suche wise

as he was forced to breake his minde vnto her, for the satisfying of his pleasure: which request, like a faithfull and louing woman to her absent husband, she denied. Howbeit she would not accuse Araspas to Cyrus, being a fraide to set variaunce betweene frendes. Araspas thinkinge it a great shame and reproche vnto him, not to obtaine his desire: threatened the lady, that if she would not yeld to his request, he would haue it perforce. Then the woman fearing violence, kepte the thing no longer secrete, but sente one of her eunuches to Cyrus, to discover the whole matter: which when he heard, he laughed hartely at Araspas, that sayde and made his vaunte that he was superiour to loue, sending Artabasus with the eunuch, to commaund him not to force the woman: but if he could by fayre meanes allure her, he would not be against him. When Artabasus came to Araspas, he rebuked him, both for his infidelity in the thinge committed vnto his charge, and also for his wickednesse, iniurie, and incontinencie; wherewithall Araspas wepte for sorowe, beinge oppressed wyth shame, and confounded with feare, for the displeasure of Cyrus: whiche thing Cyrus vnderstanding, called him, and priuely sayd thus vnto him. "I see Araspas that you be afraied of me, and much ashamed: but be contente, for I knowe that the goddes haue bene vanquished with loue, and haue learned what thinges the wisest men haue suffered for loue: and I haue accused my selfe, bicause I could not containe, being in companie with faire personages: and of this mishappe happened to you, I my selfe am the occasion, for I compelled you to that inuincible matter." Araspas making aunswere sayd: "You be in this thing, O Cyrus, euen like vnto your selfe, as you be in all other: you be mercifull, and full of clemencie: but the brute that shall rise hereof is, that whiche maketh me moste pensife, for so sone as the rumour of my calamitie is dispersed, mine enemies will reioyce, and my frendes will counsaill me to flee, lest youre maiestie do hainously take reuenge of mine offence." "Well Araspas, said Cyrus, by that opinion and brute, you shall do me greatest seruice, and profite very muche my confederates." "How can that be (said Araspas)? where in for that respect shall I be able to doe you any seruice?" "If presently (quoth Cyrus) you do make as though

you fledde from me, and by going to myne enemies, you maye wyne of them great credite." "Verely (sayd Araspas) I suppose that I and my frendes, might raise a rumour indeede, that I am fled from you for feare." "So may you (sayd Cyrus) returne vnto vs againe, when you knowe our enemies secretes; for I thinke they will make you priue to all their counsell and deuises: and you being in credit, shall be made priue to all their appointementes whiche wee desire to knowe." "I will euen nowe depart (sayd Araspas) for it is very likely, that this my departure, may seme to be an argument of truth, bicause I seme to flie for feare of punishment." "Can you in that maner forsake faire Panthea" (quoth Cyrus.) "Truely (said he) it euidently nowe appeareth, that I am endewed with two mindes: with the one I haue plaid the philosopher, with loue that vntrue sophistre: for ther is no one mind which is good and badde, and at one time is rapt with the loue of good and euil thinges, ne yet at one instant can wil and will not together. Wherefore it is manifest, that ther be two mindes; when the good minde ruleth, it doth things that be honest, when the euill is superiour, it worketh ill: and now the good minde, by making you his frende and confederate, doth puissantly gouerne." "Well (sayde Cyrus) if you goe, you must beware, that your credite may increase amonges them: tell them hardly the somme of our indeuours, but in suche wise as our doinges may bee lettes to their practises. And this shall hinder their deuises muche, if you saie that we determine to inuade their countrie: for hearing this, they will not assemble their whole power, euery man fearing his priuate part: and see that you tary with them a good space, and looke which partes they meane sonest to approche, the same be moste conuenient for vs to knowe: and bid them to be ready, whensoever they thinke time: for when you shall depart from them, although they know you to be priue to their order, yet they must needes kepe the same, and be afrayd to alter it, lest they confounde them selues through their sodaine chaunge." Thus Araspas departing, telling his moste trustie seruantes what hee would haue done in this matter, went his waye: but Panthea hearing that Araspas was gone, sent to Cyrus this message containing these wordes.

“ Bee not sorie Cyrus, for the departure of Araspas to your enemies, for if you wyll suffer mee to sende for my husbnde, I doe promyse you, that he shalbe a farre more assured frende then Araspas was. And I knowe he wyll come with so great power (for your ayde) as hee is able to make, for the father of the Assirian kyng, whiche nowe raigneth, was his frende. But this kyng vppon a tyme, went about to make a diuorcement, betweene my husbnde and mee: therefore, knowyng that this kyng, doth disdayne my husbandes good fortune, by hauing mee to wife, I am sure hee woulde sone be perswaded to serue so noble a prince as you be.” Cyrus hearing her saye so, commaunded her to sende for her husbnde, which she did. Abradatas knowing his wiues tokens, and vnderstanding the effecte of her message, spedely came to Cyrus with two thousand horsemen. They that were the Persian spies, sent to Cyrus, declaring what he was. Cyrus commaunded that forthwith he should be brought vnto his wife. When the wife and husbnde sawe eche other, they imbraced like twoo that mette after suche troublesome aduentures. Then Panthea tolde her husbnde the goodnes, temperance, and clemencie of Cyrus towarde her. Who hearing of her interteignement, sayde: “ What shall I doe Panthea, to render thanks to Cyrus, for you and mee?” “ What other thing (saide Panthea) but to indeuour your selfe, to bee suche a trustie frende to him, as he hath bene to you.” Then Abradatas went to Cyrus, and when he sawe hym, he tooke him by the right hande and sayde: “ For the pleasures that you haue done mee, O Cyrus, I haue no more to saye, but that I assure my selfe vnto you, as your frende, your seruauant and confederate: and what soeuer I see you desyre, I shall imploye my selfe, to the vttermoste of my power, to ayde and helpe you in the same.” To whome Cyrus sayde, “ I accepte you, and for this tyme dismissee you, to goe and suppe with your wife: then you shall agayne be placed in my tente about me amonges your frendes and myne.” And when Abradatas sawe the preparation of Cyrus, that hee made against his enemies, he addressed to make prouision of armure, and thinges meete for the felde for hym selfe. His wyfe Panthea, had made of her treasure, a curate and helmet of golde, and likewyse his vambraces, and had furnished the horses of the chariot with brasen barbes.

When Cyrus had spoken diuerse oracions, for the incoraging of his armie, and had taken order, howe all thinges might prosperously succede, diuided his captaines into seuerall battailes, appointing euery of them their charge: Abradatas shewed him selfe verie braue and marciall in his chariot: who being about to put on a linnen breast plate, according to his countrie maner, his wife Panthea brought him an armure of golde, and a purple gowne down to his feete, after robe fashion, and a crimsen skarfe. These thinges had she priuely wrought for her husbände, knowing the measure of his harnesse, whiche when her husband sawe, he marueiled, and said to Panthea. "Wife, haue you not defaced your jewells, to make this armure?" "Truelye (said Panthea) I haue a more precious jewell then this; for if you proue a valiant gentleman to other, as you haue done a louing and trustie husband to me, you are my dearest jewell." In saying thus, she armed him, and would that no man should haue sene her: for the teares trickled downe her chekes. Abradatas being in the fronte of the armie, armed after this maner, appered a gallant and braue captayne, whose nature and complexion agreed to his comelinesse. And taking the raines of the chariot in his hands, he prepared him selfe to mounte vp. Then Panthea, all other being commaunded to stande backe, saide: "Truely Abradatas, if there be women, that esteeme their husbandes better then their owne liues, I thinke you knowe that I am one of them. Therefore what neede I to expresse euery particular thing: my factes, as I thinke, do perswade you more then woordes. And thus indeuouring my selfe towards you, our mutuall loue is such, as I had rather be buried quicke with you, being a noble man, then to liue in shame. I regarde you with the beste, and my selfe not as the worste. Great thanks we owe to Cyrus, for his princely interteignement of me, being a captiue and chosen for him selfe, not like a prysoner with shame, but free, without spot or blemishe to mine honor: and vsed me, as though I had bene his brothers wyfe. And after Araspas departed from him, whiche had the custodie of me, I promised him, that if hee would giue mee leue to sende for you, that you should become more loiall and assured to him, then euer Araspas was." Abradatas delited with her chaste communication, and tenderly laying his

hand vpon her head: looking vp to heauen, made this praier. "O most mightie Iuppiter, graunte that I may shewe my selfe an housbande meete for Panthea, and a frende worthy of Cyrus, who hath so curteously dealt with vs." Thus speaking at the entrie of the chariot seate, he went vp, and being set downe, the gouernour of the chariot made fast the seate. Panthea hauing nowe nothing to embrace, kissed the chariot seate, and so he went forth. But Panthea followed him priuelie, till he tourned and spied her, to whome he sayde: "Be of good conforte Panthea, adieu and farewell." Then her eunuches and women, conueighed her to her own chariot, couering the same with curteines.

Cyrus after the battaile and victorie, had against Cræsus, called diuerse of his men vnto him, and demaunded if they sawe Abradatas. "For I marueile (sayde hee) that he commeth not vnto me: for before the battell many times he appered in my presence." Whereunto one of his men answered: "The cause is (sir) that he is not aliue, for hee was slayne in the battaile, as he inuaded the Ægyptians. The rest of his companie, except his owne souldiours, fled from him, when they sawe him incountre with the Ægyptian battaile. And then his wife Panthea tooke him vp, and laid him in her owne wagon; conueighing him to a certayne place, by the ryuer Pactolus. And (they say) that her eunuches doe digge a graue to burie him. His wife sitteth vpon the ground, apparelled with those furnitures that he did weare, leaning her head vpon her knees." With whiche wordes, Cyrus was driuen into greate sorowe, clapping him selfe vpon the thighe, and by and by mounted on his horse, and taking with him m. horsemen, he went to mourne for his frende Abradatas. Moreouer he commaunded Gadatas and Gobryas, to carrie the fairest apparell they coulde get, to his good and honest frende that was dead, and to assemble his oxen and horse, and all his beastes and cattell, whersoever they were, that they might be sacrificed to Abradatas. But when he sawe Panthea sitting vpon the ground and the dead corps lying by her, he wept for sorowe, and said: "Alake good woman, thou trustie and faithfull wife, doest thou thus depart and leaue vs alone." And with those words he tooke her by the right hand, and therewithall was presented the dead hand of Abradatas, which the Ægyptians

he had cut of: whiche when Cyrus sawe, hee then
e then he did before: and Panthea cried out. Who
Cyrus, kissed the dead hand, bestowing the same
ce, so well as she coulde, and sayde: "Thus it is
us, but why do you beholde the dead body? This
e (quoth she) hee hath suffred for my sake, being none
adventures whiche he hath hazarded for me. And
Cyrus, he would haue done no lesse for you. For I
(like a foole as I was) to attempte this aduventure, to
ight haue shewed him selfe a frende of worthy re-
whiche request he accepted, to pleasure you and me :
ly bestowed his life and is dead, and I vnhappy cai-
him first counsayle, do sitte here aliuē." Cyrus for
ce holding his peace, powred forth aboundance of
en said: "This gentleman (lady Panthea) hath a
ende, for he died in victorie; but take these furni-
rne him there withall:" for Gobryas and Gadatas
a riche and costly apparel. Then hee sayde: "Bee
honoured with greater thinges then these. A monu-
ording to his worthinesse, shalbe erected vpon his
ce shalbe offered, meete for a man so valiant and
hou likewyse shalt not be left comfortles; for in
f thy great chastitie and vertue, I will honour thee
garrison to conuey thee into what place thou arte
e." To whom Panthea sayd: "Be of good chere
ot hide from you the place, wherein I am deter-
owe my selfe." Cyrus hearing her say so, went
ne woman that was bereued of suche a husbände,
the man that had lefte suche a wife behinde him,
more to see her againe. But Panthea commaund-
es to go out of the place, till she had satisfied her
s, and lamentations for her husbände: for she pre-
r selfe, requiring her nurse to tarie by her, and
er, that when she was dead, she should shroude her
ide in one garment. The nurse perswaded the
ble wordes and supplications, from her determined
could not preuaile: and when she sawe that her

maistres tooke her woordes in ill parte, she satte downe and wepte. But Panthea with a sworde, whiche she had prepared long time for that purpose, killed her selfe, and laying her head vpon her husbandes breaste, she yelded from her chaste bodie, her innocent ghost. The nurse seing that, cried out, and couered them both, as she was commaunded. Cyrus vnderstanding the woman s facte, was amazed, and spedely went to see if she might be holpen. The eunuches (being three in nomber) seing their maistres dead, they likewyse drewe out their swordes, and killed theimselues in the place, where they were commaunded to stande. In memorie of which facte, Cyrus erected a noble monument to the perpetuall prayse of chastitie and honest loue. Which (as Xenophon reporteth) remained to his daies, with their names ingrauen in Syrian letters.

THE TWELFTH NOUELL.

Abdolominus is from poore estate, aduanced by Alexander the Great, through his honest life, to be kyng of Sydone.

ALEXANDER the mightie and noble emperour, after he had subdued Darius the Persian kyng, at length came to Sydone, a famous citie, by reason of the auncient fame of the first founders. The same citie was vnder the gouvernement of Strato, and maintained by the puissaunce of Darius, who yelding more by force of the people, then by free wil, was thought vnworthy to raigne and rule there. Alexander at the request of his frende Ephestion, willed him to appointe one to be king, whom the citizens should thinke moste worthy of that state. After profers of Ephestion to diuers of the yonge gentlemen of that citie, and refusall made of their partes, they alledged that none ought to enioy the dignitie of their king, but such as were descended of the royall bloud. Thinking none to be more meete for that state then one Abdolominus, who being of the royall race, for pouertie was inforced to inhabite a litle cotage without the citie. His good life was the cause of his pouertie, as it is to many other: and labouring in his daily trauell, vnderstoode not the brute of the warre that troubled all Asia. Ephestion and the yonge gentlemen repaired vnto him with garmentes to garnishe him like a king, and founde him making cleane his garden, whome they saluted, andsaide: "You must exchange your homelie clothes with these riche robes, wherewith wee here present you. Washe your bodie that nowe is foule and vncleane, take vppon you the courage of a kyng, and in this state (wherof you be worthy) expresse the same sobrietie and continencie you doe presently vse. And when you sitte in your regall seate, vsing the authoritie of life and death ouer your subiectes, do in no wise forget the fortune, wherin you were before you were made king, ne yet for what purpose you did receiue it. The matter semed to Abdolominus like a dreame, and demaunded of them, if their wittes were sounde, that did deride him in that sorte. But when he sawe them bynde by othe their doynge

to bee of trouthe, he washed him self, and taking the garment, which was purple and golde, went with them into the place. The fame was diuersly bruted of this facte: some fauoured the cause, and some did froune against it. But suche as were riche, did reproue his pouertie and base estate, to those that were neare aboute Alexander, which made the kynge to sende for him. And when he had long beholden his manner and order sayd: "Your personage doth not degenerate from the fame of your progenitors, but I would fayne knowe, howe pacient you were in the tyme of your pouertie." "I would to God (quoth Abdolominus) I could beare my prosperitie in lyke case now I am kyng. These handes did get that I desired. And hauing nothing, I lacked nothing."

Whiche wordes made Alexander conceiue a good opinion of hym, to whome he restored the riches of the kyng before, and diuers other thinges, taken awaye by the Persians.

THE THIRTEENTH NOUELL.

The oration of the Scythian Ambassadors to Alexander the great, reproving his ambition, and desire of Empire.

TVLLIE in the firste booke of his Offices, saith, that very miserable, is ambition and desire of honour: and that moste men, whiche be giuen to cupiditie of gouernement, honor and glorie, bee forgetfull of iustice. The truthe of whiche graue wordes, vttered by a prince of eloquence, the rude and barbarous ambassadors of Scythia, in plaine and homelie talke, boldly did pronounce to king Alexander (surnamed Magnus) when hee was about to inuade their countrie. For when he had within three dayes finished twelue thousand boates, to transporte his armie ouer the famous ryuer of Tanais, (whiche deuideth Asia from Europa) against the poore Scythians, twenty ambassadors of the Scythians came to Alexanders campe to speake with hym, to proue if they coulde by wordes withdrawe his entended purpose: Before whome when they were placed, the eldest of them spake these wordes.

“ If the Goddes had giuen thee a bodie according to the immoderate desyre of thy mynde, the whole worlde coulde not be able to holde thee. With one of thy handes thou wouldest touche the Oriente, and with thy other hande the Occidente. And when thou haste gotten that, thou wylt desyre to knowe, where the brightness of the Diuine Maiestie is placed. Thus thou couetest after the thing, thou art not able to receyue. Out of Europa thou marchest into Asia, and out of Asia thou passest into Europa. Afterwardes, if thou doest vanquishe all mankynde, thou must make warre with woodes and snowes, with ryuers and wylde beastes. What? doest thou not knowe, that great trees growe long, and yet be rooted out of the grounde in a moment? He is a foole that looketh after the fruite, and doeth not measure the height of the tree wheron it groweth. Take hede lest whyle thou doest contende to clymme to the toppe, thou fallest downe with the bowes whiche thou doest imbrace. The lion also sometyme is made the foode of the smalest byrdes: and rust consumeth iron. There is

nothing so firme, that is not in perill of the weake. What haue we to doe with thee? We neuer touched thy lande. What thou arte, and from whence thou comest, is it not lawfull for vs to bee ignoraunte, that liue in the waste wooddes? Wee can not be subiecte to any man, and wee desyre not to rule. Wee haue certaine giftes peculiar vnto vs, bicause thou shalt not be ignoraunte of the state of our nacion: the yoke of oxen, the plough, the darte, and the bowl: those things we vse, both with our frends and against our enemies. Vnto our frendes wee giue the fruictes, gotten with the labour of our oxen. And with them in our bowle, we sacrifice wine to the Goddes. Our enemies we strike with the darte a farre of, and with the speare nere at hande. After that sorte in tyme paste, wee ouercame the kyng of Scythia, and afterwarde the kyng of Media and Persia, and the waye was open vnto vs into Ægipt. But thou whiche doest boaste, that thou art come to persecute theues, art the common thefe of all nacions, whereunto thou makest thy repayre. The countrie of Lidia thou haste taken. Thou haste enioyed Syria. Thou doest possesse Persia, and the Bactrianes bee vnder thy power. Thou doest goe into India, and nowe thou extendest thy vnstable and gredie handes vppon our cattell. What neede haste thou of those ryches, whiche doe make thee so hungrie? Thou art the first of all men whiche with sacietie hast gotten famine, that the more thou hast, the more greedely thou couetest after thinges thou hast not. Doest thou not remember how long thou hast stucked about Bactria? And whiles thou goest about to bring them in subiection, the Sogdians begin to reuolte. Thus warre doth grow vnto thee of thy victorie. For be thou neuer so great, and puissant ouer other, yet there be none that can indure to be gouerned by straungers. Passe nowe Tanais, thou shalt perceiue what breadth it beareth, and yet thou shalt neuer ouertake the Scythians, whose pouertie is swifter then the armie, which carieth the spoyle of so many nacions. For when thou shalt thinke vs to be farre of, thou shalt see vs within thy campe, with like swiftnesse we folowe and flee awaye. I heare that our desertes and voide places, be mocked by the Greeke prouerbes, we couet rather those desertes and places vnhabited, then cities and plentifull soyles. Therefore holde fast thy fortune, for

she is tickle and can not be holden against her will. Folow thou the counsaile that is good, specially whyles the time doth serue. Bridle thy felicitie, and thou shalt rule it the better. Our countrie-men say, that Fortune is without feete, and that she hath onely handes and wynges, but when she stretcheth forth her hand, shee will not suffer her winges to be touched. Finally, if thou be a God thou oughtest to geue benefites to mortall men, and not to take away the commodities they haue already: but if thou bee a man, consider that thou art alway the same that thou arte. It is a foolishhe part to remember those things, and to forget thy selfe. Those people that fele not thy warres, thou maiest vse as thy frendes. For frendship is most firme and stable emonges equall, and those seeme to be equall that haue not vsed force and violence emonges them selues. Beware thou take them not for thy frendes whome thou doest subdue, and bring in obedience. There is no frendship betwene the maister and the seruaunt, and in peace the lawe of armes is obserued. Beleue not that the Scythians doe bynde frendship with any othe: for they make their othe by obseruation of faith. The maner of the Greekes is to iustifie their factes, by inuocation of their goddes to witnesse: but wee know, that religion consisteth in faith her self. They which do not reuerence to men, do begile the goddes. Thou hast no nede of him to be thy frende of whose frendship thou standest in doubt. Thou hast vs as keepers of Asia and Europa: for we should touche the countrie of Bactria, were it not for Tanais, whiche deuideth vs. And beyonde Tanais all is ours so farre as Thracia, and the fame is that Thracia bordreth vppon Macedonia: wee being neighbours, to bothe thy dominions, chose nowe whether thou wylte haue vs frendes or foes."

These were the woordes of the Scythians. Howe be it these

homelie and playne aduertisementes, could not diuerte

kyng Alexander from his intended enterpryse,

and according to his desired successe, he

ouercame them.

THE FOURTEENTH NOUELL

*The woordes of Metellus of mariage, and wiuing with the prayse
and dispraise of the same.*

IN the presence of many learned men of Rome, Metellus surnamed Numidicus, for his victories and triumphe ouer Iugurtha king of Numidia, a countrie in Africa, in the tyme of his office of Censor, made an oration before the Romain people, of mariage of wyues, vppon occasion that hee hymselfe, by diuers of his frendes, was perswaded to that state. Against whiche hee vsed manye vehemente inuectiues and termes, whiche Aulus Gellius omitteth, for that hee was loth to offend (when report therof should be bruted) the nice eares, and louing mindes of the matrones, and dames of that citie: knowing well that both they, and their successours, would not forget reprochefullie to combate with his spirite and shadowe, when they were not able (being preuented by earthly vermine) by anye meanes to impeche his corps, in tombe fast closed and buried. But when I do remember, howe the same was said, and also noysed emongs a bande of heathen soules, whose mindes for want of godly skill, could not disgest such hainous blastes, as sounded in a time prophane, wherein no sacred voyce of christian lore was breathed vnto redemed flocke: I call to mynde that now I may in time of grace, right frankely write, without offence to humble state of matrone kinde, in these our daies, inspired with spirit of humble hart, whose eares no taunting talke can griue: wherefore with blushles face, and vnstaied penne, I meane the woordes, of that well learned wighte, in open audience to pronounce, and by this booke, to suche elected sort for to declame: but loth for to offende, as one well bet in mariage schole, I must, *a pœna & culpa*, forgiuenes craue: lest some shreude heathen dame (for other doubt I not) doe from her graue *Al' Arme* crie out: and then to fight with buried ghostes:

my manhode will not serue, but by and by with posting legges, and flying fast I will retire: but doubtles here be brought forth, where doubting cause is none. Gellius therfore in persone of the vnmarried knight, in wordes right fewe, this sentence of the married state, doth vtter and proclayme.

“O ye Romaines, if we could be without wines, then all we should wante that griefe. But bicause nature hath so prouided, that neither with them we can liue and passe our time conueniently, nor yet by any meanes be without them satisfied, we ought rather to make preparation, for perpetuall health, then for short pleasure.” With which wordes, diuers of the Romaines were displeased, and founde fault with Metellus who (for that he went about, to exhorthe the people to mariage) ought not by any meanes, to confesse any griefes and incommodities to be in the same. But in these wordes he seemed rather to dissuade and terrefie, then to perswade and incourage: but contrarely he ought, rather to haue affirmed no sorowes and perplexities, to be in wedlocke, and if perchaunce any chaunced to be, they were but light, and easie to be borne and suffered, which for greater commodities and pleasures, might full well be forgotten, and those that were, happed not through natures vice, but by the default and ill behaiour of some married folke. Howbeit, Titus Castritius supposed that Metellus spake well and worthely. “For (said he) a Censor ought to speake like a Censor, a rhetorician like one that professed rhetorike: it is giuen to rhetoricians, to vse false sentences, bolde, subtile and captious: if so be, they be likely, and may by any action moue the hartes of men.” Moreouer he sayde, “that it was a shame for a rhetorician, in an euil matter, to leaue out any thing vntouched.” “But truly Metellus (quoth he) is a holy man indued with grauitie and fidelitie, and that it was not decent for so honorable a personage, as he was, to speake any thing to the Romaine people, but that hee thought to be true, and likely to seme true to all men: specially sithe he intreated of such a matter, as by daily knowledge, common experience, and frequented vse of life, might well be comprehended and knowen: therfore in geuing to vnderstande, a griefe notorious to al men,

he hath deserued by that oration, a fame of a diligent and faithfull man, bicause (to be short) he easely and redely perswaded, that a citie can not prosper and continue, without the vse of matrimonie, which of all things is most assured and true." This Titus Castritius was a teacher of Rhetorike in Rome, and in the same citie for declamation and teaching, was in greatest reputation: a man of right great grauitie and authoritie: and of the emperour Adrian, for his vertue and learning well esteemed.

•

THE FIFTEENTH NOUELL.

Of Lais and Demosthenes.

PHOCION a peripatetique philosopher, in a booke which he made, intituled Cornucopia, writeth this historie of Demosthenes and Lais the harlot of Corinthe, saying: that Lais by reason of her excellent beautie, and pleasaunt fauour, demaunded for the vse of her body, a great somme of money: vnto whom was resorte of all the ryche men of Græcia: but she woulde not admitte them to that acte, except they would first giue vnto her, her demaunde. The quantitie of whiche somme was exceeding greate, whereof rose the prouerbe. *Non cuius homini contingit, adire Corinthum.*

*Not euery man can well attaine
To goe to Corinthe towne.*

He that traueiled to Corinthe to Lais, not able to giue and bestowe, that somme vpon her went in vaine. To this woman that noble philosopher Demosthenes secretly repayred, praying her to giue him leaue: but shee demaunding of him tenne thousand Denarios (amounting very nere to three hundred pounce of our money) astonied at the wantonnesse of the woman, and discouraged with the greatnesse of the somme, retourned backe again, saying:
I come not to buye repentaunce so
dere.

THE SIXTEENTH NOUELL.

C. Fabritius and Æmillius Consuls of Rome, beyng promised that king Pyrrhus for a somme of money should be slaine (whiche was a notableemie to the Romaine state) aduertised Pyrrhus thereof by letters, and of other notable thinges doen by the same Fabritius.

WHEN Pyrrhus king of Epirus inferred warres vpon the Romaines and was come into Italie, and there had prosperously fought, and atchieued the victorie of two or three battailes, wherby the Romaines were brought to great distresse and most part of Italie had reuolted: one Timochares Ambraciensis, a frend of king Pyrrhus, secretly repaired to C. Fabritius then consul, and told him, if he would giue him a reward, he would poyson the kinge, which hee said, he mighte easely bringe to passe because his sonnes, at table waited vpon king Pyrrhus cuppe. Hereof Fabritius wrote to the senate requiring their aduise. The senate depeached ambassadours to the king commaunding them to saye nothing of Timochares, but to giue the kinge warning circumspectly to loke wel about him, to preuent such treason, as by those that were nerest him might be attempted. Thus much is written in the historie of Valerius Antiates. But Quadrigarius in the third booke, writeth that it was one Nicias and not Timochares, that went to Fabritius, and that those ambassadours were not sente by the senate, but by the consuls, and that the kinge rendred praise and thanckes to the Romaines, restoring to them, all the prisoners, which he had taken. The consuls that time were C. Fabritius and Æmillius. The tenour of which letters then sent to king Pyrrhus, the said Cl. Quadrigarius affirmeth to be this. "The Romaine Consuls send salutations to king Pyrrhus. We for thine iniuries, displeasures and wronges iustlie offended, for the valiaunte stomackes remayninge in vs, do studie and indeuour like enemies, to continue warres vpon thee: but it seemeth good vnto vs for the loue we beare to our faith, and for common example, to wishe thee well to do, whom by armes we be not able to vanquishe. There came vnto vs one Nicias, thy familiar frende, to

demaunde rewarde of vs, if secretly he did kill thee: whiche we vtterlye denied, and required him for that fact, to loke for no reward at our hands. Whereupon wee thought good to giue thee aduertisement hereof, lest if any such thing did chaunce, the cities should not thincke that we were priuie to the fact: for wee delite not to fight with giftes, rewards and treason.—Thou in the meane time, except thou take heede, art like to die: Farewel.” This was the aunciente order amonges the Romaines, that neuer were pleased by the cowardly ouerthrow of other, to winne fame and glorye. And because I rede an other excellent historie of the same Fabritius, I haue thought good to adde the same to this nouell. When peace was concluded, betwene the Romaines and the Samnites, the ambassadours of the Samnites repaired vpon a time to this Fabritius, who after they had remembred vnto him diuers and sundrie thinges, frendlye done in their behalfe, they offered vnto him for reward, a great summe of money, intreating him to receiue the same: which the Samnites did (as the report was) because they sawe, that he wanted many thinges, for the furniture of his house and maintenaunce, thinking the same also not to be sufficiently decente for his estate and calling: which Fabritius perceyuing, with his bare handes, hee touched his eares and eyes, and then strooked his face downeward, his noase, his mouth and throate, and the rest of his bodie, to the bottome of his bealie, answearing the ambassadours in this wise. “That whiles hee was able to rule and gouerne all those members which he touched, he was sure to lacke nothing: wherefore (quoth he) these members, which be profitable and necessarye for my vse, will not suffer mee to receiue this moneye, whereof they knowe I haue no neede.” Hereby reprehending the foolish indeuour of these Samnites, in offering to him a bribe, which hee was neuer accustomed to take for any cause, what soeuer he accomplished: who stil shewed himselfe a man sincere and incorrupt.

THE SEUENTEENTH NOUELL.

A Scholemaister traiterously rendring the noble mens sonnes of Faleria to the hands of Camillus, was wel acquitted and rewarded for his paines and labour.

WARRES were addressed by the Romaines against the Falisques (a people of Italye, the ruines of the chiefe citie wherof do yet appeare sixe miles from Viterba) and an armye conscribed and sent thether, vnder the conduct of Furius Camillus. The Falisques vpon the approch of the Romaines, were constrayned to retire within their citie, thinking the same to be their most assured refuge. And they to continue their siege, incamped a mile from the citie, and determined throughly to besiege it, which in deede had like to haue beene of verye long continuance except fortune had giuen to the Romaine captaine, for his tried and well approued valiaunce, victorie in time, which chaunced after this maner. It was a custome amonges the Falisques (obserued also in these oure dayes) to haue their children instructed by one scholemaister, and him also to vse for their guide and companion in all games and pastimes. Amonges theym there was a scholemaister, which taughte noble mennes sonnes, who in the time of peace, teachinge those children, and vsinge for theyr exercise to leade them abroad in the fieldes, kepte still that order, for all the warres before the gates, sometime wyth shorte walkes, sometime wyth longer for their disportes: and continuinge varietie of talke wyth his scholars longer then he was wont to do, at length he brought them to the Romaine campe, euen to the tent of Camillus, hoping thereby (by like) to haue beene well welcomed, and liberally rewarded: saying to Camillus, as detestable words as the facte was traiterous and wicked: which was in effect—"That he was come with that present vnto him, to yelde those children into his hands, whose parentes were the principall of that citie: and therby knew for certainty that the citie would surrender." Camillus seing that fact, and hearing those words, said vnto him. "Thou arte not come (villane) to a people and captaine, with this thy trayterous

offer, semblable to thy selfe. We haue no aliaunce with the Falisques confirmed by compacte or humaine promise, but amitie wherunto nature doth bind vs, is and shall be for euermore betweene vs. Warre so well as peace, hath his law and right: which we haue learned to obserue with no lesse justice, then constancie. We make no warre against boies, whom wee spare, whensoever we inuade or take any cities: but against armed men we fight, yea, and against such, as without offence, or prouocation of our partes, assailed the Romaines campe at the siege of the Veiens. Thou hast vanquished them so much as lyeth in thee, with a new kinde of victorie atchieued by treason: but I will subdue them by pollicie of the Romaines, by vertue, indeuour and armes, euen as I did the Veiens." When he had spoken those wordes, he caused this trayterous scholemaister to be striped starke naked, and binding his handes behinde him, deliuered him to the children, with roddes in their handes, to whippe him home to the citie. When hee was in this order retourned, the people of the citie flock-ed together to see this sight. Then the magistrates assembled in counsaile, vpon this straunge occasion, and where before they were incensed with maruailous wrath and furie, rather desirous of vtter ouerthrow, then peace: now their mindes were quite altered, and peace vniuersally demaunded. The fidelitie of the Romaines, and iustice of Camillus, both in forum and court was celebrated, and by general conformitie, ambassadours were sente into the campe to Camillus, and from thence by Camillus sufferance, to the senate of Rome, of purpose to yelde themselues to their gouernment, who being brought before the senate spake these woordes. "Wee (fathers conscripte) vanquished by you and your captaine, (where at neither God nor man oughte to be offended) haue yelded our selues to you, thinking that wee shall liue more happie, and better contented vnder your gouernement, then by our owne lawes and liberties: a thing that maketh the victor more glorious and praise worthie, then anye other. By the successe of these warres, two holosome examples bee manifested to mankinde. Ye doe preferre fayth in warres before certaine victorie, and we, induced by that faith, haue of our owne accord, presented victorie vnto you. We be at your commaundement: sende hither commission-

ers, to receiue our weapons, our pledges and our citie, which standeth with the gates wide open. We hope well, that neither ye shall haue occasion to be miscontented with oure fidelitie, nor wee offended with your gouernment and empyre." For which facte greate thanks were attributed to Camillus, both by the Falisques and Romaynes.

Here appeared the face and true image of that greate vertue, justice, wherewith this noble man was truly affected. His noble nature was not able to abide any trayterous fact, done by vnnatural citizens, toward their owne countrie. No vngratitude of his owne countrie men, could withdrawe his nature from the zeale and loue he bare to his countrie. His condempnation by vnkinde Apuleius Saturninus the tribune, for which he fledde to Ardea, could not let or impeach his magnanimitie from giuinge the Galles an ouerthrowe when they had sacked Rome, and sharply besieged the Capitole: who in his absence (created dictator,) by gathering together such Romaines as were fledde, vnwares set vpon the couetous Galles, as they were in controuersie for payement of a golden summe of money, and thereby restored his countrie to libertie. Wherefore worthely might he be intituled, with the honourable name of a second Romulus. For as Romulus was the first builder and peopler of that citie, so was Camillus the vindicator and deliuerer of the same.

THE EIGHTEENTH NOUELL.

The Historie of Papyrius Prætextatus.

THE same historie is written by Cato, in an oration which he made to his souldiours against Galba, contayninge in effecte as foloweth. The senatours of Rome vsed before this time, to enter into the senate house with their sonnes, Prætextatis, that is, in long robes garded about the skirtes with purple silke. When the senate debated of graue and waightie matters, they euer deferred the same till the next day, forbiddinge that those causes should not be published, before they were throughly decreed. The mother of this yong gentleman Papyrius, which had been with his father in the senate house, asked of him, what the fathers had done in the senate house that day? Papyrius aunswered, that in any wise, he ought not to tell the secretes of the same. The mother more desirous to know then she was before, went about by faire meanes, foule wordes and correction, to vnderstand the secretes of the senate, and the cause why the same were kept so silente. Wherefore she more earnestlye endeouored to learne the same of her sonne. The yong man by compulsion of his mother, toke occasion to inuent a pleasaunt and mery lie, in this wise. "Mother (quoth he) the senate doth deliberate and consult, whether it be more commodious and profitable for the common wealthe, that one man should haue two wiues, or whether one wife shoulde haue two husbandes." When the old ladie heard this she was abashed, and in fearefull wise goeth to the other ladies and matrones of Rome, tellinge them, where about their husbands did consult. The next day the women flocked together in great traines, and in lamentable wise repaired to the senate, beseching them that one woman might rather be married to two husbands, then two wiues to one man. The senatours entring into the court, marueyled what toyes were in the womens heads, to make that demaunde. The yong gentleman Papyrius stepped foorth, declaring how importunate his mother was, to know whereuppon they consulted

OF PAPYRIUS.

the day before, and therefore he deuised that fained tale, to pacifie her desire. The senatours hearing and perceyuing his good and honeste disposition, greatly commended and extolled his fidelity and witte. Howbeit, they made a lawe that from that time forth, none of their sonnes should come into the house with their father, but onely Papyrius: who afterwarde received the surname of Prætextatus, to honour and beautifie his name, for his notable wysedome in keeping secretes, and holding his peace, in the time of that youthly age.

THE NINETEENTH NOUELL.

How Plutarche did beate his man, and of pretie talke touching signes of anger.

AVLUS Gellius demaunding of the philosopher Taurus, whether a wise man could be angrie? Taurus after he had disputed much of that affection, turned to Gellius and said: "This is mine opinion of the angrie man: but what the philosopher Plutarche iudgeth thereof, I thincke it not a misse to tell thee. Plutarche had a bondman which was an vnthrift and wicked verlet, but geuen to learning and to disputation of philosophie, whom vppon a time he did beate, making him to put of his coate, and to be whipped, for what offence I know not: he began to beate him: the fellow cryed out, that he had deserued no cause, why he ought to be so beaten: at length in continuance of his beating, he gaue ouer his crying complaintes, and began to vtter earneste and serious woordes, saying. 'It was not Plutarche the philosopher, that beate him: (he said) it was a shame for Plutarche to be angrie, and how he had heard him many times dispute of that vice of anger, and yet he had written a goodly booke thereof:' with manye such words. 'Why, (quoth Plutarche, with gentle and quiet debating of the matter :) thou lubbor, do I seeme to be angry with thee? Doest thou either by my countenance, by my talke, by my colour, or words, perceyue that I am angrie? Nether mine eyes be fierce, nor my mouth troubled: I cry not oute a loude: I chaufe not in rage or fume: I speake no vnseemely woordes, whereof I take repentaunce: I tremble not: all which be signes and tokens of anger: which pretie notes of that vnseemely passion, ought to minister to all men, occasion to auoyde that vice.'"

THE TWENTIETH NOUELL.

A pretie tale drawne out of the Larke of Æsope.

ÆSOPE of Phrygia is not vnworthely demed a wise man. For so much as he admonisheth and perswadeth those thinges that be profitable, not seuerely or imperiously as philosophers doe, but by pretye and pleasaunt fables he indueth the mindes of men with holsome and prouident instructions. As by this fable of the birdes neste, he pretily and aptly doth premonish that hope and confidence of thinges attempted by man, ought to be fixed and trusted in none other but in him selfe. A litle birde (saith he) called the larke, builded her neste in a wheate field, and when the wheate was ready to be ripped, her yonge began to fledge: therefore flyinge abroad to seeke meate for them, shee warned them that if there fortun'd anye newes to be done or spoken in her absence, they should giue diligent heede thereunto, and to tell her when she retourned. Within a while after, the owner of the corne called a yong man, his sonne, vnto him, (saying) "Doe thou see this wheate now ripe and ready to be cut, lacking nothing but helpe to reape the same? Gette thee therefore to morowe in the morninge (so soone as the daye doth breake) vnto my frendes and neighbours, and praye them to come and helpe me in with this corne:" and so departed. When the damme retourned, the yonge larkes in trembling and fearefull wise, peping and chirping about their mother, prayed her to make hast to seeke some other place: for the owner of the wheat had sent for his frends, to be there the next day by times to haue it in. Their damme bad them to be of good cheere: for, "If the owner (quoth she) do referre it to his frendes, I am sure the wheate shal not be cutte downe to morowe, and therefore wee shall not neede to feare." The next day the damme flew abroad again for foode, and the owner waited at the houre appointed for his frendes. The sunne was vp, whose beames shone hot, and nothing was done: his frendes came not. Then he said againe to his sonne: "Me thincke sonne (quoth he) our neighbours be sleepers and tarrie long: goe,

call I pray thee, our kinsfolke and cosins, that they maye helpe vs to morowe betimes." Which saying the yong larkes ones againe afraid, tolde their damme when she returned: the damme still perswaded them to be of good cheere, and not to feare: "For kinsfolke in these dayes, be so slacke to do good deedes (quoth she) and to helpe their owne stocke and kinred, that they bee loothe to take paines, specially at so short and sodaine warning: neuerthesse, faire byrdes, (quoth shee) harken what shalbe said againe and tell mee." The next morning the old larke went forth againe for food and forage, and the kinsfolke and cosins came not, according to the owners request. At length the owner saide to his sonne: "Adieu my frendes and kinsemen: to morow in the morning, bring hither two sickles, the one for mee, and the other for thy selfe, and wee with our owne hands, wil cut downe this wheate." The mother larke, hearing her yong ones tel this tale at her retourne: "Ye marie my babes (quoth shee) now it is time to be gone: for the thing whereof the owner hath spoken so long, shal now be done in deede, sith he purposeth to do the same himselfe, and trusteth to none other." Whereuppon the larke toke vp her yong ones, and went to inhabite in some other place: and the corne accordinglye, was cutte downe by the owner. This fable Æsope reporteth, premonishing men to beware of lighte hope, and vaine truste, to be reposed in frends and kinsfolke. And the same Q. Ennius in his satyres, very elegantlye in trim verses hath described the two laste, whereof worthie to be had in harte and memorie, I haue thought good to remember.

*Alwayes fixe fast in breast,
In prompt and ready wise:
This prouerbe olde and true,
A sentence of the wise:
The thing do not expecte,
By frends for to atchieue:
Which thou thy selfe canst doe,
Thy selfe for to relieue.*

THE TWENTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A merie geste, vttered by Hanniball to king Antiochus.

ANTIOCHUS making great preparation and furniture, to inferre warres vpon the Romaines, decked his armie with siluer and golden ensignes and pendentes, wherein he had plentie of wagons, chariots and elephantes with towers, his bande of horsemen glittered gloriouslie, with golden bridles, trappers, barbes, and such like. The king beholdinge, in glorious and reioysing wise, his gaye and beautifull armie: loked towards Hannibal, and said: "How saiest thou Hannibal? thinkest thou that these thinges be not ynough and sufficient to match with the Romaines?" Hannibal mocking and deluding the cowardnes and weakenes of his souldiours, clad in those precious and costlie furnitures, saide. "All these thinges be ynough and ynough againe for the Romaines, although they were the most couetous men of the world."

The king vnderstoode Hannibal, that he had meant of the nomber of his souldiours, and of their brauerie. But hee meant of the pray and spoile, which the Romaines should winne and gette.

THE TWENTY-SECOND NOUELL.

The marueilous knowledge of a Lion, being acquainted with a man, called Androdus.

THERE chaunced to be certaine playes and games at Rome, wher were many monstrous and cruel beastes: but amonges all those beastes, the hugenesse and cruell aspectes of the lions were had in greatest wonder, especially of one: which lion was of an huge and greate bignes, hauinge a terrible voyce, his clawes stretched forth, his bristles and heare vprighte, beholdinge with his fierce and deadly eyes, all the multitude standing by. There was brought in to fight with the lion amonges al the rest, one Androdus a Dacian borne, the bondman of a great personage, of the consular order, whom the lion beholding a farre of, sodenly stooode still: and afterwards by litle and litle, in gentle sort he came vnto the man, as though he had knowen him: wagging his taile like a spaniel fawning vpon his maister, and licked the handes and legges of the poore felow, which for feare was almost dead. This Androdus perceyuing the flatteries of this fierce beast, recovered comforte, and earnestly viewed and marked the lion. Then they began to enter into mutual acquaintaunce, one reioycing at an others meting. Upon which straunge euent, the people rayseed great shoutes and acclamations: wherupon Androdus was called before the emperoure, and demaunded the cause, why that most cruell beast did in that sorte, fawne and fauour him aboue all other.

Androdus tould a maruaylous and straunge historye of the cause thereof, saying: "If it please your maiestie, when my lorde and maister did by the office of proconsull gouerne Africa, I throughe his causelesse stripes and dailye whippinges, was forced to runne awaye. And when I had gotten pardon of the liefetenaunte of that countrie, to remaine there, I withdrew my selfe into the deserts and voide places: and lacking meate to ease the paine of hunger, I determined by some meanes, to seeke mine owne death. It chaunced about the midde of the day, when the sunne was feruent hot, I entred into a caue, which was farre from habita-

tion, verye wide and large. Whereunto, within a while after, this lion resorted, hauing one of his feete bloudie and hurt: for paine whereof, he vttered much mone and sorrow, bewayling the grieffe, and anguishe of the sore. When I saw the lion, my hart began to quake for feare, but beinge come in, as it were into his owne habitation (for so it shoulde appeare,) perceyuinge me to go aboute to hide myselfe a farre of, he like a milde and gentle beast came vnto me, holding vp his foote, reaching the same to me, as though he desired helpe and reliefe at my handes. Wherewithall I plucked out of his foote a stubbe, which stucke betweene the pawes thereof, and taking a litle salue, which I had in my bosome, I thrust it into the bottome of the wounde, and diligently without any further feare, I dried vp the wound, and wiped away the bloud thereof: wherewith the lion being eased, resting his foote in my handes, he laye downe to refreshe him selfe. From that day duringe the space of three yeares, the lion and I continued together, and liued with like fare: the fattest and best morsels of those beastes, which he prayed, he did ener bring me into the caue: which meate because I had no fire, I rosted in the heate of the sunne, and did eate the same with good stomacke. But when I began to waxe weary of that kinde of diet, vpon a time the lion being abroad, I forsoke the caue, and traailing almost the space of three dayes, I was espied and taken of the souldiours, and brought home to my maister out of Africa to Rome: who immediatlie condemned mee to be deuoured of beastes. And now I perceiue that this lion sithens I left his companie is taken, and doth acquite that good tourne and cure, which I shewed him then." The people hearing the discourse of this straunge fact, made suite that the felow might be pardoned, and set at libertie: and the lion by generall voyce was giuen vnto him for reward. Afterwards Androdus caried the lion abrode the citie in a litle corde, and had muche money giuen him: and the lion was decked and beautified with flowers, and euery man that met them, did vse to say:—" This is the lion the frend of this man, and this is the man, the phisition of the lion."

THE TWENTY-THIRD NOUELL.

A pretie disputation of the philosopher Phauorinus, to perswade a woman not to put forth her child to nurse, but to nourishe it her selfe with her owne milke.

It was told to the philosopher Phauorinus, that the wife of one of his sectators and scholers was brought a bedde of a sonne. "Let vs go (quoth Phauorinus) to visite the childwife, and to gratulate the father for the ioy of his sonne." When they were entred the house, after hee had saluted the good man, according to the custome, he asked the wife how she did, and prayed the Gods to sende her good footing, and then inquired of her trauel, and painfull panges. When he vnderstode that her trauel was greate, and her bodye weake with watchinge, howbeit somewhat comforted with sleepe which she had taken, he determined to enter into further talke. "I doubt not gossip (quoth he) but that you purpose to nourish your sonne your selfe." The mother of the woman hearing him say so, began to pray pardon, and said, that her doughter might not both sustaine paine in the birth, and also trouble to nourish it herselfe. "I pray thee mother, said Phauorinus, to suffer thy doughter to be the whole and intire mother of her owne sonne. What kinde of halfe and vnperfecte mothers be they, which so sone as they be deliuered do, against nature, by and by thruste the child awaye from them? Can they nourishe with their owne bloud, the thing which they see not, and wil they not vouchsafe, to bestow their milke vppon that, which is now a lyuing creature, crying out before their faces for the mothers helpe, and dutie? O thou vnkinde woman, doest thou thincke that nature hath giuen thee two breastes for nothinge els, but to beautifie and adorne thy bodie, and not to giue sucke to thy children? In like sort many prodigious and monstrous women, haue dried vp and extinguished that moste sacred fountaine of the body, the educatour of mankinde: not without peril of their persons: as though the same were a disgracing of their beautie and comlinesse. The like also some do attempt by deuises and subtile secretes to extrude theyr conceptions, that the

swelling of their body, might not irrigate and wrinkle their faces, and that their painefull labours and great burdens, do not make them looke olde in their youthly dayes. And like as it is generally to be abhorred, that man in his first beginnings, (when he is fashioned, and inspired with life, and in the handes of the cunning and wise woman, dame Nature,) should be killed and slaine: euen so with not much lesse detestation it is to be had and compted, when he is perfecte and borne, and the childe of thine owne bloude, to be depriued from his due sustenance. But it is no matter (wil som say) with whose milke hee be nourced, so hee receiue milke and liue. The like may be said to that man which is so dull in perceyuing the prouidence of nature, that what matter had it been in whose bodye, and with whose blood, he himselfe had been formed and brought into light. Hath not she which nowe respireth, and with beauty waxeth white and fayre, the same blood now in her breastes, which was before remayninge in her wombe? Is not the wysedome of nature manifest in this, that after the cunning workman the blood, hath framed in the inward parts euery body of man, straight way when the time of byrthe approacheth, the same bloude infudeth himselfe into the vpper partes, and is readie to nourishe the rudimentes of lyfe and lighte, offeringe acquaintaunce and familiar sustenance to the new borne? Wherefore in vaine is not that report and beliefe, that like as the force and nature of the generation seede is able to shape the similitudes of the mind and body, euen so the qualities and properties of the milke, do auayle to like effect. Which thinge is not onelye marked in men, but also in brute beastes. For if kiddes be sockled vp wyth ewes milke, and lambes wyth goates, the woll of thone will grow more rough and hard, and the heare of the other more tender and soft. In trees also and frutes, there is for the most part, a greater force and power in the nature of the soile and water where they grow, eyther for the pruning and planting, then there is if straunge impes and seedes be grifted and sowen there. And many times you see, that a fruitfull tree, caried and set in an other place, decayeth, throughe the nature of the ground more barren. What reason is this then, to corrupt the noble nature of this borne childe, whose body and minde, is well begunne wyth naturall beginninges to infect the

the same wyth the degenerate food of straung milke. Specially if she to whom you shall put forth this childe to giue sucke, be eyther a bonde and seruile woman, and (as commonly it chauncheth) of a forren and barbarous nation, be she wicked, ill fauoured, whorish or drunken. For diuers times without difference, children be put foorth to suche noursses, whose honestie and conditions, in the tyme of the putting foorth, be vtterly vnknownen. Shall we suffer therefore this our infant to be corrupted with pestiferous milke? Shall we abyde a newe nature and spirite, to bee renued in his mynde and bodye, deriued from that whiche is moste vile and wicked? Muche like to the same, whiche many tymes wee see and wonder, howe diuers chyldren borne of chaste and honest women, haue bodies and qualities farre discrepant from their honest parentes. Wherefore very trimlie and cunningly Maro folowing Homeres verses, doth say, speaking of the cruel nature of Achilles:

*Sir Peleus that gentle knight,
Was not thy father sure,
Nor yet thy dame faire Thetis was
Whose grace the goddes did lure:
The raging sea, and stonie rockes,
Did bring thee forth to light:
Thy nature is so bloudie bent,
So fierce in cruell fight.*

He did not herein reprehende the birth of Achilles, but the nature of the cruell and sauage beaste that broughte him vp: for he added this of his owne.

And the Hircan Tigres did giue him sucke.

And truely the condicion of the noursse, and nature of the milke, disposeth almost the greater part of the childes condition, whiche (notwithstanding the fathers seede, and creation of the bodie and mynde, within the mothers wombe) doth nowe in the beginning of his nouriture, configurate and frame a newe disposition in him. Moreouer who can saye the contrarie, but that such women as put their children from them, deliuering them to bee nourced of other, doe cut of, naye, rather doe wye awaye and extinguishe, that bande and increase of mynde and affection, that doeth consociate

and ioyne in nature, the parentes towarde their children. For when the childe is put forth to an other place and remoued from the mothers sighte, the vigor and tendernesse of her affection, is by litle and little forgotten, and out of memorie, and the derest care of her tender babe, groweth to vtter silence. The sending awaye of the chylde to an other nourice, is not muche inferiour to the forgetfulnesse that chaunceth when death dothe take it awaye. Agayne, the affection, the loue, and familiaritie of the chylde, is prone to her that giueth it sucke. And so as it is euidently seene in them that be put forth, the chylde taketh no knoweledge, or desire of the owne mother, that brought it forth. Therefore, when the elementes and beginnings of natural pietie and loue be ones abandoned and defaced, howe soeuer suche children, in that sorte brought vp, shall seeme to loue the parentes, yet for the moste part, it is no pure and naturall affection, but rather a suposed and ciuile loue." Thus this noble Philosopher giueth counsayle to euery good mother, not to be ashamed or griued, to bringe vp her childe with her own milke, aftet her greatest payne past, whom before with her owne bloud, she disdained not to feede in her owne bodie.

THE TWENTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

Of Sertorius a noble Romaine capitaine.

LIKE as in a good captaine, chosen out by any prince and monarche, to serue in his warres and exploytes, manhode and valiaunce is to be desired and wished: euen so in the same a politique minde, to forecaste and preuente, as well the saufetie and good gouernement of his owne charge, as the anoyauce of the enemie is to be desired. Cicero in his oration *Pro lege Manilia*, affirmeth fower thinges, mete to be in a generall or lieutenaunte. That is to saye: *Scientia rei militaris*, *virtus*, *authoritas*, *falicitas*, knowledge of warfare, manhode, authoritie, and good fortune. Knowledge and experience, in choyce of his souldiours, in trayning the ignorant, in lodging the campe, in politique order howe to dispose the scoutes and watche, in making the approche, and defence of the armie lodged, with other necessarie orders, incident to the same. In manhode, boldlie to aduenture, warely to retire, paciently to suffer misfortune, hardly to lie, sparely to fare, stoutlie to abide stormes and colde weather. In authoritie wiselie to gouerne, gently to speake, iustly to threaten, deseruedly to punishe, mercifully to forgiue, liberally to deuide, and louingly to be obeied. And in felicitie and good successe, to honour God: to be faithfull to the prince, to preuente the enemy, not to triumphe before the victorie, to be constant in froward fortune, and coragious in extremitie. Al which and many other, are very mete and requisite in him, that shalbe put in trust, by his soueraigne lorde or ladie, to aduenture the painful charge of a deputie, general, lieutenaunt, or capitaine. Whereof, or in the chieftest of the same this noble gentleman Sertorius, a captaine of the Romaine citie, in time of Marius and Sylla, when the citie of Rome were at ciuile discention, had greate skil and knowledge. For besides his experience in the warres (as Plutarche saith in his life) hee was very abstinente from pleasures, and continente in other disorders, a rare thing in men of his calling. But because I purpose not to staye in the full discourse of his vertues and qualities, I meane but to touche in this

nouell, so muche as Aulus Gellius (in whom I am now conuersant) doth of him make remembraunce. Referring the studious reader, desirous to know the state of his life and doinges, to the plentifull recorders of such memorable and worthie personages: Plutarcke *de vitis illustrium*, and Appianus *de ciuili Romanorum bello*. Which beinge Greeke authours, be very eloquently translated in the Latine, thone by Gulielmus Xilander 1561, and thother by Sigismundus Gelenius 1554. This Sertorius was of a pregnant witte, and therewithall a noble captaine, very skilfull in the vse and gouernement of an armye. In distresse and harde aduentures, hee practised for pollicie, to make lies to his souldiours, to prone if they coulde preuaile. He vsed counterfait letters, to imagine dreames, and to conferre false religions, to trye if those things could serue his tourne, in comforting and couraging his souldiours. Amonges al the factes of Sertorius, this insuing was very notable and famous. A white stagge of exceding beauty and liuely swetenesse, was giuen vnto him by a Lusitanian: he perswaded euery man, that the same was deliuered vnto him by the goddes, and how the goddesse Diana had inspired that beast to admonishe and teache what was meete and profitable: and when he wente about to cause his souldiours to aduenture anye hard and difficile exploit: he affirmed, that the stagge had giuen him warning thereof, whiche they vniuersally beleued, and willingly obeyed, as though the same had been sent downe from the gods in deede. The same stagge vpon a time, when newes came that the enemye had made incursion into his campe, amased with the haste and turmoile, ranne awaye and hid him selfe in a marishe harde adioyning. Afterwardes being sought for, hee was supposed to be dead. Within fewe dayes after, tidinges was brought to Sertorius that the stagge was founde. The messenger was commaunded by him to holde his peace, and threatened to be punished, if he did disclose it. The next day, the same messenger was appointed sodainly to bring the stagge into the place, where he and his frendes did consulte together. When they were assembled he tolde them howe the daye after that he had lost his stagge, he dreamed that he was come againe, and according to his custome, tolde him that was needefull to be done. Then Sertorius making

a signe, to haue the order fulfilled, whiche he had geuen the daye before, by and by the stagge brake into the chamber. Wherewithall a great shoute was made, and an admiration raysed of that chaunce. Whiche credulitie of the barbarous countries serued Sertorius tourne in his weightie affaires. A worthy matter also, is to be remembred of him, that no souldiour that euer serued him, of those vnciuile countries (that tooke his part) did neuer reuolte or forsake him, although those kinde of people be moste inconstant.

THE TWENTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

Of the bookes of Sybilla.

IN auncient chronicles, these things appere in memorie, touching the bookes of Sybilla. A straunge and vnknownen old woman, repaired to the Romaine kyng Tarquinius Superbus, bearing in her armes nine bookes, whiche she sayde were deuine oracles, and offered them to be solde. Tarquinius demaunded the price. The woman asked a wonderfull somme. The king making semblaunce as though the olde woman doted, began to laughe. Then shee gotte fyre in a chafing dishe, and burned three bookes of the nyne. She asked the kyng again, if he would haue the sixe for that prise, wherat the king laughed in more ample sorte, saying: "that the olde woman no doubt did dote in deede." By and by she burned other three, humbly demaunding the king the like question, if he would buye the reste for that price. Wherevpon the kyng more earnestlye gaue hede to her requeste, thinking the constante demaundes of the woman not to be in vain, bought the three bookes that remained for no lesse price, then was required for the whole. Therewithall the woman departed from Tarquinius, and was neuer seene after. These bookes were kept in the Capitole at Rome, whereunto the Romaines resorted, when they purposed to aske counsayle of the goddes. A good example for wyse men to beware, howe they despyse or neglecte auncient bookes and monumentes. Many the like in this realme haue bene defaced, founde in religious houses, whiche no doubt would haue conduced great vtilitie and profite both to the common wealth and countrie, if they had bene reserued and kepte, whiche bookes by the ignoraunt, haue ben torne and raised, to the great grieffe of those that be learned, and of them that aspire to learning and vertue.

THE TWENTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

A difference and controuersie betwene a maister and a scholler, so subtil that the iudges could not geue sentence.

DIUERS thinges be written, whiche although they seme of litle importaunce, yet they be wittie and comfortable to recreate honest mindes and deserue to be had in remembraunce. Emongs whiche Aulus Gellius (who reporteth tenne of the former histories, selected out of his booke *De noctibus atticis*) remembreth this pretie controuersie. In Athenes there was a yong man, called Euathlus, who being desirous to be an orator, and a pleading aduocate, to the intent he might postulate, according to the accustomed maner of Athenes in those daies, accorded vpon a price, with a renowned oratour named Protagoras, that he should instruct him that arte, for a price agreed vpon betwene them, vpon condicion that the scholler should pay the one half of the money before hande vnto his maister, and the reste at such time as he should proue to be an aduocate, so well instructed, as the first matter, which he did pleade, he should obtaine sentence on his side, and gayne for his labour and industrie. But if sentence were pronounced against hym, he should not be bounde to paye the same. Vppon this conclusion, the maister taughte hym with greate diligence, the vttermoste of his knowledge in that arte. The scholler againe learned and receyued his teaching, with greate promptitude and readinesse of witte. When Protagoras hadde taught him the vttermoste of his knowledge: the scholler Euathlus, to defraude hym of the reste of his money, determined neuer to be aduocate, whose craft Protagoras perceiuing, cited him by writte, to appeare before the iudge, to aunswere the reste of the bargaine. When they were both come in the iudges presence, Protagoras spake to his scholer in this wyse: "Euathlus, the bargaine betwene vs, thou canst not chose but confesse and acknowledge, whiche in effect is this. It was agreed that I should teache thee, the arte of pleading, and in the first matter whiche thou diddest pronounce and sentence giuen on thy parte, thou

shouldest paye me the other halfe of the money (for the first moitie I receiued before hande) and nowe to auoyde the satisfaction thereof (although thou knowest, that I haue full well deserued it) thou to defraude me of my duetie, refuset to be an aduocate. But I wil tell thee, this thy determination is but vayne and frustrate: for I haue intangled thee in suche nettes, as thou canst not escape: but by one meane or other thou shalt be forced to pay mee. For if the iudge doe condempne thee, then maugre thy head thou shalt be constraind: and if contrariwyse sentence be giuen on thy side, thou shalt be likewyse bounde to pay me, by thy verie couenaunt, sithens thou art bounde, when thou pleadest first, and sentence should be giuen in thy behalfe. Doe nowe then what thou liste, for in fine thou shalt be forced to paye me, in despite of thy teethe." All the assistantes held with Protagoras, affirming his suite to be very reasonable. Notwithstanding Euathlus with a bolde spirite, answered for him selfe in this maner: "Sir Protagoras, it semeth vnto you that I am conuicted, but staye a while and giue me leaue to speake: and then you shall perceiue in what wyse I will confounde your argument. Here you haue brought your action against me, wherof I truste vpon my reasonable answer before the iudges, to be discharged. For if by this your pleading, by circumstaunces and arte of an oratour, whiche you haue vsed in all your discourse, the matter shall fall so out as sentence be giuen on your side, then the bargayne made betwene vs is voyde and of none effecte, bicause I losing the profite of my firste pleading: wherein by our agreement sentence should be geuen on my behalfe, the same bargaine is not accomplished. For you should be payde the moitie of the money behinde with that commoditie which I did gayne by my first pleading: for whiche cause, there is no reason but I must bee discharged of your demaunde." After this debating of the matter, the iudges wayed with argumentes of both parts whiche semed so doubtfull vnto them, that knowing not howe to giue sentence, they suspended the processe.

The same Aulus Gellius, reciteth an other lyke question, whiche hee referreth to Plinie, as the firste authour thereof. There was a lawe (sayeth hee) in a certayne citie, that what so euer hee were, that committed any valiaunte acte of armes, the thyng that he

demaunded, whatsoeuer it were, should be graunted vnto him. It chaunced that a certayne persone did this worthy acte, and required that a man's wife (whom he derely loued) should be giuen vnto him: whiche wyfe by force and vertue of the lawe, was accordingly deliuered. But afterwarde the man, from whome his wyfe was taken, did the lyke facte, and demaunding his wyfe to be redeliuered vnto him agayn, sayde vnto him that had her: "If thou wilt obserue the lawe, thou must of force deliuer vnto me, my wyfe, but if thou do not like the lawe, thou oughtest yet to render her vnto me, as mine owne." The other aunswered him in like sorte: "If thou obserue the lawe, this woman is myne, for I haue first wonne her by the lawe: but if thou do not approue the lawe, thou hast no right to demaunde her, shee nowe being myne."

THE TWENTY-SEUENTH NOUELL.

Seleucus king of Asia, gaue his wyfe to his owne sonne in mariage, being his mother in lawe: who so feruently did loue her, that he was like to die, whiche by a discrete and wyse inuention, was discovered to Seleucus by a Phisition.

ALTHOUGH the wyse philosopher Plutarche, elegantly and briefly describeth this historie, in the life of Demetrius: yet bicause Banello aptlye and more at large doth discourse the same, I thought good to apply my pen to his stile. Who saith that Seleucus king of Babylon, a man verie victorious in battaile, was amongs the successors of Alexander the great, the moste happie and fortunate: He had a sonne called by his father's name Antiochus. After the deceasse of his wife, his sonne increased and gaue great hope of valiaunce in future time, to become a valiant gentleman worthy of suche a father. And being ariued to xxiiii. yeres of age, it chaunced that his father fell in loue with a very faire yonge gentle woman, discended of great parentage (called Stratonica) whom he tooke to wife, and made her Queene, and by her had one sonne. Antiochus seing his mother in lawe, to be (besides her great beautie) a curteous and gentle Lady, began to be very ameraus of her, whose hart war so set on fire (without apparant shew) that incredible it is to expresse the loue that he bare her. And yet he thought that loue to be vnnaturall because she was his father's wife, and therefore durst not discover it to any man. And the more secrete he kept it the more the heate began to boile and consume him. But bicause he sawe that loue had fixed so deepe footing, that he was not well able to retire, hee determined after long sorow and great turmoile, to seke some quiet hauen to reste his weather beaten barke, that had ben tossed with the waues of pensife and sorowfull cogitations. His father had many kingdomes and prouinces innumerable vnder his empire. At whose handes Antiochus craued licence to visite some of them for his disport and recreation, of purpose to proue if he could auoide that vnseasonable loue, wherewith his hart was suppressed. But he was no

soner out of his father's house, but his harte was vexed with greater tormentes then before, being depriued from the sight of faire Stratonica, whose presence did better content him, then all the pleasures and sportes of the worlde. Neuerthelesse, desirous to vanquishe his indurate affections, he continued abroade for a certaine time, during whiche space, vnable to quenche the fire, he led a more desolate and troublesome life, then he did before. In the end victorious loue toke him prisoner and caried him home againe to his father's house. Who seing the great loue that his father bare to his wife, and the ioyfull tyme that hee spent with faire Stratonica, transported into many carefull panges, many times complained to him selfe in this wise. "Am I Antiochus the sonne of Seleucus? Am I he that my father loueth so well, honoreth so much, and estemeth better then al his realmes and dominions? Alas if I be Antiochus in deede, the sonne of so louing a father, where is the duetifull loue, and bounden reuerence that I ought to beare vnto him? Is this the dutie of a sonne towards his father? Ah wretche and caitife that I am. Whether hath grosse affection, vayne hope, and blynde loue caried me? Can loue be so blynde? Shall I be so voyde of sence, that I know not my mother in law from an other woman who loueth me no lesse, and entertaingeth me so wel, as if she were mine own mother, that laboured with painful panges, to bring me into light? Which being true, as it is most true, why then do I loue her? nay rather more then loue her. Why doe I seke after her? What meane I to hope for her? Why doe I precipitate so fondlye into the snares of blynde and deceitfull loue, and into the trappe of deceitfull hope? Can I not perceyue that these desyres, these vnstayed appetites, and unbrydeled affections, doe proceade from that whiche is dishonest? I see well enough that the waye I take leadeth mee into great inconuenience. And what reproche should I sustayne, if this vnreasonable loue were made common to the world? Ought not I rather to suffer infamous death, then to see my father depriued of suche a wyfe, whome hee so derely loueth? I wyll giue ouer this vnsemely loue, and reuerting my mynde to some other wyght, I wyll accomlishe the duetie of a good and louinge sonne towards his father." Reasoning thus with hym selfe, hee determyned wholly to giue ouer his en-

terpryse. And hee had no soner purposed so to doe, but sodaynly the beautie of the lady appeared, as it were in a vision, before the face of his mynde, and felte the flames to growe so hotte, as hee, vppon his knees, craued a thousande pardons of the louing God, for the abandoning of his gentle enterpryse. And therewithal contrarie imaginations began to ryse, whiche so contended with mutuall resistaunce, as they forced hym thus to saye. " Shall not I loue this ladie, because shee is my fathers wyfe? Shall not I prosecute my suite, for all that shee is my mother in lawe? Ah cowarde, fayntharted, and worthy to bee crowned a prince of follye, if therefore I should giue ouer my former mynde. Loue prescribeth no suche lawe to her suters as pollicie doth to man. Loue commaundeth the brother to loue the sister, loue maketh the doughter to loue the father, the brother his brothers wife, and many times the mother, her sonne in lawe: whiche being lawfull to other, is it not lawfull to me? If my father being an old man, whose nature waxeth cold, hath not forgotten the lawes of loue, in louing her whom I loue: shal I being a yong man, subiect to loue, and inflamed with his passions, be blamed for louing her? And as I were not blame worthy, if I loued one that were not my fathers wife, so must I accuse fortune, for that she gaue her not to wyfe to an other man, rather then to my father, bicause I loue her, and would haue loued her, whose wyfe so euer she had bene. Whose beautie (to say the trouth is such) whose grace and comlinesse so excellent, that shee is worthy to be receiued, honoured, and worshipped of all the worlde, I thinke it then conuenient for me to pursue my purpose, and to serue her aboue al other." Thus this miserable louer, trauersing in seuerall mindes, and deluding his own fansie, chaunged his mynde a thousand times in an hower. In th'ende, after infinite disputations to him selfe, he gaue place to reason, considering the great disconuenience that would insue his disordinate loue. And yet not able to geue it ouer: And determining rather to die, then to yelde to such wicked loue or to discover the same to any man. By litle and litle he consumed, as sleting snow against the warme sone: wherwith he came to suche feble state, that he could neither slepe, nor eate, and was compelled to kepe his bedde, in suche wyse, that with superfluous paine he was brought

to marueylous debilitie: whiche his father perceiuing, that loued him very tenderly, conceiued great grieve and sorowe: and sent for Erasistratus, (which was a very excellent phisition and of great estimation) whom very instantly he praied diligently to loke vnto his sonne, and to prouide for him such remedie as was conuenient for the greatnesse of his disease. Erasistratus viewyng and beholding all the partes of the yonge gentlemans body, and perceiuing no signe of sickenes, eyther in his vrine, or other accident, whereby hee coulde iudge his body to be diseased: after many discourses, gaue iudgement, that the same infirmitie proceeded from some passion of the mynde, whiche shortelye woulde coste hym his life.

Whereof he aduertised Seleucus: who louing his sonne after a fatherly maner, and speciallye, because he was indued with vertue and good condicions, was afflicted with vnspeakeable grieve. The yong gentleman was a marueilous towarde youth, so actiue and valiaunte as anye that liued in his tyme, and therewithall verie beautifull and comely, whiche made hym to be beloued of all men. His father was continuall in his chamber, and the queene her selfe oftentimes visited him, and with her own handes serued him with meates and drinkes: whiche bicause I am no phisition, I knowe not whether the same did the yong man any pleasure, or whether it did him hurt or good. But I suppose, that her sight was ioyfull vnto hym, as of her in whom he had placed his comfort, all his hope, quietnesse, and delight. But beholding before his eyes so many times the beautie of her whome so greatly he desired to enioye, hearing her speake that was the cause of his death, and receiuing seruice of meates and drinkes at her handes whome he loued better then the balles of his eyes: vnto whom he durst not make any request or praier, whether his grief surmounted all other, and therefore continually pined and consumed, I thinke it of reason to be beleued. And who doubteth but that he feling him self to be touched with those her delicate handes, and seing her to sitte by him, and so many times for his sake to fetch so many syghes, and with suche swete woordes to bidde hym be of good chere, and that if he wanted any thing to tell her, and praied him with pleasaunt woordes, to call for that he

lacked, and that for his sake she would gladly accomplish what he desired: who douteth I say, but he was marueilously tormented with a thousande cogitations? Nowe conceiuing hope, and now dispaire, and still concluding with him selfe, rather to dye then to manifeste his loue. And if it bee a grieffe to all yonge men, (be they of neuer so meane and base condicion) in their youthlye tyme, to lose their lyfe, what shall we thynke of Antiochus, beyng a younge man of freshe and flourishyng age, the sonne of a ryche and mightie kyng, that looked if hee escaped after the death of his father to bee heyre of all, did willingly craue death, of that small disease: I am assured that his sorowe was infinite. Antiochus then beaten with pitie, with loue, with hope, with desyre, with fatherly reuerence, and with a thousande other thynges (lyke a shyppe tossed in depest seas) by litle and litle beganne to growe extremely sicke. Erasistratus that sawe his bodye whole and sounde, but his minde greuously weakened, and the same vanquished with sundrie passions: after hee had with him selfe considered this straunge case, hee for conclusion founde out that the yonge man was sicke of loue, and of none other cause. Moreouer he thought that many times, wise and graue men, through ire, hatred, disdaine, melancholie, and other affections, could easily faigne and dissemble their passions, but loue if it be kept secrete, doth by the close keeping therof, greater hurt then if it be made manifest. And albeit that of Antiochus he coulde not learne the cause of his loue, yet after that imagination was entred into his head, he purposed to finde it out by continual aboade with him, and by great diligence to obserue and marke all his actions: and aboue all to take hede to the mutacion of his poulces, and whereupon their beating did alter. This deliberation purposed, he sat downe by the bed side, and tooke Antiochus by the arme, and helde him faste where the poulces ordinarily do beate. It chaunced at that very instant, that the queene Stratonica entred into the chamber, whom so sone as the yonge man sawe comming toward him, sodainly the poulse which were weake and feble, began to reuiue through mutation of the bloud. Erasistratus feling the reinforcing of the poulce, to proue howe long it would continewe, he remoued not at the comming of the queene, but still helde his

fingers vpon the beating of the poulces. So longe as the queene continued in the chamber, the beating was quicke and liuely, but when she departed, it ceased, and the wonted weakenes of the poulces retourned. Not long after the queene came againe into the chamber, who was no soner espied by Antiochus, but his poulces receiued vigor, and began to leape, and so still continued. When she departed the force and vigor of the poulce departed also. The noble phisition seing this mutation, and that still it chaunced vpon the presence of the queene: hee thought that he had founde out the cause of Antiochus sicknesse: but he determined better to marke the same the next daye, to be the better assured. The morowe after, Erasistratus satte downe againe by the yonge gentleman and took him again by the arme, but his poulce made no motion at all. The king came to see his sonne, and yet for all that his poulces were still: and beholde the queene came no soner in, but sodainly they reuiued, and yelded suche liuely mouing, as if you woulde haue sayde:—"Yonder is shee that setteth my harte on fyre. Beholde where she is that is my life and death."—Then Erasistratus was wel assured and certaine that Antiochus was feruently inflamed with his mother in lawe, but that shame constrained him to conceale the hotte firebrandes that tormented him, and to keepe theim close and secrete. Certified of this opinion, before he would open the matter, he considered what way were best to geue knowledge therof to king Seleucus. And when hee had well debated of this matter, he deuised this waye: hee knew that Seleucus loued his wife beyonde measure, and also that Antiochus was so deare vnto him as his own life. Whereupon he thus sayde vnto the king. "Noble Seleucus, thy sonne is affected with a greuous maladie, and that (which is worse) I deme his sicknesse to be incurable." At whiche woordes, the sorowefull father began to vtter pitifull lamentation, and bitterly to complayne of fortune. To whome the phisition sayde.—"If it please you (my lorde) to vnderstande the occasion of his disease, this it is: The maladie that affecteth and languisheth your sonne, is loue: and the loue of such a woman, which except he enioy, there is no remedie but death." "Alas (quoth the kinge, weeping with bitter teares) and what woman is

shee, but that I maye procure her for him, which am kinge of all Asia, and am able with intreatie, money, giftes, or other pollicie whatsoeuer, to make her obediente and willinge to my sonnes requeste. Tell me onely the name of the woman, that I maye prouide for my sonnes health, yea, thoughe it coste me all my goodes and realme to, if otherwise shee cannot be gotten: for if he die what shall I doe with my kingdome."

Whereunto Erasistratus aunswered. "If it like your grace, your sonne is in loue with my wife, but because the loue of another man's wife seemeth vnto him vnreasonable, he dareth not to manifest it for shame, but rather wisheth to die, then to open his minde. Howbeit, I by certaine euidente signes, do well perceiue it." When Seleucus hearde these words, he said. "O Erasistratus! thou being so worthie a man, to whom fewe in goodnesse and humilitie be comparable, so deare and wel beloued of mee, and beareth the bruite to be the very hauen and harborough of wisdomedome, wilt thou not saue my sonne, which is a yonge man, nowe vppon the floure of his youth, and most worthy of life: for whom the empyre of all Asia is worthely reserued? O Erasistratus! the sonne of thy frend Seleucus, is thy king, who through loue and silence, is at the pointe of death, thou seest that for modestie, and honestie sake, at this his last and doubtfull passage, he had rather chose to die, then by speaking to offend thee, and wilt thou not helpe him? This his silence, this discretion, that his reuerence which hee sheweth, oughte to moue thee to compassion. Thincke my wel beloued Erasistratus, that if he loue ardently, that he was forced to loue: for vndoubtedly, if he could not loue, he would doe the best he could not to loue: yea, and with all his endeauour to resist it: but who is able to prescribe lawes to loue? Loue I knowe, not onelye forceth men, but also commaundeth the immortal gods: and when they be not able to resist, what can man's pollicie preuaile? Wherefore, who knoweth not what pitie mine owne deare Antiochus doth deserue? who being constrained, can none otherwise do: but to be silent in loue, is a most euident signe of a noble and rare vertue. Dispose thy minde therefore, to helpe my sonne: for I assure thee that if thou do not loue the life of Antiochus, Seleucus life must needs be hated of thee:

he cannot be hurt, but I likewise muste be touched with griefe.” The wise phisition, seing that his aduise came to passe as he thought before, and that Seleucus was so instant vpon him for the health of his sonne: the better to proue his minde and his intention, spake vnto him in this wise. “It is a common saying, my most dradde soueraigne lord, that a man when he is whole, can giue to him that is sicke and weake, very good counsel. You perswade me to giue my welbeloued wife to another man, and to forgoe her whom I moste feruently do loue, and in lackinge her, my life also must faile. If you do take from me my wyfe, you take with her my life. Doubtfull it is my lord, if Antiochus your sonne were in loue with the queene Stratonica, your graces’ wyfe, whether you would be so liberall vnto him of her as you woulde that I should be of mine.” “I would it were the pleasure of the gods (sodenly aunswered Seleucus) that he were in loue with my best beloued Stratonica, I sweare vnto thee, by the reuerence that I haue always borne to the honourable memorie of my father Antiochus, and my graundfather Seleucus: and I sweare by all the sacred gods, that freelye and forthwith, I would render her into his hands (althoughe shee be the dearest beloued vnto mee,) in suche wise as all the worlde should know what the dutie of a good and louing father ought to be to such a sonne, as is my intirely beloued Antiochus: whoe (if I bee not deceiued) is moste worthie of all helpe and succour. Alas! this is a great vertue, in concealing that notable passion as an earnest affection of loue: and is it not worthie to be consecrated to eternall memorie? Is he not worthie of all helpe and comfort? Doth hee not deserue to be pitied and lamented of all the worlde? Trulye he is worse then a cruel enemye, naye he is rather more fierce and vnnatural then a sauage beast, that at such moderate behauiour as my sonne vseth, will not take compassion.” Many other wordes the good father spake, manifestly declaring, that he for the health of his sonne, would not onely sticke to bestowe his wife, but also willingly his lyfe for his preserdation. Wherefore the phisition thought it not good any longer to keepe secrete the cause, but toke the king aside, and said vnto him in this wyse. “The health of your sonne (my deare lorde and soueraigne) is not in my handes, but the

same resteth in you, and in your wife Stratonica: whom (as I, by certaine signes doe manifestly know,) he ardentlie doth loue. Your grace now doth knowe from henceforth what to do, if his life be dere vnto you." And telling the king the maner of his loue, he ioyfully toke his leaue. The king now doubted but of one thing, which was how to perswade his sonne to take Stratonica to wife: and howe to exhorte his wyfe, to take his sonne to husbande. But it chaunced for diuers causes, that easelye ynough he perswaded them both. And perchaunce, Stratonica made a good exchaunge, in taking a yong man, to forsake him that was olde. After Seleucus had made the accord betwene his wife and his sonne, he caused al his army to assemble, which was very great: to whom he said in this maner. "My dere and louinge souldiours, which sith the death of Alexander the great, haue (with mee) atchieued a thousande glorious enterprises: I thincke it meete and conueniente that yee be partakers of that which I purpose to bringe to passe. Ye doe knowe that vnder mine empyre, I have LXXII. kingdomes, and that I beinge an olde man, am not able to attende so greate a charge: wherefore (louinge companions) I purpose to deliuer and ridde you from griefe of idlenesse, and my selfe from trouble and toyle, reseruing to mee onely so much as lyeth betweene the sea and the riuer Euphrates. All the rest of my dominions I giue to my sonne Antiochus, vpon whom in marriage, I haue bestowed my wife Stratonica, which thinge ought to contente you, because my will and pleasure is such." And when he had tolde them the loue and sicknes of his sonne, and the discrete deuise of the gentle phisition, in the presence of all his armie, the mariage was celebrated betwene Stratonica and Antiochus. Afterwards he crowned them both kinge and queene of Asia, and with royall pompe and triumphe, the desired mariage was consummate. The armye hearing and seing these thinges, very highly commended the pietie of the father towards his sonne. Antiochus then continued with his welbeloued wife in ioy and quietnes, liuing together in great felicitie. This was not hee that for matters of Ægipt did make warres with the Romaines: but he that onely inferred warres vpon the Gallatians, which out of Europa passed into Asia, out of which

sed them, and ouercame them. Of this Antiochus
which was father of Antiochus surnamed the
pted very notable warres against the Romaines,
at graundfather, that married his mother in law,
ucus (of whom I recompt this historie) by giuing
ne, did accomplish a miraculous act, and worthy
empiternall remembrance, and greatlye to bee
therefore, who although he had achieved in-
ries ouer his enemies, yet there was none of
so great as the victorie of himselfe, and
sions. For certainly Seleucus did van-
his owne appetites, by-depruiuing
mselfe of his wife, whom hee loued

and esteemed, aboue

all worldly

thinges.

THE TWENTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

Of the straunge and beastlie nature of Timon of Athens, enemie to mankinde, with his death, buriall, and Epitaphe.

AL the beastes of the worlde do applye theimselfes to other beastes of theyr kind, Timon of Athens onely excepted: of whose straunge nature Plutarcke is astonied, in the life of Marcus Antonius. Plato and Aristophanes do report his marueylous nature, because hee was a man but by shape onely, in qualities hee was the capitall enemie of mankinde, which he confessed franckely vitterly to abhorre and hate. He dwelt alone in a litle cabane in the fieldes not farre from Athenes, separated from all neighbours and company: he neuer wente to the citie, or to any other habitable place, except he were constrayned: he could not abide any mans company and conuersation: he was neuer seen to goe, to any mannes house, ne yet would suffer them to come to him. At the same time there was in Athenes another of like qualitie, called Apemantus, of the very same nature, differente from the naturall kinde of man, and lodged likewise in the middes of the fields. On a day they two being alone together at dinner, Apemantus said vnto him: "O Timon what a pleasant feast is this, and what a merie companie are wee, being no more but thou and I." "Naie (quoth Timon) it would be a merie banquet in deede, if there were none here but my selfe."

Wherein he shewed how like a beast (in deede) he was: for he could not abide any other man, beinge not able to suffer the company of him, which was of like nature. And if by chaunce hee happened to goe to Athenes, it was onely to speake with Alcibiades, who then was an excellent captaine there, wherat many did marueile: and therefore Apemantus demaunded of him, why he spake to no man, but to Alcibiades. "I speake to him sometimes, said Timon, because I know that by his occasion, the Atheniens shall receiue great hurt and trouble." Which wordes many times he told to Alcibiades himselfe. He had a garden adioyning to his house in the fields, wherin was a figge



THE TWENTY-NINTH NOUELL.

The mariage of a man and woman, hee being the husband of xx. wiues: and shee the wife of xxii. husbandes.

MEN commonly do reprove the honour of widowes, because they being twise or thrise wedded, doe marrie againe: and albeit by outward apparaunce, they which soe blame them seeme to haue reason, yet no man ought to iudge the secrecie of the hart. Mariage is holy and ought be permitted, and therfore by any meanes not to be reprov'd. Although it cannot be denied, but that the chaste life is most perfecte, notwithstanding, that perfection in nothing doth diminishe the other. The widowe marrying againe doth not offende God by mariage, and to the world she committeth the lest faulte. And because manye olde and aunciente widowes, in these dayes, may not after three or fower mariages be dismaied and terrified from that state, I will recite an historie, auouched by S. Hierome, in an epistle *Ad Gerontiam viduam de monogamia*, whom for his holines and vertue, wee ought to beleue. It is also pretely set forth by Pietro Messia de Seuiglia, an excellent authour, a gentleman of Spaine, in the xxxiv. chapter of the first parte of his worke, called *La Selua di varie Lezzioni*. S. Hierome sayth, that in the time of pope Damasus, he sawe and knew in Rome, one woman lawfully married to xxii. men, and was the widowe of xxii. husbands: there was also a man which had had xx. wiues, and was then the widower of the xx. Both which being free, and of equall state and condition, they made suite one to other: and that either of them might proue whether should be the victor, in buryinge ech other, they married together, which mariage was in great admiration amonges the Romaines: who musinge which of them should die first, promised that at the funerall, they would beautie the corpes, both with their presence, and also with tokens of victorie. It chaunced (sore against her will I dare say) that the woman died first: at the celebration of whose buriall, all the Romaine husbandes laied their heades together, howe they mighte exornate and garnish the funeralles. They concluded, to goe

before the corpes with laurel garlands vppon their heades, singing verses of praise for the obtaining of such a victorious conquest. Now where the women went, I cannot tell: for I finde written, that *populus totius urbis precedebat feretrum*; wher *populus*, as I take it, signifieth the whole route of men and women. And yet I thincke womens' hartes coulde skarce aforde to go before: therefore I thincke they came behinde like mourners, bearinge braunches without leaues, their beades in their handes, praying for all christen soules. But giuing women leaue to mourne for such an ouerthrow, I woulde wishe all my frendes that be widowes, to folow the noble Romaine matrone and widowe called Annia, who (when her frendes and familiers, exhorted her to marie againe, because she was yong and beautifull) aunswared that she would not. "For, quoth she, if it be my fortune to haue a good husband, as I had before, I shall still be afraied, lest death should take him away: but if it be my chaunce to matche with one that is euill, howe can I be able quietly to beare that, hauing had so good a husbände before." Declaringe thereby, that being ones well matched, great heede ought to be taken, how to chose the nexte, leaste in making hastie choise, leasure for repentaunce should folow.

THE THIRTYETH NOUELL.

How Melchisedech a iewe, by telling a pretie tale of three kinges, saued his life.

SALADINE, whose valiaunce was so great, that not onelye the same from base estate aduaunced him to be Souldan of Babilon, but also thereby hee wanne diuers victories ouer the Saracene kinges and christians: who throughe his manifolde warres and magnificent triumphes, hauing expended al his treasure, and for th'execution of one exploite, lackinge a great summe of money, knewe not where to haue the same so redily as he had occasion to imploy it. At length he called to remembraunce a rich iewe named Melchisedech, that lent out money for interest in Alexandria, whose greedie and couetous nature was such, that with his good will he would not do it, and to force him the Souldan was very loth. Howbeit, compelled by necessity, he cast his wits about him to finde a meanes how the iew might serue his tourne, and thereuppon founde out a sleight and waye by a colourable force. Who causing the iew to be called before him, intertayned him familiarly, making him to sit downe besides him, and said to him these words. "Sir, I do learne by report of diuers, that you are verye wise and well learned in thinges touching God, for which cause I would gladly know of you which of the three lawes you iudge to be most sincere and true: the Iewishe law, the Saracene law, or the Christian lawe?" The iewe which in deede was very wise, perceiued wel that Saladine went about to intrappe him in wordes, thereby to raise some quarell against him, and thought that it was not good for him to praise one of those lawes more then another, leste Saladine mighte take aduauntage of him. Wherefore, to make a wise and discrete aunswere that he might not be ouer shotte, he sharpened his wittes, and sodainly came into his remembraunce this aunswere. "My lorde, the question which you haue proponed is excellent, and to declare vnto you that which I knowe, I muste tell you a tale, the better to open my meaninge, which if it shall please you to heare, is this. I doe remember (if I be not

deceiued) that many times I haue heard tell, how vppon a time there was a noble man which was very rich, and had amonges his other treasures, a veye beautifull ringe of great price and estimation: which for the valour and beautie, hee was very desirous perpetually, to leaue vnto his successours: willing and ordeining that the same sonne which should haue that ring by the gift of his father, after his decease, should be taken and reputed for his heire, and should be honoured and magnified of the reste as the chieftest. He to whom the same ring was left, obserued semblable order in his posteritie, and did the like that his predecessor had done before him. In short time, this ryng succeeded from hand to hand to many successours. And last of al it came to the hand of one that had three goodly sonnes, vertuous and very obedient to their father, who loued them all indifferently and in equall maner, which knowing the order for the disposition of that ring, curious to be best esteemed and beloued, euery of them prayed his father so well as seuerally they could, (which then was aged) that when hee died he would giue him the ring. The good man which loued one no better then another, knew not which of them to chose, to whom he might dispose it, and thought best to promise the same to euery of them to satisfie all three. Secretely he procured an excellent goldsmith to make two other rings, which accordinglye were made so like vnto the first, as the owner himselfe vnnethes knew one from the other. And when he was vpon his death bedde, he secretly gaue to euery of his sonnes a ring. Who after the death of their father desirous to enter the inheritaunce and honour, one goinge about to displace another, euery of them to declare what title he had to enioy the same, brought forth his ringe: and the ringes were founde so like, that the true ring could not be knowen. Therefore the processe for the title remained in doubt and yet continueth till this daye. And so I say vnto you my lord of the thre lawes giuen by God the father to those three people, whereof you haue made the question: euery of those nations thinketh to enioy the inheritaunce of God, and to obserue the true lawe and his commaundementes: but which of them hath the truest law, that remaineth in doubt like the question of the rings." Saladine perceyuing that Melchisedech

knew right well how to auoide the snare which hee had laied for him : determined therefore to open and disclose vnto him his necessitie, to proue if he would do him that pleasure : which hee did, telling him his intent and meaninge, if he had not framed him that wyse aunswere. The iewe liberally lent him the summe of moneye that he demaunded, which Saladine wholie repaied vnto him againe, besides other very greate rewardes that he gaue him, vsing him still for his frende, and afterwards maintayned him next his person, in great and honourable state.

THE THIRTY-FIRST NOUELL.

*One called Guglielmo Borsiere with certaine wordes well placed,
taunted the couetous life of Ermino Grimaldi.*

LONGE sithens there was a gentleman at Genoua called M. Ermino Grimaldi, whose as all men thoughte, was the richest of possessions and ready money within that citie, and therein farre excelled all other citizens which then were knowen in Italie. And as he did surpasse al other Italians in substance and wealth, so in auarice and wretchednes he surmounted beyond measure the most couetous and miserable of the worlde. For he kept his purse so close that he did not onely neglecte to do good to other, but also to himselfe, by sparinge many things necessary for his owne person: he indured much hardnes in meate and drinke because he would spend nothinge: contrary to the common custome of the Geneuois, who be wonte very nobly and honourably to maintaine themselves in apparell and fare. For which cause his surname Grimaldi deservedly was taken away, and was called of euery man nothing els but M. Ermino the couetous. It chaunced in those dayes, that as he by spending nothing multiplied his goods. There ariued at Genoua an honest gentleman and well spoken, a courtier of good interteignement, named Guglielmo Borsiere, (nothing like the courtiers in these dayes that to their great shame, for their corrupt and rude maners would be called and reputed gentlemen, which in deede maye bee counted asses, broughte vppe and noseled rather in the filthye conditions of the vilest menne, then in courtes.) In those dayes courtiers occupied themselves, in treatinge of peace and endinge of quarelles that bredde strife and dissention amonges gentlemen, or in makinge of mariages, amities, and attonementes, and with mery woordes and pleasaunt, did recreate troubled mindes, and exhilarated with pastimes other courtiers, not with sharpe reprehensions, but like fathers rebuking the liues of the wicked, and that for no gaine or reward. Where some of the courtiers of oure age do imploye their time, in ill reportes one of another, and do disseminate debate and strife, vtter-

inge a thousande vnhappye and vile wordes, yea and that (which is worst of all) in common audience. Their maner is to reprove and checke one an other with iniuries, reproches and nipping girdes, with false and deceivable flatteries, villanously and dissemblingly, to begile poore and needie gentlemen. He is also the propest man and best beloued of some great men of like conditions, and of them is best rewarded that can vse the vilest and most abhominable talke, or can do semblable deeds, which redoundeth to the great shame and dishonour, of the chiefe and principall that beare the swaie in courte: prooffe wherof is euident enough for that the vertues past, haue forsaken the presente sort, who liue in the ordure and filth of all vices. But to procede in that which I haue begon, (although vpon iust occasion I haue a litle more digressed then I thought,) I say that the foresaid Guglielmo Borsiere, was honoured and visited of the gentlemen of Genoua, who making his abode for a certaine time in the citie, and hearing tel of the miserie and couetousnes of M. Ermino, had great desire to see him. M. Ermino hearing tell that this Guglielmo Borsiere was an eccellente man, and therefore (although a couetous man) yet hauing in him some sparke of gentilitie, he receiued him with frendlye woords and good countenance, entringe into communication with him of diuers and sundrie matters, and in talking brought him with certaine other citizens to one of his houses which was very faire and newe, where (after hee had shewed him his house) he said vnto him: "M. Guglielmo, you that haue seene and heard many things, can you shew vnto me any new deuise neuer seene before, that I may cause the same to be painted in the hall of this my house." To whom M. Guglielmo (hearing his fonde demaunde) aunswared: "Sir I can shewe you nothing but that which hath beene knowen before, excepte Nesinges or such like. But if it please you sir I wil gladly teach you one, which I thincke you neuer saw." M. Ermino glad to heare of that, said: "I pray you sir tell mee what it is," (not thinking he would haue made that aunswere). To whom M. Guglielmo redely said: "Cause the figure of Liberality to be painted." At which aunswere M. Ermino was so sodenlye ashamed, as he was forced to chaunge his minde in maner cleane contrarye to his accustom-

ed vse, and trade of life, saying: " M. Guglielmo, I will cause the same to be painted in such wise, as neither you nor any man els, shall haue occasion iustly to obiect the same against me." And from that time forth (such was the force of that taunt) hee was the most liberall and bountefull gentleman that dwelte in Genoua, and one that honoured straungers and citizens more then euer did any in his time.

THE THIRTY-SECOND NOUELL.

Maister Alberto of Bologna, by a pleasaunt aunswere made a gentlewoman to blushe, which had thoughte to haue put him out of countenaunce, in telling him that he was in loue with her.

NOT manye yeares paste there was at Bologna a notable phisition, renowned throughe out the whole worlde, called Maister Alberto, whoe beinge old, almost LX. yeares of age, had such an excellent wit, that although naturall heate was expired in his bodie, yet hee disdayned not to conceiue some amorous flames of loue. Seing at a banket a verye fayre gentlewoman a widowe called (as some saye) Madonna Margherita de Ghisilieri, she pleased his fansie so well, that he fixed her so fast in the siege of his remembraunce, as if he had been a yonge man of rype and youthlye yeares. In such wise as that nighte he coule take no reste, if the day before hee had not seene the faire and beautifull face of this faire gentlewoman. For which cause sometimes a foote, and sometimes on horsebacke as he thought best, he continually vsed to passe before her lodginge, which was the cause that shee and diuers other gentlewomen did marke th'occasion of his ofte passing to and fro that waye. And many times they iested and dalied amongst them selues to see a man of such yeares and experience to be in loue, thinking that the displeasaunt passion of loue, could fasten no hold but in the fonde mindes of yonge people and no where els. Wherefore Maister Alberto daily passing to and fro the house of that gentlewoman, it chaunced vppon an holye daye, that shee sittinge with other dames before her doore, and sawe Maister Alberto a farre off, comming towards them, she with the rest determined curteously to receiue him, and reuerently to salute him, and afterwarde merely to talke and sporte of his loue, which accordingly they did. The gentlewoman rising vp conueyed him into a court, of ayre fresh and pleasaunt, where they caused to be brought forth excellent wyne and comfites, and in the ende with manye cherefull and pleasaunt woordes, one of them asked him how it was possible, he could be in loue with that fayre gentlewoman,

specialle sithens manye fayre and trimme yonge menne, did loue her. Maister Alberto perceyuinge himselfe touched and gested at, very honestlye aunswared with smyling countenance: "Maistres, no wyse man whatsoeuer hee be oughte to marueile whye I am in lone, especialle with you (lookinge vppon her whom hee loued) because your beautye and woorthines dothe well deserue the same. And althoughe naturally the forces which be incident to exercises of loue, do faile and decaie in olde men, good wil therefore is not in them depriued, nor the iudgement in knowledge, the which ought to be beloued. But because they haue greater experience then yonge men haue, therefore by nature they better know the qualitie of loue. The hope that moueth mee an olde man to loue you, that is soe well beloued of yong men, is this: I haue many times been conuersaunte in places where I haue seene gentlewomen for their collation and pleasure after dinner, oftentimes to eate lupines and leekes, and albeit that in the leeke, there is nothing good or holsome, yet the heade thereof is lest hurtful, and most pleasaunt to the mouth, whereof generally (through a folish lust) ye women holde the heade in your hands and chawe the leaues, which not onely be euil and nought, but also of an ill fauoured smel and sauour. And what doe I knowe (maistres) if in the choise of your frendes ye do the like? which if ye do, no doubt it is I, whom you haue chosen to be your frende, and haue forsaken all other." This gentlewoman somewhat ashamed blushing with the rest, said: "Maister Alberto, you haue ful wel and curteouslye paied vs home, and aunswared oure presumptuous obiection. Notwithstandinge I doe esteeme and accept your amitie and loue, as I oughte to regard the loue of a wise and honest personage. And so (mine honestie and honour saued) al that I haue to do you pleasure, is to be assured at your commaundement." Therewithall M. Alberto rose vp, thanking the gentlewoman, and with much sport and pleasaunt talke taking his leaue of the company departed. In this maner the gentlewoman giuing ouer her scoffes and tauntes, whereby she thoughte to putte Mayster Alberto out of conceyt, was put to silence her selfe. Whereof I (in the name of Panfilo Filostrato and Dioneo) by waye of intreatie do beseech yee ladies, Pampinea, Fiammetta,

Philomena, and other gentlewomen, to beware howe ye doe contriue your holy day talke, by waste wordes issuing forth your delicate mouthes, in carping, gauding, and iesting at young gentlemen, and speciallye olde men, and Maister Alberto of Bologna, that for loue like the grene stalkes or graye heades of lekes, doe desire to sauer your mouthes, and by honest recreation and pleasure to gratifie your comlie personages, lest before the banket be done, and all the comfites spent, ye departe with blushing cheekes, hanging downe your heades, not shaming to looke your mother in the face from whence you came: I meane the earth: where dame nature hath formed you by your comely grace, and your fayre face, to beholde eche man, and to vtter pleasaunt talke intermixed with honestie and vertue.

THE THIRTY-THIRD NOUELL.

Rinaldo of Esti being robbed, arriued at Castel Guglielmo, and was succoured of a wydowe: and restored to his losses, retourning saulfe and sounde home to his owne house.

IN the tyme of Azzo Marques of Ferrara, there was a marchaunt named Rinaldo of Esti, come to Bologna to do certaine affaires. Whiche when hee had dispatched, in retourning homewardes, it chaunced as he departed out of Ferrara, and riding towards Verona, hee mette certayne men on horsebacke, whiche semed to be marchauntes, but in verie deede were arrant theues: with whome he kepte companie, and without suspicion what they were, rode together familiarly talking. These good felowes seing this marchaunt and thinking that he had money about hym, determined to robbe him, when they sawe their aduauntage, and to the intent he should not suspecte them, they rode lyke graue men of honest conuersation, debating with him of honest causes, and faithfull, shewing them selues counterfactely, to be lowly and gentle. Uppon whiche occasion, he thought him selfe moste happy that he had mette with such companie, because he and his seruaunt rode together alone. And as they were talking of diuers matters (as chaunceth in communication) they fel in talke of prayers, that men do make vnto God. And one of the theues (for they were three in nomber) sayd vnto Rinaldo: "And you gentleman, what praier bee you accustomed to saye, when you ryde by the waye?" To whom Rinaldo answered: "To tel you the truth, I am a man very playne, and rude in those matters, and I haue a fewe prayers at my fingers endes: suche as myne auncestours vsed before me. And I let go currant ii. s. for xxiiii d. But neuerthesse, I haue alwayes accustomed, when I ryde by the way, to say in the morning at my going forth of my lodging, a *Pater noster* and an *Aue Maria*, for the soule of the father and mother of saint Iulian: and after that, I pray to God and saint Iulian, to sende me good lodging the night folowing. And full oft in my time I haue founde, in trauailing of countries many great daungers, all whiche

hauing escaped, it hath bene my fortune always (when night approached) to chaunce vppon good lodging: whiche maketh me stedfastly beleue that saint Iulian (vnto whose honour I saye the same) hath obtained this benefite of God for me, and I thought that daye wherein I neglected, to saye in the morning that prayer, I could neither saulfeley trauell, ne yet at night obtaine good harbourough." He that demaunded the question, asked him: "And haste thou said them this morning?" "Yea verely," answered Rinaldo. Then he whiche already knewe howe the matter would go, said to him selfe, thou shalt haue enough to doe anone, for if thou haue not sayde them this morninge, it may so happe that thou shalt lodge full ill this night. And afterwardees hee saide, "I haue likewise trauayled in my dayes a great waye, and neuer said those praiers, but I haue heard many men greatly prayse them (although) I could neuer perceiue but that I haue bene well lodged. And peraduenture this night you shal proue, which of vs two shal haue best lodging, you that haue sayd them, or I which haue not said them. It is most true that I haue accustomed, in stede of that praier, to saye that verse *Dirupisti*, or the antheme *Intemerata*, or the *De profundis*, which are (as my graundmother did teach and instructe me) of verie great effecte and vertue." And speaking thus of diuers thinges, alwayes riding, expecting the place and time, to accomplish their wicked intent: it chaunced that approaching nere to Castel Guglielmo, when they had passed ouer a ryuer, these three theues, late in the euening in a darke place, did sette vppon him and robbed him, dismounting him from his horse, and left him there in his shyrt. And as they were going awaye, they sayde vnto hym: "Goe and seeke if thy saint Iulian, will helpe thee to good lodging this nighte, for our saincte wyll helpe vs to good." And repassing through the riuer, they went their waye. The seruauant of Rinaldo, seying the theues sette vppon his maister (like a coward) helped him nothing, but touned his brydle and neuer left galloping, vntill he came to Castell Guglielmo: where because it was nighte, he lodged in an Inne, without any further care for his maister. Rinaldo being stil there in his shyrt, bare footed and bare legged, in the great frost and snowe, not knowing what to doe, and seing night already approche, quaking, and his

teethe clacketing in his head, began to looke about hym, if he coulde see anye place there, for hym to resorte for succour, that he might not dye for colde: but (seyng none at all, because a litle before the wares had with fyre consumed all thynges) being sore afflicted for colde, he began to make spede towardes the Castell Guglielmo, not knowyng that his seruaunt was fledde thither: thynking that if he might come in, God would sende hym some succour, but darke night ouertooke him a good waye of, before hee coulde come to the castell, almoste the space of a mile, by whiche meanes he arriued there very late, the gates being shutte vp and the bridges drawen, that he could not goe in. By reason whereof hee was verie sorowefull and discomforted, lamentable casting his eyes about, to espie if it wer possible that at the lest he might shroude him selfe free from the snowe: and by chaunce he sawe a house vpon the walles of the castell, vnder whiche he determined to reste tyll it was daye, and repairing thether, he found vnder the house a doore, (whiche was locked) vnder which doore gathering a litle strawe that he founde thereabout, he sat down very heauie and pensife: making his complainte many tymes vnto saincte Iulian, that the faith which he reposed in him had nowe deceiued him. But saincte Iulian taking pitie vpon him, without any further delaye, prepared him (as it chaunced) a good lodging: for there dwelled in that castell a woman whiche was a wydowe, so faire a persone as might be seene, whom the Marques Azzo loued as his life, and kepte her there for his owne pleasure. And the same woman dwelte in the house, vnder the porche wherof Rinaldo was gone to reste him selfe, vnto whome the daye before, the marques resorted to disporte him selfe that night, and in her house had secretly caused a bathe to be made, and a great supper to be prepared. All which being readie, and the good wyfe expecting nothing els but the comming of the marques, it chaunced that one of his men called at the gates of the castell, with newes to the marques, that sodainly he must ryde awaye; wherefore he sent woorde to the wydowe, that shee should not attende his comming: who, not a litle displeased with the message, not knowing what to doe, determined to enter the bathe whiche was prepared for the marques, and when she had supped to goe to

bedde. This bathe was harde by the doore whereunto poore Rinaldo was approched. The widowe being in the bathe, hearing the plaintes and trembling voyce of Rinaldo, thought it had been the noyse of a storke. Whereupon she called her mayde and saide vnto her: "Goe vp, and looke ouer the walles, to know who is at the doore and what he would haue." The mayde, according to her maistres commaundement, went to the doore, and the night being somewhat cleare, sawe Rinaldo sitting in his shyрте, bare legged, shaking for colde, as is before said, and asked him what he was. Rinaldo with his teethe shyuering in his head, coulde scarce well speake, or vtter a woorde, but yet so brieflie as he coulde, he tolde her what he was, howe and for what purpose he was come thither. Afterwardes he piteously began to praye her (if she could) not to suffer him that night to sterue for colde. The maide pitying his estate, returned to her maistres, and tolde her what she sawe: who likewyse hauing compassion vppon him, remembering that she had the keye of the dore (whiche sometimes serued the turne, when the marques was disposed secretly to come in) she sayde to her mayde: "Go open the doore softly, for we haue prepared a supper, and here is no man to eate it: and also here is lodging sufficient to harbour him." The mayde greatly praysing her maistres for her curtesie, wente forth and opened the doore. And when he was let in, they sawe him to be almoste frosen for colde: sayinge vnto him, dispatche good felowe, goe into the bathe, being yet hotte. Whiche thing he right willingly did, not looking that he should be bidden againe, and being recomforted with the warmth therof, he felt him selfe reuiued from death to life. The good wyfe caused certayne apparel of her late dead husband, to be searched out for him, and when he had put them on, they were so mete, as though they had bene made of purpose, and waiting what it should please the good wife to commaunde him, he began humbly to thanke God and saincte Iulian, that hee was deliuered from that euill nighte (contrarie to his expectation) to so good a lodging. After this the fayre wydowe, somewhat reposing her selfe, caused a great fyre to be made in one of her great chambers, into the whiche shee came, and demaunded her mayde what maner of man he was. The maid aunswered: "Maistres, nowe he is in good apparell, he is a verie handsome felowe, and seemeth

to be of good reputation and honestie." "Goe thy wayes (quod her maistres) and call hym hether. Bidde him come to the fyre, and tell hym that he shall suppe with me, for perchaunce he hath eaten no meate this nighte." Rinaldo came into the chamber, and seing the wydowe, he made to her great reuerence: thanking her for her kindnesse shewed vnto him. When the wydowe had seene him, and heard him speake, perceiuing him to be suche a one as her mayde reported, shee intertaigned him in curteous wyse, causing him familiarly to sitte downe before the fire, and demaunded what mishap brought him to that place. To whome Rinaldo rehersed the whole discourse. For she had heard at the comming of Rinaldo his seruauant to the castell, a brute of his roberie, whiche made her to beleue him the better: she tolde him also, that his man was come to the towne, and howe hee might easely finde him the next morning. And after meate was serued to the table, Rinaldo and she washed together, and then sat down to supper. He was a goodly personage, faire and pleasaunt to beholde, yonge and of good behauiour, vpon whom the woman many times did cast her eyes, and liked him well. To be shorte, this lecherous lady, burning inwardlye with amorous desyre, abused her selfe with hym, in steede of the marques. But when the morning began to shewe foorth her light, the wydowe, to the intent no suspicion might bee hadde, gaue him certayne base and course apparell, and filled his purse with money, praying him to kepe her counsell, and first tolde him whiche way he should take to seeke his man, letting him out at the doore whereat he came in. Who seming as though he had traueiled a great waye that morning, when the gates were opened, went into the castell, and founde his seruauante. And then putting vpon hym suche apparell as was in his male, and being about to mounte vpon his man's horse, it came to passe, like as it had bene a diuine miracle, that the three theues, whiche had robbed him the night before, were taken for doing an other robberie a little whyle after, and were brought to the castell, and vpon their confession, his horse, apparell, and money, were restored to him againe, losing nothing but a payre of garters. Wherefore Rinaldo thanking God and saint Iulian, mounted vpon his horse and retourned whole and saulfe to his owne house. And the nexte daye, the three theues were conueied forth, to blesse the worlde with their heeles.

THE THIRTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

Three yonge men hauing fondlye consumed all that they had, became verie poore, whose nephewe (as he retourned out of Englande into Italie,) by the waye fell into acquaintaunce with an abbote, whome (vpon further familiaritie) he knewe to be the king of Englandes doughter, whiche toke him to husbände. Afterwardes she restored his vncles to all their losses, and sent them home in good state and reputation.

THERE was sometyme in the citie of Florence, a knight called Sir Tebaldo, who as some saie, was of the house of Lamberti: and as other affirme, of Agolanti. But leauing the variaunce of whether house he was, true it is, that hee was in that time a notable riche and wealthy knight, and had three sonnes. The firste called Lamberto, the seconde Tebaldo, and the thirde Agolante, all faire and goodly yonge men: and the eldest of whiche was not xviii. yeares of age. When the sayde Sir Tebaldo died, to them (as his lawefull heires) he left all his landes and goodes. Who being verie ryche in readie money and possessions, continued their life without gouernement at their owne pleasures, and without brydle or stay they began to consume their goodes. They keppe a greate and franke house, and many horses of great value, with dogges and haukes of sundrie kyndes, giuing liberall giftes, and obseruing diuerse gestes at Tilt and Torney: doing also that whiche not onely did appertayne and belonge to gentlemen, but also that whiche was incident to the trade and course of youthe. They continued not long in this order, but their substaunce left them by their father, was very much consumed. And their reuenues (not able to mainteine their expences) began to decrease, whereupon they were fayne to morgage and sell their inheritaunce, in suche wyse as in the ende they grewe to extreme pouertie. And then penurie did open their eyes, in like sorte as before riches had closed them vp. For whiche cause, Lamberto vpon a daye did cal his other twoo brethren vnto him, and tolde them of what honour their father was, to what value his rychesse did amounte, and nowe to

what pouertie they were come through their disordinate expences: giuing them counsaile (so well as he could) that before miserie did growe any further vpon them, by selling that whiche was lefte, they shoulde goe their waye: whiche they did. And without leaue taken of any man, or other solempnitie, they departed from Florence, and taried in no place before they were arriued in Englande. Where taking a litle house in the citie of London, they liued with litle expences, and began to lende out their money to vsurie: and fortune was so fauourable vnto them by that trade, that in few yeares they had gayned a verie notable somme of money, whiche made them one after an other, to retire agayne to Florence with their substaunce: where they redemed a great part of their inheritaunce, and bought other lande, and so gaue them selues to mariage: continuing neuerthesse in Englande, their money at interest. They sent thither to be their factour, a yonge man their nephewe, called Alexandro. And they three dwelling still at Florence, began agayne to forget to what miserie their inordinate expences hadde brought them before. And albeit they were charged with housholde, yet they spent out of order, and without respect, and were of great credite with euery marchaunt: whose expences, the money that Alexandro many times did send home, did helpe to supporte for certaine yeares, which was lent out to diuers gentlemen and barons of the countrey, vpon their castelles, manours, and other reuenues, wherof was receiued an incredible profite. In the meane time the three brethren spent so largely, as they borrowed money of other, fixing all their hope from Englande. It chaunced that warres happened betwene the king of England, and one of his sonnes, whiche bredde muche diuision in that lande, some holding of one parte, and some of an other. By meanes whereof, all the manours and morgaged landes, were taken awaye from Alexandro, hauing nothing wher vpon any profite did ryse. Howebeit he dailye trusted that peace shoulde bee concluded betweene the father and the sonne, and that all thinges should be surrendred, as well the principall as the interest: determining vpon that hope not to departe the countrie. The three brethren whiche were at Florence, not limittig any order to their disordinate expences, grewe daylye worse and worse. But

in processe of tyme, when all hope was paste of their recouerye, they loste not onely their credite, but the creditours desirous to be payde, were fayne to sende them to pryson. And because their inheritaunce was not sufficient to paye the whole debte, they remayned in pryson for the reste, and their wiues and children wer dispersed, some into the countrie, and some hether and thether, out of order, not knowing how to do, but to abide a poore and miserable life for euer. Alexandro which of long time taried for a peace in Englande, and seing that it came not to passe, considering also with him selfe (ouer and besides his vaine abode, for recouerie of his debtes) that he was in daunger of his life, he purposed to retourne into Italie. And as he trauailed by the waye alone, and departed from Bruges, by fortune he perceiued an abbot clothed in white, in like maner about to take his iourney, accompanied with many monkes, and a great traine: hauing much cariage and diuers baggages before. After whome rode twoo olde knightes, the kinsmen of the king, with whom Alexandro entred acquaintance, by reason of former knowledge, and was receiued into their companie. Alexandro then riding with them frendlye, demaunded what monkes they were that rode before with so great a trayne, and whether they went. To whome one of the knightes aunswered, that he which rode before, was a yonge gentleman their kinsman, which was newly chosen abbot of one of the best abbaies in England. And because he was verie yonge, and not capable by the decrees, of suche a dignitie, they went with him to Rome, to obtaine of the holy father a dispensation for his age, and for a confirmation of that office. But they willed him to disclose the same to no man. And so this newe abbot, riding sometimes before and sometimes after, as wee see ordinarelie that lordes doe when they trauell in the countrie, it chaunced that the abbot espying Alexandro riding besides him, which was a faire yonge man, honest, curteous, and familier, who at the first meting did so marueilously delight him, as any thing that euer he sawe in his life, and calling him vnto him, he began familiarly to talke, and asked what he was, from whence he came, and whether he went. To whom Alexandro declared liberally all his state, and satisfied his demaunde, offering vnto him (although his power was

little) al the seruice he was able to do. The abbot hearing his courteous offer and comely talke, placed in good order, considering more particularly the state of his affaires, and waying with him selfe, that albeit his traine was small yet neuerthelesse he semed to be a gentleman, and then pitying his mishappes, he recomforted him familiarly, and saide vnto him: That hee ought dailye to liue in good hope, for if he were an honest man, God would aduaunce him againe not only to that place from whence fortune had thrown him downe, but also to greater estimation: praying him that sithens he was going into Thuscane, whether he likewyse went, that it would please him to remaine in his companie. Alexandro thanked him humblie of his comfort, and said vnto him that he was redie to imploy him selfe where it should please him to commaunde. The abbot thus riding, (into whose minde newe thoughtes entred vpon the sight of Alexandro) it chaunced, after manie daies iourneis, they arriued at a village that was but meanly furnished with lodging. The abbot desirous to lodge there, Alexandro intreated him to light at the inne of an hoste which was familiarly knowen vnto him, and caused a chamber to be made redie for him selfe in the worste place of the house. And the marshall of the abbot's lodgings, being alreadie come to the towne, (which was a man very skilfull in those affaires) he lodged al the traine in that village, one here, an other there, so well as he could. And by that time the abbot had supped, night was farre spent, and euerie man repaired to his lodging. Alexandro demaunded the hoste wher he should lie? To whom the hoste made aunswere: "Of a trouthe Maister Alexandro I knowe not, for you see that all my house is so full, as I and my housholde are faine to lie vpon the benches: howe be it, I haue certaine garrettes, harde adioyning to the lorde abbottes chamber, where I may place you very well, and I wyll cause my folkes to beare thither a pallet, where if you please, you may lodge this night." To whome Alexandro said. "But how shall I passe through the abbot's chamber, the rowme being so streight as not one of his monkes is able to lie there. But if I had knowen it before, the curteins had bene drawen, I would haue caused his monkes to haue lien in the garret, and I my self would haue lodged where they do." Wherunto the

hoste saide, " It is doen nowe, but (me thinke) you may if you liste lie there so well, as in any place of the house. The abbot being asleepe, and the courteins drawen, I wyll softly and without noyse conueye a pallette thyther." Alexandro perceiuing that the same might be done, without any anoiaunce to the abbot, agreed and conueyed him selfe, so secretlye as hee coulde, through the chamber. The abbot whiche was not a sleepe (but gaue him selfe to thinke and imagine vpon his newe desires) heard the wordes that were spoken, betweene the hoste and Alexandro, and likewise vnderstanding where Alexandro lay, was verie well contente in him selfe, and began to saye: " The Lorde hath sent me a tyme fauourable to satisfie my desyres, whiche if I doe not nowe receiue, peradventure the like will neuer be offred againe." Wherefore perswading with him selfe to take that present occasion, and supposing likewyse, that euery man was a sleepe, he called Alexandro so softlye as he could, and willed him to come and lie beside him: who after many excuses, when his clothes were of came vnto him. The abbot laying his arme ouer him, began to attempte suche amorous toyes, as be accustomed betweene two louers: whereof Alexandro meruayled muche, and doubted that the abbot being surprysed with dishonest loue, had called him to his bedde of purpose to proue him. Whiche doubt the abbot (either by presumption, or some other acte done by Alexandro) vnderstanding: incontinently began to smyle, and to putte of his shyrt whiche he ware, and toke Alexandro's hande, and laide it ouer his stomacke, saying vnto him: " Alexandro, cast out of thy mynde thy vn honest thought, and fele here the thing which I haue secrete." Alexandro laying his hande ouer the abbottes stomacke, perceiued that he had two breastes, rounde and harde, the skinne whereof was verie fine and tender, whereby he perceiued that hee was a woman, whom incontinently hee embraced, and without looking for any other inuitation, he would haue kissed her, but she saide vnto him: " Before thou approche any nearer, marke what I shall saye vnto thee. I am a woman and not a man, as thou maiest perceiue, but being departed a maid from my house, I am going to the Pope, to praye him to place me in mariage. But when I first viewed thee, the other daye, whether it was through thy good

fortune, or my mishap, loue attached me in suche wyse as neuer woman loued man, as I do thee, and therefore I do purpose to take thee to husbände before all other: but if thou wilt not take me to wife get the hence and retourne to thyne owne bedde." Alexandro although hee knewe her not, yet hauing regarde vnto the companie and traine that folowed her, iudged her to be some noble and riche ladie: on the other parte, he sawe that she was a personage right beautifull and faire, therefore without any further consideration, he answered. " That for so muche as her pleasure was such, he was verie well contented." Shee then sitting vp in her bedde, hauing a litle table (wherin the picture of Christe was painted) indowed him with a ringe, doing the order of espousalles, and afterwards embracing one an other, to their great contentation and pleasure, they ioyfully continued together that night. And after they had deuised and concluded the order and meanes to order their affaires from that time foorth, Alexandro, so sone as it was daye, rose vp and went out of the chamber that waye he came in, without knowledge to any man where he lay that night. Then right ioyfull and glad, he proceeded in his iourney with the abbot and his companye, and within fewe daies arriued at Rome. And when they had remained there a certain time, the abbot taking with him but the twoo knightes and Alexandro, went to the pope: where doing to him their due reuerence, the abbot began to speake in this wyse. " Holie father (as your holinesse doth better knowe then any other) euery man that purposeth to liue an honest life, ought to auoyde (so muche as lieth in him) all occasions that may drawe him to the contrary. Which to th'intent I that am desirous to leade an honest life, may fully performe, am secretly fled and arriued here, in the habite wherin you see, with a good porcion of the king of Englandes treasure, who is my father: that your holines may bestow me in mariage, for so muche as my father woulde giue me to wife (which am a yonge gentlewoman as you see) to the Scottishe king, a very riche and welthy prince, but yet very olde and decrepite. And his olde age was not so much the occasion of my departure, as the feare which I conceiued (through the frailtie of my youth to be married vnto him,) to commit a thing that should be contrarie to the lawe of God,

and the honour of the bloud roiall of my father. And in coming hitherwardes, being in this deepe deliberation with myself, almighty God, who only knoweth assuredly, what is nedeful and necessary for vs al, did place before mine eies (through his gracious mercy as I trust,) him that he thinketh mete to be my husband, which is this yonge gentleman (pointing to Alexandro) whom you see standing besides me. The honestie and worthinesse of whome is well able to matche with any great lady, how honorable so euer she be, although per aduenture, the nobilitie of his bloud is not so excellent as that which procedeth from the roiall and princely stock. Him then haue I chosen to be my husband, him I will haue and none other, whatsoeuer my father shall say, or any other to the contrarie. Wherefore the principall occasion that moued me to come hither, is now dispatched. But I will accomlishe and performe the rest of my voyage, as well to visite the holy and reuerent places (wherof this citie is ful) and your holinesse: as also that the contract of mariage (hitherto only made in the presence of God, betwene Alexandro and me,) may be consumate openly in the presence of you, and consequently in the sight of all men: Wherefore I humbly beseche your fatherhode, to be agreable vnto that whiche it hath pleased God and mee to bring to passe, and that you would giue vs your benediction, to the intent we may liue together in the honour of God, to the perfection and ende of our life." Alexandro greatly marueiled, when he vnderstoode that his wife was the doughter of the king of Englande, and was rapte with an vnspeakeable ioye. But much more marueiled the two knightes, which were so troubled and appalled, that if they had bene in any place els, sauing in the presence of the pope, they woulde haue killed Alexandro, and peraduenture the lady her self. On the other part the pope was verie much astonned, both at the habite and apparell of the lady, and also of her choise. But knowing that the same could not be vndone, he was content to satisfie her request. And first of all he comforted the two knightes, whom he knewe to be moued at the matter, and reduced them in amitie, with the lady and Alexandro: then he gaue order what was beste to be done. And when the mariage daie, by him appointed, was come, hee caused the ladie to issue forth, clothed in

roiall vestures, before al the cardinalles, and many other great personages that were repayred to the great feaste, of purpose by hym prepared. Whiche ladie appeared to be so fayre and comelie, that not without deserte shee was praysed and commended of all the assemblie. In like maner Alexandro, gorgeously apparelled, both in outwarde apparaunce and condicions, was not like one that had lent money to vsurie, but of a more princelie grace and was greatlye honoured of those twoo knightes, where the pope solempnely celebrated (again) the espousalles. And after that ryche and royall mariage was ended, he gaue them leaue to departe. It seemed good to Alexandro, and likewise to the lady, to goe from Rome to Florence, in whiche citie, the brute of that accidente was alreadye noysed, where being receiued of the citizens with great honour, the ladie deliuered the three brethren out of prison, and hauing firste payde euerie man their debte, they with their wiues, were repossessed in their former inheritaunce. Then Alexandro and his wife, with the good will and ioyfull gratulations of all men, departed from Florence, and taking with them Agolante, one of their vnclcs, arriued at Paris, where they were honourably interteigned of the Frenche king. From thence the twoo knightes went into England, and so perswaded the king, that they recouered his good will towardes his doughter: and sending for his sonne in lawe, hee receiued them both with great ioy and triumphe. And within a whyle after, he inuested his saide sonne with the order of knight hode, and made him Earle of Cornewale, whose wisdom proued so great, as hee pacified the father, and the sonne whereof insued, surpassing profite and commoditie for the whole realme, whereby also he gained and got the loue and good will of all the people: and Agolante his vnclc, fully recouered all debtes, due vnto him in Englande. And the Earle when he had made his vnclc knight, suffered him to retourne in riche estate to Florence. The Earle afterwarde liued with his wife in great prosperitie (and as some do affirme) both by his own pollicie and valiaunce, and with the aide of his father in lawe, he recouered and ouercame the realme of Scótlende, and was there crowned Kyng.

THE THIRTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

Landolpho Ruffolo being impoverished, became a pirate and taken by the Geneuois, was in daunger of drowning, who sauing himselfe vpon a litle coaser full of rich iewels, was receiued at Corfu, and beinge cherished by a woman, retourned home very riche.

It is supposed, that the sea coast of Reggium (in Calabria) is the most delectable part in all Italy, wherein (hard by Salerno) there is a countrey by the sea side, which the inhabitauntes doe terme the coast of Malfy, so full of litle cities, gardeines, fountaines, riche men and marchauntes, as any other people and countrie. Among which said cities, there was one called Rauello, where in time past (althoughe in these dayes there be very rich men) there dwelte a notable man of substaunce, called Landolpho Ruffolo: who being not contented with his riches, but desirous to multiplie them double, was in hazarde to lose himselfe, and all that he had. This man, (as all other marchauntes be accustomed) after he had considered with himselfe what to doe, boughte a very greate shippe, and fraughted the same with sondrye kindes of marchaundize of his owne aduenture, and made a voyage to the isle of Cypri, where he found (besides the commodities which he brought) many other shippes arriued there, laden with such like wares: by which occasion it happened, that hee was forced not onelye to sell the same good cheape, but also was constrained (if hee woulde dispatch his goodes) to giue them almost for nought, whereby he thoughte that he was vtterly vndone. And beinge greatly troubled for that losse, not knowing what to doe, and seing how in so litle a time, of a rich man he was come to beggers state, he thoughte either to die, or els by piracie to recouer his losses, to the intent he might not returne to the place poore, from whence he was departed riche. And hauing founde a copeseman for his great barque, with the money thereof, and with other which hee receiued for his marchandise, he boughte a small pinnas, meete for the vse of a pirate, which he armed and furnished with al thinges necessary for that purpose: and determined

to make himselfe riche with the goodes of other men, and chieflye hee ment to set vppon the Turkes: whereunto fortune was more fauourable then to his former trade: and by chāunce, by the space of one yeare, he robbed and toke so many foistes and galleis of the Turkes, as he had recouered not onely that which he loste by marchaundise, but also more then twise so muche as whereunto those losses did amounte.

Wherefore, well punished with the first sorow of his losses, knowing his gaines to multiplie, as he needed not returne the seconde time, he thoughte with himselfe that the same which he had gotten was sufficiente: and therefore determined presently to returne to his owne house with his gotten goods. And fearing the hinderance which he sustained in traffique of marchaundise, hee purposed to imploye his moneye no longer that wayes, but in that barque wherewith hee had gained the same, with his ores hee tooke his course homeward: and being vppon the maine sea, in the night the wind rose at the south east, which was not onely contrary to his course, but also raised such a tempest, as his smal barque was not able to indure the seas. Wheruppon he toke harborough in a creke of the sea, whiche compassed a litle ilande, there expecting for better wind. Into which creke within a while after, with much a do for auoyding of that tempest, arriued two great argoseis of Genoa, that were come from Constanti-nople: the mariners of which greates shippes, when they sawe the litle barque, they closed vp the waye, that the pinnas could not goe out. And then vnderstanding of whence he was, and knowinge by report, that he was very riche, determined (being men naturally giuen to spoile and loue of money,) to take her. And setting a shore part of their men, well armed and furnished with crossebowes, they conueied themselues to keepe and defende that none within the pinnas (except they woulde be shot through) was able to escape: then retiring into their skiftes, with helpe of the tide they approched Landolpho his barque, which without any great difficultie, in a small space they toke with all the company, not loosing so much as one man. And carying Landolpho aborde one of their cockes, and all within borde his little pinnas, they soncke the same and al the mariners, and kept Landolpho,

suffering him not to haue about him any kind of armure, not so much as an haberion. The next day the winde chaunged, and the shippes hoisted vp sailes toward Leuant, and all that day prosperously sailed on their voyage. But vpon the closing of the night, a storme rose againe, and separated the two ships, one from another, and by force of the wind, it chaunced the ship wherein poore Landolpho was, strake with great violence vpon a sande, in the iland of Cephalonia: and as one would throw a glasse against a wall, euen so the shippe opened, and fell in peeces, whereby the sorowfull mariners that stode aboue, (the seas being couered with goodes, coaffers and plancks of the ship that swam aboue water, which chaunceth many times in such like accidents, the night being darke and the billowes going high and streinable,) such as were able to swim, began to take holde of those thinges which fortune gaue vnto them. Amonges whom wretched Landolpho, seinge death before his face (which he so greatly desired, and so many times craued the day before, rather then to retourne home in that poore estate) was afraied, and caught hold of a borde amonges the rest, trusting it might chaunce that God would pardon him of drowninge, and sende him some refuge for his escape. And as hee was a horsebacke, and fleting vpon a plancke, so wel as he could, (driuen here and there with the sea and winde) he helde faste the same till it was day lighte: which when he perceiued, he looked about him and saw nothing but the cloudes, the seas, and a coaffer swimminge aboue water, which was driuen so nere him, that it made him manye times to feare that it would be his ouerthrow. And the nerer it came, the more hee laboured to put it backe (so well as he could) with his hande, although his force and power was gone: but how soeuer it chaunced, a gale of winde blew out of the skies, and strake the coaffer against the borde whereuppon Landolpho was, who by that meanes driuen backe, was forced to giue ouer the plancke, and with a billow was beaten vnder the water, and afterwarde, remounting aloft againe, hee swam more through feare then force. And seing the borde caried a farre of from him, fearing lest he should not be able to fasten the same againe, he drewe toward the coaffer which was nere ynough vnto him, and laying his

breaste vpon the couer thereof, he made it go (so right as he could) with his armes. And in this maner driuen by the sea, now here now there, without eating (as hauing not wherewithall) and drinking more then he would, he continued al that day and night following not knowing wher he was, for he sawe nothing but sea. The next morning, eyther by the will of God, or throughe the windes force, Landolpho (which was then transformed into a sponge) holding faste with both his handes the brimme of the coafer, (like as we see them that feare to be drowned, do take hold of the next thing that commeth to hande,) arriued at the shore of the isle of Corfu, wher by fortune, a poore woman was scowring her vessell with sand and salt water, who seing him draw nere, and perceyuing in him no forme or fashion of a man, was afraid, and crying out ranne backe. He not able to speake, and see but very litle, could say nothinge, but as the sea droue him nere the shore, the woman discryed the likenes of a coafer, and beholding the same more aduisedlye, saw at length his armes vpon the same and therewithal his face, marueiling with her selfe who it should be: wherfore moued with compassion, she wente into the sea a litle waye, which then was calme, and catching him by the heare, she pluckte him and the coafer to lande: and with much a doe vnfolded his armes that were about the coafer, causing her maide that was with her to carrie the coafer vpon her head: and she bare him to lande, (like a litle childe,) which done, she put him into a hotte house, and with warme water, by frotting and robbing him, his naturall heate and other his sences lost, began to come againe into their former course. And when he saw time she toke him out, cherishing and comfortinge him with wynes and brothes, and so well as shee could, made him at length to recouer his force in such wise as he knew wher he was. Then the woman deliuered him his coafer, which he had saued, and badde him to seeke his aduenture. And thus this good wife delt with Landolpho, who litle esteemed the coafer, but yet he considered that it coulde not be of so small value, but that it was able to beare his charges for certaine dayes. Howbeit, feelinge it to be lighte, he was cleare voyde of hope to haue anye succour and reliefe thereof. Neuerthelesse (when the good wyfe was out of the doores) he

brake open the same to see what was within, where he found many precious jewels, some bound together and some loose, wherein he had pretie skill: and knowing them to be of great value, giuing thanckes to God, which had not yet forsaken him, was wholly recomforted. Howbeit, for so much as in a litle space he had bin twice cruelly distressed and tormented by fortune, fearing the third time, he thought that it was needeful for him to take heede how to dispose his things in safetie till he came home to his owne house. Wherefore hauing bestowed those precious jewels in certaine ragges and cloutes so well as he could, he said to the good wife that he had no neede of the coafer, but if shee would giue him a bagge, he would bestow the same vpon her: which the good wife willingly did. And Landolpho geuing her so great thanckes as he coulde, for the kindnes which he had found at her hands, toke his leaue, and imbarking himselfe, he passed to Branditio, and from thence from place to place till hee came to Trani, where findinge diuers of the citie wherein he dwelt, that were drapers, he was apparelled of them (in a maner for Gods sake) to whom he told the discourse of all his fortune, except the coafer, who lent him a horse, and sente diuers in his company to bring him home to Rauello. And when he was in safety arriued, he thanked God that had brought him thither, where he searched his bouget with more leasure then he did at the first, and founde that he had manye stones of so greate value, that sellinge them at price reasonable, for lesse then they were worth, his substaunce did amount to so much more then it was when he departed from his house. And when he had founde the meanes to dispatch and sell his jewels, he sent to Corfu a good peece of money, to the woman that toke him oute of the sea, to recompence the kindnes, that he had found at her handes: and the like to them of Trani, that had giuen him apparell, the rest he toke to himselfe and would be no more a marchaunte, but liued at home in honest estate to the ende of his life.

THE THIRTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

Andreuccio of Perugia being come to Naples to buy horses, was in one night surprised, with three marueilous accidentes. All which hauinge escaped with one rubie he retourned home to his house.

THERE was at Perugia a yong man, called Andreuccio di Pietro, a horse corser, who vnderstanding of a horse faire at Naples, did put fūe hundred crownes in his pursse, and neuer traueling before from his owne house, went thither with certaine other marchants, who arriued at Naples vpon a Sondag at night. The next morninge, accordinge to the instructions giuen him by his host, he went to the fayre, where he viewed and saw many horses, whereof diuers did very well like him, and demaunded their prises: but with none he could agree of price. And to shew himselfe a right well able man to paye for that he boughte, many times (like a dolte and foole as he was) hee drew out his pursse stuffed with crownes, in the presence of them that passed to and fro. It chaunced that a yonge woman of Scicilia (which was very fayre, but at euery man's commaundement, and that for little hire) passed by as he was shewing his purse, not marked or perceiued by Andreuccio, who sodenlye saide to her selfe: "What is she in all this towne, that should be like vnto me, if all those crownes were mine?" And so passed forth. There was with this yong peate, an old woman, a Scicilian also, who so sone as she espied Andreuccio, forsoke her companion and ran affectuouslye to imbrace him. Which the yong woman perceyuinge (not speaking a word) she gaue good heede to that they said: Andreuccio tourninge himselfe to the olde woman, immediatlye knew her, and reioysed muche that he had so happely met her; whom after greate gratulacions and manye welcomes, she promised to visite at his lodging, which done, she departed from Andreuccio, and hee retourned to buy his horsse, howbeit that morning he bought none at all. The yonge dame, which had first seene this pursse, and marked the acquaintaunce between the old woman and him, to assaie by

what meanes she might get that moneye, or at leaste some part thereof, subtelly asked the old woman what man that was, of whence, what he did there, and how he knew her. To whom the olde woman particularye recompted her whole acquaintaunce, how she dwelt of long time in Scicilia with his father, and afterwards at Perugia. And likewise she told her when he retourned, and for what cause hee was come to Naples. This iollie wenche, wholly informed of Andreuccio his parentes, and of their names, made a plat and foundation, by subtile and craftie meanes, how to obtaine her purpose: and when she was come home to her house, she sent the old woman about businesse for that day, because she might not retourne to Andreuccio. She had dwelling with her a pretie girle, well noseled and brought vp in doing of arrantes, whom about euening, she sent to the lodging of Andreuccio to make inquirie for him: where by fortune she chaunced to finde him standing alone at his hostes doore, whom the girle did aske if he knew not an honest man of Perugia, called Andreuccio di Pietro, that hosted there: "Yes my girle (quoth he) I am the same man." Then she toke him a side, and saide vnto him. "Sir, there is a gentlewoman of this towne, that would gladly speake with you, if it were your pleasure." Which when Andreuccio heard, by and by hee called to minde, and seemed to himselfe that hee was a goodly yonge man of person, and that withoute doubt the same woman was in loue with him, because in all Naples he thought ther was none so proper a stripling as himselfe: whom incontinently he aunsweared, that he would waite vpon her, demaunding when he should come and to what place. To whom she made answere. "Euen when it pleaseth you sir, for my maistresse attendeth at home for you. Andreuccio vpon that, withoute any word spoken to his hoste, whither he was gone, said to the wench. "Go thou before, and I will follow." And the girle did conduct him to her maistres house, which dwelt in a streete called Marpertugio, a name shewing the honestie of the streete, wher she dwelt. But he knowing and suspecting nothing, thought the place to be right honest that he went vnto, and the wife likewise honest and good, and boldlie entred the house, the wenche going before: and mountinge vp

the staires, this yonge gristle called her maistres, sayinge vnto her that maister Andreuccio was come. Who redie at the vpper steppe, seemed as though she attended for him. This ladie was fine and had a good face, well apparelled and trimmed after the beste maner. And seinge maister Andreuccio at hand, descended two steppes of the staires with her armes open to imbrace him, foldinge the same aboute his necke, and paused a certaine space without speaking any word, as though great loue and earnest affection enforced her so to doe. Then weeping, she kissed his face, and with a voice halfe vttered betwene howling and speaking, she said vnto him: "O Andreuccio mine owne deare hart, most hartely welcome." Andreuccio marueyling at those tender words, all amazed aunswared: "Gentlewoman, and you also well found out." Afterwards she toke him by the hand and conueied him vp into a parlour, and from thence (without further talke) into a chamber, which was all perfumed with roses, with flowers of orenge, and other sweete smelles: where he sawe a bedde well furnished, and diuers sortes of apparell placed vpon presses (accordinge to the maner of that countrie) and many other faire and riche ornaments. By reason whereof Andreuccio, which was but a freshe water souldiour, thought that shee had been a great ladie. And they two sittinge together vpon a cheste, at her bed's feete, she began thus to saye vnto him. "Andreuccio, I am assured you do greatly wonder at these faire words, this curteous interteignement, and at the teares which I let fall. And no marueile, although you do not know mee, and peradventure neuer heard tel of me before: but I wil declare vnto you a thing more straunge and marueilous then that is: and to tell you plaine, I am your owne sister, and I say vnto you, that sith it hath pleased my Lord God, to shew me so much grace and fauour, that I doe now see one of my brethren before I die (althoughe I desire to see them all) I care not when hee do call mee from this wretched world: I am so in minde comforted and releued. And where it may chaunce, that you neuer vnderstoode so much before this time, I will tell you the whole discourse. So it is, that Pietro my father and yours, dwelt of long time (whereof it is possible, that you haue heard report)

at Palermo, where through the goodnesse and frendlye behauioure of him, there be yet some remayninge that did beare him singular good wil and frendship. But amonges other which loued him moste, my mother (which was a gentlewoman, and then a widow) without doubt did loue him best: in such wise, that shee forgetting the loue of her father, and of her brethren, and the loue of her owne honour and reputation, they dealed so together as they begat mee, and am here as you see. Afterwardes when your father and mine had occasion to depart from Palermo, he retourned to Perugia, leauing my mother behinde, and me his yong doughter, neuer after that (so farre as I knowe) caringe neither for my mother or me: whereof if he were not my father, I coulde blame him very much, consideringe his ingratitude towards my mother. Albeit, he ought to vse towards mee so muche affection and fatherlye loue as to his owne doughter, being come of no kitchin maide, ne yet of anye base woman: for my mother otherwise not knowinge what he was, did commit into his handes (moued of mere loue) both herselfe and all that she had. But what? thinges ill done, and so longe time past, are more easie to be reprehended then amended. Thus the matter went, he left mee a litle infante at Palermo, where when I was growen to yeares, my mother which was riche, gaue mee to wife, to one of the house of Gergenti, a gentleman of great honesty and reputation, who for the loue of my mother and me, retourned to dwell at Palermo, where greatly fauouringe the faction of the Guelphi, hee began to practise a certaine enterprise with our king Charles, which being knowen to king Frederick, before the same enterprise could take effect, we were forced to flie out of Scicilia: at what time I had thought to haue been the chiefest ladie, that euer dwelte in that island. Wherefore taking with vs such fewe things as wee were able to carie (fewe I maye well call them, in respect of them we possessed) and leauinge our houses and palaces, we came vnto this citie: where we found kinge Charles so beningne towards vs, that he hath recompenced part of our losses, which we sustened in his seruice. For he hath giuen vs possessions and houses, with good prouision of housholde to my husband and your brother in law, as you now see and per-

ceiue: and in this maner I do remaine here, where (sweete brother) I thancke God (and not you) that at this present I see you :” and therewithall she toke him about the necke, weeping tenderly, and then kissed his face againe. Andreuccio hearing this tale spoken in order, and disgested from point to point with good vtterance, wherof no word sticke betwene her teeth, or was impeached by default of tongue, and remembring how it was true that his father dwelt at Palermo, knowing also by himselfe the maner of yong men, which in their youth be prompte and willinge to loue, and seinge her tender teares, her imbracings and honeste kisses, thoughte all that shee had spoken to be moste certaine and true. And after shee had done her tale, he answered in this wise: “ Madame you may not thincke vnkindnesse, if I doe marueile at this, for that in verie deede, I haue no acquaintaunce of you, no more then if you had neuer beene borne: but whether my father hath spoken of you or of your mother at any time, truly I do not now remember: but so much the more I do reioyce that I haue founde a sister here (as I truste) because I am here alone: and certainly I knowe none so honourable, but you may seeme agreeable vnto him so well as to mee, which am but a poore marchaunt: howbeit, I do beseeche you to tell me how you did know that I was in the city.” To whom she aunswared: “ This morning a poore woman which oftentimes repaireth to my house, gaue mee knowledge thereof, because of long time (as she told me) she did dwell with your father at Palermo and at Perugia: and because I thought it more conuenient and meete, to bidde you home to mine owne house then to seke you in another man’s, I thought good to send for you.” After these words, she began in order to inquire of the state of his parents, calling them by their proper names: whereunto Andreuccio made aunswere, that now he perceiued he had better cause to giue credite vnto her words then before. Their discourse and talke of thinges being long and the weather hot, shee called for Greke wine and comfits, and made Andreuccio to drinke. Who after the banquet, desirous to depart to his lodging (for it was about supper time) shee by no meanes woulde suffer him, but making as though she were angrie, said vnto him: “ Oh God! I see now most euidently, that you do

make litle accompte of mee, being your owne sister whom you neuer sawe before, and in her house: whereunto you ought to resort when so euer you come to towne: and will you nowe forsake the same to suppe in an inne? But of trouth you shall not chose but take part of my supper: and althoughe my husbände be not at home (whereof I am righte sorie,) yet you shall knowe that his wife is able to make you some good chere." To whom Andreuccio, not knowing wel what to say els, made this aunswere: "I do loue you as I oughte to loue a sister: but if I goe not to mine inne, I know they will tarie for mee all this night before they go to supper, to my great reproch and shame." "Praised be God (quoth she then) I haue seruantes to aduertise your host that you be here with me, to the intente hee shall not tarrie for you. But pleaseth you sir, to do me this great curtesie, that I may sende for your companions hither to beare you company, that afterwarde, if you will needes depart, ye maye goe all together." Andreuccio aunswere, that he would send for none of his company that night: but for so much as she was so importunate, he himselfe was righte well content to satisfie her request. Then she made as though shee had sent to his inne to giue word that they should not tarie for him: and after much communication supper was placed vpon the table, serued in with manye deuises and sondrie delicates abundantly, and she with like sleights continued the supper till it was darke night. And when they rose from the table, Andreuccio made hast to departe, but shee would not suffer him, tellinge him that Naples was a towne so straight of orders that none might walke abroad in the night, and specially straungers: and that like as she had sent word how they should not tary for him at supper, euen so she had done for his bedde. All which Andreuccio beleeuing, and taking pleasure that he was with his sister, (deceiued though he were of his false beliefe) was wel contented to tarie. Their talke and communication after supper was of purpose dilated and protracted, and one part of the night being spent, she left Andreuccio in his chamber going to bedde, and a litle boye to waite vpon him to see that he lacked nothing, and shee with her women went into another chamber. The time of the yeare was very hotte, wherefore Andreuccio being alone,

striped himselfe and laid his hose and doublette vnder his beddes head, and desirous to go to the priuie, he asked the boie where it was, who pointing to the doore in a corner of the chamber, said vnto him: "Goe in there." Andreuccio safely wente in, and chaunced by fortune to set his foote vpon a borde, which at both endes was loose from the ioyst whereuppon it lay, by reason whereof the bord and he tumbled downe into the iakes: and God so loued him, that in the fall he receiued no hurt although it were of a good height, sauing he was imbroined and arraied with the dunge of the place, wherof the iakes was full. Which place (to the intent you may the better vnderstand what is said, and what shall follow) euen as it was I wil describe vnto you. There was in a litle straighte entrie (as manye times we see betweene two houses) certaine bordes laied vppon two ioistes, betwene the one house and the other: vpon which was placed the seate of the priuie, one of which bordes was the same that fill downe with Andreuccio, who now being in the bottome of the iakes, sorowfull for that sodaine chaunce, cried oute to the boie for helpe. But the boie so soone as hee hearde, that hee was fallen, wente in to tell his maistres, whoe by and by ranne into his chamber to seeke for his clothes: and when she had founde them, and in the same his money, which Andreuccio like a foole, without mistruste, still caried about him: she now possessed the thing for which she had before laied the snare, in fayning her selfe to be of Palermo and the doughter of one of Perugia. And caring no longer for him, she straight way shut fast the priuy doore whereat he went forth when he fell. Andreuccio seing that the boie would not aunswere, began to cry out a loude, but all was in vaine: wherfore suspecting the cause, and beginning somewhat to late to vnderstande the deceit, he lept ouer a litle wall which closed the place from the sight of the streat. And when he was in the open streate he went to the dore of the house, which he knew well ynough, makinge a noise, rapping hard and long at the doore, but it was in vaine: for which cause he began to complaine and lamente, like vnto one that manifestly saw his misfortune, saying: "Alas, in howe litle time haue I lost fife hundred crownes and a sister." And after many other words, he began

again to bounse at the doore, and to crie out. He rapped so long and cryed so loude, as he waked manye of the neighbours there aboutes, who not able to suffer that noyse, rose out of their beds, and amonges others one of the maides of the house (fayning her selfe to be slepie) looked out at the window and said in great rage: "What noise is beneath?" "Oh" saide Andreuccio, "do yee not know me? I am Andreuccio, the brother of madame Floredelice?" "Thou hast droncke to much me thinketh, (quoth the maide) go sleepe and come againe to morow: I know none called Andreuccio, nor yet do vnderstand what thou meanest by those foolish words, get thee hence good man and let vs sleepe I pray thee." "Why (quoth Andreuccio) doest thou not heare me what I say? thou knowest me well ynough if thou wilt, but if the Scicilian kinred be so sone forgotten, giue me my clothes which I haue left behinde me, and I will go hence with al my hart." Whereat the maide laughed and saide: "I thincke the man is in a dreame:" and with that she tourned her selfe and shut fast the window. Andreuccio now sure and certaine of his losses, attached with incredible sorow, conuerted his anger into rage, thoughte to recouer by anoiaunce that which he could not get with fayre wordes. Wherefore taking vp a bigge stone, he began againe with greater blowes to beate at the doore. Which when manye of the neighbours (that before were waked oute of their sleepe and risen) did heare, thinking that it was some troublesome felow that counterfeited those words to anoye the good wife of the house, and all they likewise troubled with the noyse: loking out of the windowes, began to rate him with one voice (like a sorte of cures of one streete, which doe baule and barke at a straunge dogge that passeth by) sayinge: "This is to much shame and villanie, to come to the houses of honest women at that time of the night, and to speake such fonde wordes. Wherefore (good man) gette thee hence for God's sake, and let vs sleepe: if thou haue any thing to do with the good wife, come againe to morrow and disquiet vs no more to night." With which woordes, as poore Andreuccio was somewhat appeased, one that was within the house, a ruffian (that kept the good wife) whom Andreuccio neuer saw, nor heard before: looked out of the windowe, and

with a bigge and horrible voice, demaunded who was beneath? Whereat Andreuccio lifting vp his head, saw one, that so far as he could perceiue, seemed to be a long lubber and a large, with a blacke beard, and a sterne visage, looking as though he were newly rysen from bedde, ful of sleepe, gaping and rubbing his eyes. Whom Andreuccio aunswared in fearefull wise, saying: "I am the good wiue's brother of the house." But the ruffian interrupting his answeare, speaking more fiercely then at the first, said: "I know not who thou arte, but if I come downe, I will so codgel and bombaste thee, as thou shalte not be able to sturre thy selfe, like an asse and dronken beast as thou art, which all this night wilt not suffer vs to slepe." And with these wordes turning himselfe aboute, he shutte the windowe. Diuers of the neighbours (which knewe better the conditions of that terrible ruffian) speakinge faire to Andreuccio, saide vnto him: "For God's sake good man, depart hence in time, and suffer not thy selfe to be slaine:" "Gette thee hence (quoth an other) and saye not but thou haddest warning." Whereat Andreuccio being appalled, and with the ruffians woordes and sight amazed, moued likewise by the counsaile of the neighbours that spake to him as he thoughte, in charitable wyse, toke his waye to retourne to his inne, the sorowfulles man that euer liued, and in greatest despaire, for losse of his money. Turninge that way, wherein he was guided by a litle girle the daye afore, and anoyed with the stenche that he felt about him: desirous to goe to the sea side to washe him, hee declined to muche on the left hande, taking the waye vp to the streat called La Ruga Catellana, and as hee was marching vp the highest parte of the citie, by chaunce he sawe twoo men before him, with a lanthorne light in one of their handes, coming towards him, for auoyding of whom (because he feared that it was the watche, or some other ill disposed persones) hee hidde him selfe in an olde house harde by. But they (as of purpose) went to the very same place: where one of them discharging hym selfe of certain instrumentes of yron, whiche he bare vpon his backe, both of them did vewe and surueie those yrons, debating of diuers thinges touching the same, and as they were talking togethers, one of them sayde: "What meaneth this? I smel the

foulest stench, that euer I felte in all my life." And when he had sayd so, he lifted vp the lanthorne and espied miserable Andreuccio couching behinde the wall, and being afrayde, asked who it was, Andreuccio helde his peace. But they approching neare him with their lighte, demaunded what hee made there, so filthely araied. To whom Andreuccio rehersed the whole aduenture as it chaunceth. Who considering the cause of that misfortune, sayd one to an other: this no doubt was done in the house of Scarbone Butta Fuoco: and tourning towardes Andreuccio, one of them sayde vnto him. "Good man, although thou hast lost thy money, yet thou hast great cause to prayse God that it was thy chaunce to falle, and not to enter againe into the house: for if thou haddest not fallen, assure thy selfe that when thou haddest bene a slepe, thy throte had bene cutte, and so with thy money shouldest haue loste thy life. But what auaieth it now to wepe and lamente: for thou shalt so sone plucke the starres out of the skye, as euer recouer one peny of thy losse: and without doubt he will kill thee, if hee vnderstande that thou make any wordes thereof." When they had sayde so, and had giuen him that admonition, they comforted him in this wyse. "Good felowe, we doe lament thy state: and therefore, if thou wilt ioine thy self with vs, about an enterprise, which we haue in hande: we warraunt thee, thou shalt get a great deale more than thou hast loste." Andreuccio like one in extreame dispaire, was content. The daie before was buried one Messer Philipppo Minutulo, an archebishop of Naples, in riche pontificalles and ornamentes, with a rubie vpon his finger, that was worth fye hundred ducates of golde, whome they purposed to robbe and dispoile, telling Andreuccio the whole order of their intent: who more couetous, then well aduised, went with them. And going towardes the great church: Andreuccio his perfume began to sente very strong, whereupon one of them sayde. "Is it not possible to deuise a waye, that this shitten beaste may washe him selfe in some place, that he stinke no more thus filthelie?" "Yes, (quod the other) there is a pitte here harde by, ouer whiche there hangeth a pulley, and a great bucket, where we may presently washe him." When they were come to the pitte, they founde the rope hanging still vpon the

pulley, but the bucket was taken away: wherefore they thought beste to tie him to the rope, and to let him downe the pitte to washe him selfe: and that when he was washed, he should wagge the rope, and they would hoiste him vp againe. Whiche they did. But it chaunced that whiles he was thus clensing him selfe in the pitte: the watche of the citie (because they swette and the night was very hot), being drie and thirstie came to the pitte to drinke. The other two perceiuing the watche at hande, left Andreuccio in the pitte and ranne awaye. The watche whiche was come thether to drinke, perceiued not those two that were fledde: and Andreuccio being still in the bottome, when he had clensed him selfe, began to wagge the rope. The watche sitting downe by the pittes syde caste of their clokes and layde downe their halbardes and other weapons, and began to drawe vp the rope, thinking that the bucket full of water was tied to the same. When Andreuccio was haled vp, to the brincke of the pitte, hee forsoke the rope, and cast him selfe with one of his handes vpon the syde of the same. When the watche sawe that, they for feare ranne away so faste as they could without speaking any worde. Wherof Andreuccio did marueile very much: and if he had not taken good holde, he had fallen agayne downe to the bottome, to his great hurt, and peradventure not without peril of his life. Notwithstanding being out of the pitte, and finding halberdes and other weapons there, which he knew wel his fellowes brought not with them: he then began muche more to wonder. But betwene feare and ignoraunce of that which happened, complaining him self of his harde fortune, without touching of any thing, he determined to go from thence, and wandred he could not tell whether. But as he was departing from that place, he met his fellowes, retiring backe to drawe him vp. And when they perceiued him alredie haled out of the pitte, they wer wonderfully abashed, and asked who drewe him out? Andreuccio made aunswere, that he coulde not tell, rehearsing to them in order, what had chaunced, and of the things he founde without. They vnderstanding the matter, laughed and tolde him againe the cause, wherefore they ran awaye, and what they were that drewe him vp. And without further talke (being then about mid-

night) they repaired to the great churche: into the whiche they easely entred: and wente to the tombe, whiche was of marble, verie huge and weightie: the couer whereof being verie great, with their crowes of yron, and other tooles, they lifted vp so farre, as one man was able to enter, which doen, one asked an other, who should goe in? "Not I" quod one: "And not I" (quod the other) "No, nor I" quod Andreuccio. The other twoo hearing Andreuccio saye so, stepped vnto hym, saying: "Wilte thou not goe in? by the faythe wee owe to God: if thou goe not in, we will so beate thee, with one of these yron barres, as thou shalt neuer sturre againe out of this place." Andreuccio being made their common riding foole, greatly fearing when he heard them saye so, went in: and when he was in the graue, he sayde vnto him selfe. "These good felowes do make me goe in, because they would deceiue me: for when I haue geuen them all that is here, and I readie to come out, they meane to runne awaie to saue them selues, and to leaue me behinde without any parte thereof." Wherefore he purposed first, to take his owne porcion to him selfe: and remembring the ring of great valour, whereof they tolde him: so sone as he was in the graue, he pulled it of from the archebishop's finger, and put it vpon his own: and afterwarde taking the crosse, the miter and the gloues, dispoyling him euen to his shyrt, he gaue them all saying. "That there was nothing els." But they pressing vpon him that there was a ring behinde, willed him throughly to make searche for it: howbeit he still answered that he could not finde it. And because he would make them to tarie a litle longer, he fained as though he had made a further searche. The other so subtile and malicious as he, bad him to seke stil: and when they saw time, they toke away the proppes that staied vp the tombe, and ran awaye, leauing poore Andreuccio fast shutte in the graue. Whiche when Andreuccio perceiued, what chaunced to him then, eche man may consider: then he assaied some times with his shoulders, sometimes with his head, to remoue the couer, but all was in vaine. Wherefore euen for verie sorowe, he fell in a sownde vpon the dead bodie of the bishop. And if a man had seene them both at that instant, it coulde not well haue bene discerned, whether was the dead

corps, the archebishoppe dead, or poore Andreuccio dying: but after he was come to him self, he began piteously to complaine, seing hee was arriued to one of these twoo endes, either in the tombe to die for hunger, and with the stench of the dead bodie, putrifying with wormes, if no man came to open it: or els to be hanged as a thiefe, if hee were founde within: and as he was in these considerations tormented with sorowe: he heard a noyse in the church of diuers men, who as he thought came to the like facte, that he and his felowes had done before, wherewith his feare began much more to augmente. But after they had opened the graue and stayed it vp, it came in question amongs them who should go in. And when they had contended a good space about the same, a priest that was in the companie sayde. "Why are ye afrayde? doe ye thinke that hee will eate you? the dead neuer eate men: I will go in my selfe." And when he had sayde so, he laied him downe vpon his breste at the side of the graue, and thrusting his feete in before, he went downe. Andreuccio seing that, erected him selfe vpright and caught the priest by one of the legges, making as though he would haue drawen him in: which when the priest perceiued, he cried out a loude, speeding him self out so fast as he could. Wherewithal the reste dismaied almoste out of their wittes, leauing the graue open, toke their legges and ran, as though a hundred thousand deuels had bene at their tailes: whiche seing, Andreuccio (more ioyful then he looked for) lepte out of the graue, and ran as faste as he could out of the churche, at the place where he came in. At what time dayelight began to appeare, and he with the ringe on his finger, wandred he wiste not whether, tyll he came to the seaside, and at length recouered his inne, where he founde his companie and his hoste al that night, taking greate care for him. To whome recompting that whiche chaunced, his hoste gaue him aduise incontinently, to get him out of Naples, whiche presently he did: and retourned to Perugia, hauing bestowed his v. C. crownes vpon a rynge, whiche he thought to haue imploied vpon horses: for whiche cause he made that iourney.

THE THIRTY-SEVENTH NOUELL.

The erle of Angiers being falsely accused, was banished out of Fraunce, and left his twoo sonnes in sondry places in Englande, and retourning (vnknownen) by Scotlande, founde them in great authoritie, afterwarde he repayred in the habite of a seruaunte, to the Frenche kinges armie, and being knowen to be innocent, was againe aduanced to his first estate.

THE Romaine empire being transferred from the Frenche, vnto the Almanes, there rose a great discencion betwene bothe the nacions, and in the ende a cruell and continuall warre. For whiche cause, as well for the defence of his kingdome, as to offende his enemies, the Frenche king and one of his sonnes, with all the power of their owne realme and of their frendes and allies, assembled a great hoste of menne to encountre with their enemies: and before they proceeded, because they would not leaue their realme without a gouernour, knowing Gualtieri, erle of Angiers, to be a gentle and sage knight, and their moste trustie frend, and that he was a man moste expert in the art of warfare, seming vnto them (notwithstanding) more apt to pleasure, then paine, lefte him lieutenant generall in their place, for the gouernement of the whole kingdome of Fraunce: and proceeded in their enterprise. The erle then began with great knoweledge, and by good order, to execute his office committed vnto hym, doyng nothinge withoute the consente of the queene, and her fayre daughter in lawe, althoughe they were lefte to be vnder his custodie and gouernement, yet neuertheles, he honoured them as his maistresses and superiours. The erle Gualtieri was a beautiful personage, about the age of fourtie yeares, so familiar and well condicioned, as any gentleman could be, and besides that, hee was the moste excellent and trimmest knight that was knowen in those dayes, and one moste comelie in his apparell. It chaunced that the king and his sonne, being at the warres aforesaide, the wife of the erle died in the meane whyle, leauing him onely twoo litle yong children, a sonne and a doughter, whiche he had by her. He then frequenting the court

of the aforesaid ladies, talking many times with them about the affaires of the realme: the wife of the kinges sonne, fixed her eyes vpon him, and with great affection (for his persone and vertues) feruently embraced hym with secrete loue. And knowing her selfe to bee yonge and freshe, and him to be without a wyfe, thought (sodainly) to bring to passe, that whiche shee desired, and thinking that nothing could lette it but onely shame to discouer it, shee purposed vtterlye to abandone the same. And vppon a daye beyng alone, shee sente one to seeke the erle, as though shee would haue communicated with him of other matters. The erle whose mynde was farre different from the ladies, incontinentlye came vnto her: who beyng sette downe together vppon a bedde (whiche she desired) alone in a chamber, he asked her twyse vpon what occasion she sent for hym: and she hauing nothing to saye vnto hym, pressed in the ende, and rapte with loue waxed verie shamefaste and almoste wepinge, and quaking for feare, with faynte woordes, began to saye as foloweth. " My derely beloued and louing frende, and lorde, you may easely knowe (beyng a wyse man as you bee) the frailtie of men and women: and by diuers considerations, the weakenesse to be more in the one, then in the other. Wherefore (before a iust iudge) one fault of diuerse qualities, ought not of reason to receiue one like punishment. Moreouer who is he that will saye, that a poore man or woman, which getteth their liuing with the labour of their bodie, ought not more to be reprehended if they become amourous, and subiect to their lustes, then the riche ladye whiche taketh no care for her liuing, or wanteth any thing that shee desireth. Truly I beleue there is none that will saye so: for which reason I suppose that the things before sayd, ought to serue the greatest part of the excuse to the aduauntage of her that doth possesse them: if it happen that shee geue her selfe fully to the conductions of loue: and the superfluousage of her saide excuse ought to consiste, in that shee hath chosen her a sage and vertuous frende, if shee that loueth hath done so in dede. Whiche twoo thinges as they ought to be (in my iudgement) so they are in me, and many other also: whiche ought to induce me to loue, accordingly as my youth requireth, and the great distaunce that is betweene my husbände and mee.

It behoueth now then, that they should aduaunce them selues in your presence, for the defence of my burning loue: and if the same do raine in you, whiche haue power in the wise, then I beseeche you to geue me counsayle and aide in the thing which I shal demaunde. True it is, that for the long absence of my husbande (not able to resist the prickes of the fleshe, and the force of loue) whiche be of suche great effect, that they haue many times past and yet daily do vanquishe and ouercome, not only feble and weake women, but also the strongest men. I liuing in ease and idlenes as you se, and forced to folowe the pleasures of loue and to become amourous: and as I do knowe well, that suche thinges (if they were knowen) should not be reputed honest. Neuerthelesse, the same being kepte secrete, I truste shall not be reprocheful. Notwithstanding dame Loue is so fauourable vnto mee, that not onely shee hath geuen me true iudgement in choise of a frende, but hath reueiled vnto me that it is you whiche is worthy to be beloued, of such a ladie as I am. For if I be not greatlye deceiued, I doe make accompte that you be the fayrest personage, the semeliest, the moste curteous, and wysest gentleman, in all the realme of Fraunce. And as I maye saye, by reason of his absence, that I am without a husband so may you affirme that you be without a wife: wherefore I beseeche you, for the loue that I beare vnto you, that you will not denye me your loue and frendship, and that you will haue pitie vpon my young yeares, whiche doubtles do consume for you, as I see against the fierie flames." At which worde the teares ran downe in such aboundance, as where she thought to make further supplication and praiers, she had no more power to speake. But holding downe her head, like one that was ouercome, she threw her self downe into the erles lappe, who like a faithfull knight, began to blame (with sharpe rebukes) her fonde and foolishe loue: pushing her from hym, as shee was about to clepe him aboute the necke, and swoore great othes, that rather hee woulde be drawen in peces then consent to suche a thing, to bee done by him, or any other, against the honour of his lorde and maister. Whiche woordes the ladie hearing, sodainly forgat her loue, and in great rage, sayde vnto him: " Shall I then be frustrate, thou arrent villayne, in this wyse of my de-

sired ioye? but sithens thou goest about, to seke my destruction, I will cause thee to be put to death, or els to be banyshed the worlde." When she had sayde so, by and by she caught her selfe by the heare of the head, and almoste tare it of cleane, and then layde handes vppon her garmentes, renting the same in peeces, and afterwarde cried out aloude: "Helpe, helpe, the erle of Angiers wil rauyshe me by force." The earle seeing that (and farre more doubting of the enuie, and malice of the courte, then his owne conscience, for any committed facte, fearing also, that more credite would be geuen to the wickednesse of the ladie, then to his innocencie) conueighed him selfe from that place, and so soone as hee coulde, hee wente out of the palace, and fledde home to his owne house, where without any further aduise, he placed his children on horsebacke, and so well as he coulde caried them to Callice. At the brute and noyse of the ladie, many people assembled: who seing and hearing the occasion of her crie, not onely beleued her wordes, but also affirmed, that the pompouse state of the erle, was vsed by him to bring to passe, th'effect of his desire. Then they ranne to the houses of the erle, in great furie, to arreste his persone: but not finding hym there, they firste sacked his houses, and afterwarde ouerthrewe them to the grounde. The newes hereof (so wicked as might be deuised) arriued at the king and dolphins campe, whereof they were so troubled and offended, as they condemned the earle, and all his progenie to perpetuall exile: promising great giftes and rewardes, to them that would present them quicke or dead. The erle being offended in his conscience, for that he was fled, innocent of the facte, made himself culpable therof, and arriued at Callice with his children, dissembling what he was, and sodainlye passed ouer into England, and in poore apparell, trauielled yp to London. And before he entred the citie, he gaue his children diuers admonicions, but specially of two things: First, that they should beare patiently the pouertie, wherunto fortune (without their offence) had brought them. Afterwarde, that wisely they should take hede, at no time to manifeste and declare from whence they came, and whose children they were, as they loued the price of their owne lyues. The sonne was named Lewes, almoste of the age of nyne yeares, and the doughter call-

ed Violenta, was about the age of vii. bothe whiche chyldren, as their age could suffer them, did well obserue their fathers hest, as afterwarde it did right wel appeare. And because that this might the better be brought to passe, it semed good vnto him, to alter their names, naming the son Perotto, and the doughter Gianetta. And when they were arriued at London, in maner of beggers, they craued their almosse, and being by fortune for that purpose, one morning at a church doore, it came to passe that a great lady, which was one of the marshalles of Englandes wiues, in going out of the church, sawe the erle and his two litle children begging their almosse, of whom she demaunded, what countrie man he was, and whether those children were his owne, or not. To whom the erle answered, that he was a Picarde, and by reason of a wicked facte, done by his eldest sonne (that was an unhappie boye) he was forced to departe his countrie, with those his two children. The ladie whiche was pitifull, fixed her eyes vpon the girle, who pleased her verie much, because she was beautifull, gentil, and amiable, saying: "Good man, if thou be content to leaue vnto mee, this thy litle doughter, which hath a good face, I will willingly take her, and if she become a duetifull maiden, when shee is mariagable, I wil marie her in honest wise." This demaunde greatly pleased the erle, who redely aunswered, that hee was contented, and with teares trickeling downe his eyes he deliuered and commended his pretie doughter vnto her. And when he had thus well bestowed her, he determined to tarrie no longer there, but in begging his almosse, traueiled through the countrie, with his sonne Perotto, and went into Wales, not without great labour and paine, as one neuer accustomed to trauayle on foote. Where dwelte one other of the kyng of Englandes marshalles, that was of great authoritie, and kepte a noble house: to whose courte the erle and his sonne oftentimes repayred, to practise and begge their liuing: where one of the marshalles sonnes, and other gentlemens chyldren, doying certayne chydyshe sportes and pastymes, as to runne and leape, Perotto began to entermedle hym selfe amonges them (who in those games dyd so excellentlye well, as none was his better) whiche thyng diuers tymes the marshall perceiuing, well pleased with the order of the chylde, asked of

whence hee was. It was tolde him, that hee was a poore man's sonne, which many tymes came thyther, to begge his almose. The marshall desiring to haue the childe, the erle, whiche prayed vnto God for nothing els, liberallye gaue hym vnto hym, although it greued hym to departe from him. The erle then hauing bestow- ed his sonne and his doughter, determined no longer to tarrie in England, but so well as he coulde, he passed ouer into Irelande, and when he was arriued at Stanforde, he placed him selfe in the seruice of a man of armes, belonging to an erle of that countrie, doing all thinges that did belong vnto a seruing man, or page: and not knowen to any man, hee continued there a long time, with great paine and toile. Violenta named Gianetta, that dwelt with the ladie at London, grewe so in yeares, in beautie, in personage, and in such grace and fauour of her lord and lady, and of all the reste of the house, and so well beloued of al them that knew her, that it was meruailous to see. All men that sawe her maners and countenance, iudged her to be worthy of great honour and possessions, by reason wherof, the lady that receiued her of her father, not knowing what shee was, but by his reporte, purposed to marrie her honourable, according to her worthinesse. But God the rewarder of all mens desertes, knowing her to be a noble woman, and to beare (without cause) the penaunce of an other man's offence, disposed her otherwise, and to the intent, that this noble gentlewoman, might not come into the handes of a man of ill condicions, it must be supposed, that that whiche came to passe was by God's own will and pleasure, suffred to be done. The gentlewoman, with whome Gianetta dwelte, had but one onely sonne by her husband, whiche both shee and the father, loued verie dearelye: as well because hee was a sonne, as also that in vertue and good merites hee greatlye excelled. For hee surpassed all other in good condicions, valiaunce, goodnes, and beautie of personage, being about sixe yeares elder then Gianetta: who seying the mayden, to be both fayre and comelye, became so farre in loue with her, as he esteemed her aboue all thinges of the worlde. And because he thought her to be of base parentage, he durst not demaunde her of his father and mother to wyfe. But fearing that he should lose their fauour, he kept his loue secret, wherby he was

worse tormented, then if it had bene openly knowen. And thereby it chaunced, through loue's malice, he fel sore sicke: for whose preseruacion, were many phisitions sent for, who marking in him all signes and tokens of sickenes, and not knowing the disease, were altogether doubtfull of his health: whereof the father and mother tooke so great sorowe and grieve, as was possible, and many times with pitifull praiers, they demaunded of him the occasion of his disease. To whome he gaue for aunswere, nothing els but heauie sighes, and that he was like to consume, and die for weake-nesse. It chaunced vpon a daye there was brought vnto him a phisicion, that was very yonge, but in his science profoundlie learned, and as he was holding him by the poulces, Gianetta (who for his mother's sake, attended him very carefully) entred vpon occasion into the chamber, where he lay sicke, and so sone as the yonge gentleman perceiued her, and that she spake neuer a woorde, or made any signe, or demonstration towards him, he felte in his hart to arise his most amorous desire, wherefore his poulces began to beate aboue their common custome: whiche thing the phisicion immediatly perceiued and marueiled, standing still to see howe long that fitte would continue. Gianetta was no soner gone out of the chamber, but the beating of the poulces ceased: wherefore the phisicion thought, that he had founde out some part of the gentleman's disease, and a litle while after, seming to take occasion to speake to Gianetta holding him still by the armes, he caused her to bee called in, and she incontinently came, but she was no soner entred the chambre, but the poulces began to beate againe: and when she departed, the beating ceased. Wherupon the phisicion was throughly perswaded, that he vnderstode the effecte of his sickenes, and therewithall rose vp and taking the father and mother aside, sayde vnto them: "The health of your sonne doth not consiste in the helpe of phisicions, but remaineth in the handes of Gianetta your maide, as I haue perceiued by moste manifest signes, which maide the yong man feruently doth loue. And yet (so farre as I perceiue) the maide doth not knowe it: you therfore vnderstand now what to doe, if you loue his life." The gentleman and his wife hearing this, was somewhat satisfied: for so muche as remedy might be founde to saue his life, although it

grieved them greatly, that the thing whereof they doubted, should come to passe, whiche was the mariage betwene Gianetta and their sonne. The phisicion departed, and they repaired to their sicke sonne, the mother saying vnto him in this wyse: "My sonne, I would neuer haue thought, that thou wouldest haue kept secret from mee, any parte of thy desire: specially, seing that without the same, thou doest remaine in daunger of death. For thou art, or ought to be assured, that there is nothing that may be gotten, for thy contentment, whatsoeuer it had bene, but it should haue bene provided for thee, in as ample maner as for my selfe. But sithe thou hast thus done, it chaunceth that our Lord God, hath shewed more mercy vpon thee, then thou hast done vpon thy selfe. And to the ende thou shalt not die of this disease, he hath declared vnto me the cause of the same: whiche is none other, but the great loue that thou bearest to a yonge maiden, wheresoeuer she bee. And in deede thou oughtest not to be ashamed, to manifest thy loue, because it is meete and requisite for thyne age. For if I wist thou couldest not loue, I would the lesse esteeme thee. Now then my good sonne, be not afraid, franckly to discouer thine affection. Drive away the furie and thought which thou hast taken, and wherof this sickenes commeth, and comfort thy selfe. Being assured, that thou shalt desire nothing at my handes, that may be done, but it shall be accomplished of mee, that loueth thee better then mine owne life: and therefore expell from thee this shame and feare. And spare not to tell me, if I be able to doe any thing, in that whiche thou louest. And if thou perceiue, that I be not carefull to bring it to passe, repute me for the cruellest mother that euer bare childe." The yonge gentleman hearing these woordes of his mother, was first ashamed, but after thinking with him selfe, that none was so well able to pleasure him as shee, (driving away all shame) sayed to her in this wise: "Madame, there is none other thing that hath made me to kepe my loue so secrete, but that, whiche I see by commune prooffe in many, who after they be growen to yeares of discretion, doe neuer remembre that they haue bene yonge. But for so much as herein I doe see your ladship discrete and wyse, I will not onely affirme that to be true, whiche you haue perceiued in me, but also I will confesse

what it is, vpon condicion that the effect shall folowe your promise, so farre as lieth in you, and whereby you shalbe able to recouer my life." Whereunto the mother trusting to much in that, which she ought not to haue accomplished, for certaine considerations, which afterwarde came into her minde, answered him liberally: "That he might boldly discouer all his desire, and that forthwith she would bring the same to passe." "Madame (sayde the yonge man then) the great beautie, and commendable qualities of your maiden Gianetta, whom as yet not only I haue no power to intreate, to take pitie vpon me, but also I haue made no wight in the world, priuie of this my loue. The not disclosing and secrecie of whose loue, hath brought me in case you see: and if so be the thing, whiche you haue promised, doe not by one meane or other come to passe, assure your selfe that my life is but shorte." The ladie knowing, that it was more tyme to comforte, then to reprehende, sayd vnto him smiling: "Alas, my sonne, were you sicke for this? Bee of good chere, and when you are whole let me alone." The yonge gentleman being put in good hope, shewed in litle time tokens and signes of great amendement. Whereof the mother was marueilous glad, disposing her selfe to proue, howe she might obserue that which she had promised. And on a day calling Gianetta vnto her, demaunded in gentle wise, by waye of mery talke, "If she had not gotten her a loue." Gianetta with face al blushing, aunswered: "Madame, I haue no nede therof, and much more vnsemely for so poore a damosell as I am, to meditate or thincke vpon louers, whiche am banished from my frendes and kinsfolke, remaining in seruice as I doe." To whom the lady saide: "If you haue none, wee will bestowe one vpon you, whiche shall content your minde, and make your life more delectable and pleasaunt: for it is not meete that so faire a maide as you be, should continue without a loue." Whereunto Gianetta answered: "Madame, waying with my selfe, that you haue taken me from my poore father, and brought me vp as your doughter, it becommeth me to do that whiche pleaseth you. Notwithstanding, I intende neuer to make any complaint to you for lacke of such, but if it please you, to geue me a husbände, I purpose dutifully to loue and honour him. For my progenitours haue

left me none other inheritaunce but honestie, whiche I meane to kepe, so long as my life indureth." These woordes to the ladye, semed contrary to that whiche shee desired to knowe, to atchieue her promyse made to her sonne, although (lyke a wyse ladie) to her selfe, shee greatly praysed the damosell, and sayde vnto her. " But Gianetta, what if my lorde the kyng (whiche is a younge prince, and you a fayre mayden) woulde take pleasure in your loue, woulde you refuse him?" Whereunto the mayde sodaynlye aunswered. " The kyng maye well force mee, but by consent he shall neuer obtayne the thing of mee that is dishoneste." The ladye conceuyng the courage, and stoutnesse of the mayden in good parte, sayde no more vnto her, but thinking to put the matter in prooffe, she tolde her sonne, that when he was whole, she woulde put them both in a chamber that he mighte haue his pleasure vppon her. For she thought it dishonest to intreate her maide for her sonne, because it was the office of a ruffian. The yong man was nothing contented therewith, whereby hee sodainlye waxed sicke againe: which the ladye perceiuinge, opened her whole intent to Gianetta: but finding her more constant then euer she was before, she told her husband all that she had done, whoe agreed (although against their willes) to giue her to be his wife, thinkinge it better (their sonne lyuing) to haue a wife vnagreeable to his estate, then to suffer him to die for her sake. Which after great consultation, they concluded, whereof Gianetta was maruelouslye well pleased, and with deuout harte gaue thanks to God for that he had not forgotten her. And yet for all that, shee woulde neuer name her selfe otherwise, then the doughter of a Picarde. The yong sonne waxed whole incontinently, and was married, the best contented man aliue, and began to dispose himselfe, louingly to lead his life with her. Perotto which did remaine in Wales with the other marshall of the king of England, semblably increased, and was welbeloued of his maister, and was a very comely and valiaunt personage, that the like of him was not to be found in all the island, in such wise as at torneis, iustes, and other factes of armes, there was none in al the cuntrye, comparable vnto him: wherefore by the name of Perotto the Picarde, hee was known and renowned. And like as God had not forgotten his sister, euen

so he shewed his mercifull remembraunce of him. For a certaine plague and mortalitie, happened in that countrie, which consumed the one halfe of the people there: besides that the most part of them that liued, were fledde for feare into other countries, wherby the whole prouince, seemed to be abandoned and desolate. Of which plague, the marshall his maister, his wife, and his sonne and many other brothers, neuewes, and kinsfolke died, of whom remained no more, but his onely daughter, which was mariageable, and some of his seruantes, together with Perotto, whom (after the plagues was somewhat ceased) the yong gentlewoman toke for her husband, through the counsaile and consente of certaine of the countrie people that were aliue, because he was a valiaunt and honest personage, and of all that inheritaunce which her father lefte, shee made him lord. A litle while after, the king of Englande vnderstanding that the marshall was dead, and knowing the valour and stoutnesse of Perotto the Picarde, he made him to supplye the rowme of the deade marshall. In this sort in short time, it chaunced to the two innocent children of the Erle of Angiers, which were left by him as lost and quite forlorne: It was then the xviii. yeare sithens the Erle fledde from Paris, hauing in miserable sorte suffred manye aduentures. Who seinge himselfe to begin to waxe olde, was desirous (being yet in Irelande) to knowe (if hee could) what was become of his children. Wherefore, perceyuinge that he was wholly altred from his wonted forme, and feeling himselfe more lustie (throughe the longe exercise and labour which he had susteined in seruice) then he was in the idle time of his youth, he departed from his maister (verye poore and in ill apparel) with whom hee had continued in seruice a long time, and came into England to that place where he had left Perotto, and founde him to be marshall of the countrie, and saw that he was in health, lustie, and a comelye personage, which reioysed him maruelously, but he would not make himselfe to be knowen to him, till hee had seene what was become of his doughter Gianetta: wherfore taking his journey, he rested in no place, till he came to London. And there secretly inquiring of the lady, with whom he had left his daughter, and of her state, he learned that his doughter was her sonnes wife, whereof hee toke exceding great pleasure. And from that

time forth, he compted his aduersities past, as nothing, sith he had found his children liuing and in such great honour. And desirous to see her (began like a poore man) to harbour himselfe neare vnto her house, whereuppon a certaine daye, beinge seene of Giacchetto Lamyens: (for that was the name of the husbände of Gianetta,) who hauinge pitie vppon him because he was poore and old, commaunded one of his seruaunts, to haue him into the house and to giue him meate for God's sake, which the seruaunt willingly did accomplish. Gianetta had many children by Giacchetto, of which the eldest was but eight yeares olde: the fayrest and beste fauoured children of the worlde. Who when they sawe the erle eate meate, they all came about him and began to make much of him, as though by nature's instruction they had knowen him to be their graundfather. And hee knowinge his nephewes, began to shew them tokens of loue and kindnesse. By reason whereof the children would not go from him, although their gouernour did call them away: wherfore the mother beinge tolde the same, came oute of a chamber vnto the place where the erle was, and threatned to beate them if they would not do as their maister bad them. The children began to crie, and said that they would tary by that good man, that loued them better then their maister did, wherat the lady and the erle began to laugh. The erle not as a father but like a poore man, rose vp to doe honour to his daughter because shee was a noble woman: conceyuing marueilous ioy in his minde to see her: but she knewe him not at all, neither at that instant, nor after, because he was so wonderfully transformed and chaunged from that forme he was wonte to be: Like one that was old and gray headed, hauinge a bearde leane and weather beaten, resembling rather a common personne then an erle. And the ladye seinge that the children woulde not departe from him, but still cryed when they were fetched awaye, shee willed the maister to let them alone. The children remayning in this sort with the honest poore man, the father of Giacchetto came in the meane time, and vnderstode this of their maister: He that cared not for Gianetta, said, " Let them alone with a mischief, to keepe companye with beggers, of whom they come: for of the mothers side, they be but verlettes children, and therefore it is no marueile, though

they loue their company." The erle hearing those words, was very sorrowfull, notwithstanding (holding downe his head) he suffred that iniurie, as well as he had done manye other. Giacchetto which knew the mirth and ioy that the children made to the poore man (althoughe he was offended with those words) neuerthelesse, made as much of the poore erle as he did before. And when hee sawe him to weepe he commaunded that if the honest poore man would dwel there to do some seruice, he should be reteyned. Who aunswared, that he would tarrie there with a good will, but he said that he coulde do nothinge els but keepe horse, whereunto he was accustomed all the dayes of his life. To whom a horse was appointed to keepe, and dailye when he had dressed his horse, he gaue himselfe to play with the children. Whiles that fortune thus dealt (according to the maner abouesaid) with the erle of Angiers and his children, it chaunced that the French king (after many truces made with the Almaynes) died, and in his place was crowned his sonne, whose wife shee was that caused the erle to be banished. When the last truce with the Almaynes was expired, the warres began to grow more sharpe, for whose aide the king of England sent vnto him (as to his new kinseman) a greate number of people vnder the gouernement of Perotto his marshall, and of Giacchetto Lamyens, sonne of his other marshall, with whom the poore erle went: and not knowen of any manne, remained a greate while in the campe as a seruaunt, where notwithstanding, like a valiaunt man, with his aduise and deedes he accomplished notable thinges (more then hee was required.) It chaunced that in the time of the warres, the Frenche queene was very sore sicke, and perceyuing herselfe at the point of death, repenting her of all her sinnes, and was confessed deuoutly to the archbishop of Roane, who of all men was reputed an holye and vertuous man: and amonges all her other sinnes she tolde him of the great wronge that she had done to the erle of Angiers, and was not onely contented to reuale the same to him alone, but also rehearsed the whole matter before many other personages of great honour, desiring them that they would worke so with the king, that if the erle were yet liuinge or anye of his children, they might be restored to their state againe. Not long after the queene departed, and

was honourable buried. Which confession reported to the kinge, (after certaine sorowfull sighes, for the iniuries done to the valiaunt man) hee made proclamation throughout all the campe and in many other places, that whosoever could bring forth the erle of Angiers, or any of his children, shoulde for euery of them receiue a great rewarde, because he was innocent of that matter for which he was exiled, by the onely confession of the queene : and that he intended to exalte him to his former estate, and more higher then euer hee was. Which thing the erle hearing (being in the habite of a seruauant) knowing it to be true, by and by he wente to Giacchetto, and prayed him to repaire to Perotto that they might come together, because he would manifest vnto them the thing which the kinge sent to seeke for. And when they were all three assembled together in a chamber the erle saide to Perotto, that now he thought to let him vnderstand what he was, saying these woordes : " Perotto, Giacchetto whoe thou seest here hath espoused thy sister and neuer had yet any dowrie. And because she maye not be destitute of her dowrie, I purpose that he and none other shall haue the reward, which the king hath promised to be so great. Thou shalt manifest thy selfe Perotto, to be the sonne of the erle of Angiers, and Violenta the wife of Giacchetto to be thy sister, and me to be the erle of Angiers thy father." Perotto hearing this and stedfastly beholding him, began to know him, and weeping, threw himselfe downe at his feete, and afterwards imbracing him, said : " My deare father, you are right hartely welcome." Giacchetto hearing first what the erle had saide, and after seinge what Perotto did, he was incontinently surprised with so great marueile and ioye that he knew not what to do : notwithstandinge, geuinge credite to his words, as being ashamed of the opprobrious talke, which he had vsed towards the erle, as to a seruauant, weeping, fell downe at his feete and humbly asked pardon for all his rashe behauiours towards him : which was curteously graunted vnto him by the erle, who toke him vp. And after euerye of them had a while debated of their fortune, and had well bewailed the same, and reioysed one with another, Perotto and Giacchetto would haue newly apparrelled the erle, but he in no wise would suffer them. And beinge desirous that

Giacchetto mighte haue assurance of the rewarde promised, he woulde that he shoulde first present him to the king after that sort in the habite of a seruaunte as he was, that hee mighte make him the more ashamed. Then Giacchetto with the erle (and Perotto after) came before the king, and offred to present the erle and his children if it should please him to reward him according to the proclamation. The king incontinently caused to be brought forth a reward of marueilous value, (as Giacchetto thoughte) and commaunded him forthwith to present the erle and his children according to his promise. Giacchetto then tourned about, and placed before him the erle his seruaunt, and Perotto, saying: "Sir, beholde the father and the sonne, the doughter which is my wyfe, is not here. But by God's helpe you shal see her shortly." The king hearing this, behelde the erle: and albeit he was so greatlye chaunged from his former fauour, after hee had well viewed him, he knew him, and with teares standinge in his eyes, hee caused the erle to rise vp, that kneeled before him, kissing and imbrasing him, and very graciouslye receiued Perotto: and commaunded forthwith that the erle should be restored to apparell, seruaunt, horses and furniture, according to his state and degree, which incontinentlye was done: And moreouer the kinge greatlye honoured Giacchetto, and forthwith desired to know all their fortunes passed. And when Giacchetto had taken the great reward for bringing forth the erle and his children, the erle said vnto him: "Take these royall rewards of the king, my soueraigne lord, and remember to tel thy father, that thy children, his nephewes and mine, be no beggers borne of their mother's syde." Giacchetto toke the reward, and caused his wife and his mother in lawe to come to Paris: likewise thither came the wife of Perotto, where, with great ioy and triumphe, they taried a certaine space wyth the erle, to whom the kinge had rendred all his goodes, and had placed him in greater auctoritie, then euer hee was before. Then euery of them toke their leaue and retourned home to their owne houses: and from that time forth the said erle, to thende of his life, liued in Paris, in greater honour and aucthority, then euer he did before.

THE THIRTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

Gilletta a phisition's doughter of Narbon, healed the French King of a fistula, for reward whereof she demaunded Beltramo counte of Rossiglione to husband. The counte being married against his will, for despite fled to Florence and loued another. Giletta his wife, by pollicie founde meanes to lye with her husbände, in place of his louer, and was begotten with childe of two sonnes: which knowen to her husband, he receiued her againe, and afterwards he liued in great honour and felicitie.

IN Fraunce there was a gentleman called Isnardo, the counte of Rossiglione, who because he was sickely and diseased, kepte alwayes in his house a phisition, named maister Gerardo of Narbona. This counte had one onely sonne called Beltramo, a very yonge childe, amiable and fayre. With whom there was nourished and brought vppe, many other children of his age: amongeswhom one of the doughters of the said phisition, named Giletta, who feruently fill in loue with Beltramo, more then was meete for a maiden of her age. This Beltramo, when his father was deade, and left vnder the royall custody of the king, was sente to Paris, for whose departure the maiden was very pensife. A litle while after, her father being likewise deade, shee was desirous to go to Paris, onelye to see the yonge counte, if for that purpose she could get any good occasion. But being diligently looked vnto by her kinsfolke (because she was riche and fatherlesse) she could see no conuenient waye for her intended iourney: and being now marriageable, the loue she bare to the counte was neuer out of her remembraunce, and refused manye husbändes with whom her kinsfolke would haue matched her, without making them priuie to the cause of her refusall. Now it chaunced that she burned more in loue with Beltramo then euer shee did before, because she hearde tell that hee was growen to the state of a goodly yong gentleman. She heard by report, that the French king had a swelling vpon his breast, which by reason of ill cure was growen to be a fistula, which did put him to marueilous paine and grieve, and that there was no

phisition to be found (although many were proued) that could heale it, but rather did impaire the griefe and made it worse and worse. Wherefore the king, like one in dispaire, would take no more counsell or helpe. Wherof the yong mayden was wonderfull glad, thinckinge to haue by this meanes, not onely a lawfull occasion to go to Paris, but if the disease were such (as she supposed,) easelye to bringe to passe that shee mighte haue the counte Beltramo to her husbände. Whereuppon with such knowledge as she had learned at her father's hands before time, shee made a powder of certaine herbes, which she thought meete for that disease and rode to Paris. And the first thing she went about when she came thither was to see the counte Beltramo. And then she repayred to the king, praying his grace to vouchsafe to shew her his griefe. The king perceyuing her to be a fayre yonge maiden and a comelie, would not hide it, but opened the same vnto her. So soone as shee saw it shee put him in comforte, that shee was able to heale him, saying: "Sir, if it maye please your grace, I truste in God without anye greate paine vnto your highnesse, within eighte dayes to make you whole of this disease." The king hearing her say so, began to mocke her, saying: "How is it possible for thee, beinge a yong woman, to do that which the beste renowmed phisitions in the world can not?" Hee thancked her for her good will and made her a direct aunswere, that hee was determined no more to followe the counsaile of any phisition. Whereunto the maiden aunswared: "Sir, you dispise my knowledge because I am yonge and a woman, but I assure you that I do not minister phisicke by profession, but by the aide and helpe of God: and with the cuninge of maister Gerardo of Narbona, who was my father, and a phisition of great fame so longe as he liued." The king hearing those words, sayd to himselfe: "This woman peradventure, is sente vnto me of God, and therefore why should I disdaine to proue her cuninge? for so muche as she promiseth to heale me within a litle space, without any offence or griefe vnto mee." And being determined to proue her, he said: "Damosel, if thou doest not heale me, but make me to breake my determination, what wilt thou shal folow therof." "Sir," said the maiden: "Let me be kept in what guard and keeping you list: and if I do not heale you with-

in these eight dayes, let me be burnt: but if I do heale your grace what recompence shall I haue then?" To whom the kinge answered: "Because thou art a maiden and vnmarried, if thou heale me according to thy promise, I wil bestow thee vppon some gentleman, that shalbe of right good worship and estimation." To whom she aunswared: "Sir, I am very well content that you bestow me in mariage: but I beseech your grace let me haue such a husband as I my selfe shall demaund, without presumption to any of your children or other of your blood." Which request the king incontinently graunted. The yong maiden began to minister her phisicke, and in short space before her appointed time, she had thoroughly cured the king. And when the king perceiued himselfe whole, said vnto her: "Thou hast well deserued a husbande (Giletta) euen such a one as thy selfe shalt chose." "I haue then my lord (quoth she) deserued the countie Beltramo of Rossiglione, whom I haue loued from my youth." The king was very loth to graunt him vnto her: but for that he had made a promise which he was loth to breake, he caused him to be called forth, and said vnto him: "Sir countie, knowing full well that you are a gentleman of great honour, oure pleasure is, that you returne home to your owne house, to order your estate according to your degree: and that you take with you a damosell which I haue appointed to be your wife." To whom the countie gaue his humble thanks, and demaunded what she was? "It is she (quoth the king) that with her medecines hath healed me." The counte knew her wel and had already seen her, although she was faire, yet knowing her not to be of a stocke conuenable to his nobility, skornefully said vnto the king, "Will you then (sir) giue me a phisition to wife? It is not the pleasure of God that euer I should in that wise bestow my selfe." To whom the king said: "Wilt thou then, that wee should breake our faith, which wee to recouer health haue giuen to the damosell, who for a reward asked thee to husband?" "Sir (quoth Beltramo) you may take from me all that I haue, and giue my person to whom you please because I am your subiect: but I assure you I shal neuer be contented with that mariage." "Wel, you shall haue her, (said the king) for the maiden is faire and wise, and loueth you most intirely: thinking verely you shal

leade a more ioyful life with her, then with a lady of a greater house." The countie therewithal held his peace, and the kinge made great preparation for the mariage. And when the appointed day was come, the counte in the presence of the king (although it were against his wil) married the maiden, who loued him better then her owne selfe. Which done, the counte determining before what he would do, praied licence to retourne to his countrye to consummat the mariage. And when he was on horsebacke hee went not thither but toke his iourney into Tuscan, where vnderstanding that the Florentines and Senois were at warres, he determined to take the Florentines parte, and was willingly receiued and honourable intertaigned, and was made captaine of a certaine number of men, continuing in their seruice a long time. The new married gentlewoman, scarce contented with his vnkindnes, hopinge by her well doinge to cause him to retourne into his countrye, went to Rossiglione, where she was receiued of all his subiectes for their lady. And perceyuing that through the countes absence all thinges were spoiled and out of order, shee like a sage ladye, with greate diligence and care, disposed his thinges in order againe: whereof the subiectes reioysed very much, bearing to her their hartie loue and affection, greatly blaming the counte because he coulde not content himselfe with her. This notable gentlewoman hauing restored all the countie againe to their auncient liberties, sent word to the counte her husband, by two knights, to signifie vnto him, that if it were for her sake that hee had abandoned his countie, vppon retourne of aunsweare, she to do him pleasure, would departe from thence. To whom he chorlishly replied: " Let her do what she liste: for I do purpose to dwell with her, when she shall haue this ring (meaning a ring which he wore) vpon her finger, and a sonne in her armes begotten by mee." He greatly loued that ring, and kepte it very carefully, and neuer toke it from his finger, for a certaine vertue that he knew it had. The knights hearinge the harde condition of two thinges impossible: and seeinge that by them he could not be remoued from his determination, retourned againe to the lady, tellinge her his aunsweare: who, very sorrowfull, after shee had a good while bethoughte her, purposed to finde meanes to attaine the two thinges, that thereby

she might recouer her husbände. And hauinge aduised her selfe what to doe, shee assembled the noblest and chiefeste of her countrie, declaring vnto them in lamentable wyse what shee had alreadye done, to winne the loue of the counte, shewing them also what folowed thereof. And in the ende saide vnto theim, that shee was lothe the counte for her sake should dwell in perpetuall exile: therefore shee determined to spende the reste of her time in pilgrimages and deuotion, for preservation of her soule, prayinge them to take the charge and gouernemente of the countrie, and that they would let the counte vnderstande, that shee had forsaken his house, and was remoued farre from thence: with purpose neuer to returne to Rossiglione againe. Many teares were shed by the people, as she was speaking those wordes, and diuers supplications were made vnto him to alter his opinion, but all in vaine. Wherefore commending them all vnto God, she toke her way with her maide, and one of her kinsemen, in the habite of a pilgrime, well furnished with siluer and precious iewels: telling no man whither shee wente, and neuer rested till shee came to Florence: where arriuinge by fortune at a poore widowes house, shee contented her selfe with the state of a poore pilgrime, desirous to heare newes of her lord, whom by fortune she sawe the next day passing by the house (where she lay) on horsebacke with his company. And althoughe shee knewe him well enoughe, yet shee demaunded of the good wife of the house what hee was: who aunswared that hee was a straunge gentleman, called the counte Beltramo of Rossiglione, a curteous knight, and wel beloued in the city, and that he was maruelously in loue with a neighbour of her's, that was a gentlewoman, verye poore and of small substance, neuerthesse of right honest life and good report, and by reason of her pouerty was yet vnmarried, and dwelte with her mother, that was a wise and honest ladye. The countesse well noting these wordes, and by litle and litle debating euery particular point thereof, comprehending the effecte of those newes, concluded what to do, and when she had well vnderstanded which was the house, and the name of the ladye, and of her doughter that was beloued of the counte: vppon a day repaired to the house secretly in the habite of a pilgrime, where

finding the mother and daughter in poore estate amonges their familie, after she had saluted them, told the mother that shee had to saye vnto her. The gentlewoman rysing vp, curteously intertayned her, and being entred alone in a chamber, they sate downe, and the countesse began to speake vnto her in this wise. "Madame, me thincke that ye be one vpon whom fortune doth frowne, so wel as vpon me: but if you please, you may both comfort me and your selfe." The lady answered, "That there was nothing in the world wherof she was more desirous then of honest comfort." The countesse proceeding in her talke, said vnto her. "I haue neede now of your fidelitie and truste, whereuppon if I do staye, and you deceiue mee, you shall both vndoe me and your selfe." "Tell me then what it is hardlie (said the gentlewoman:) for you shall neuer bee deceiued of mee." Then the countesse beganne to recite her whole estate of loue: tellinge her what she was, and what had chaunced to that present daye, in such perfite order as the gentlewoman beleeuinge her, because shee had partly heard report before, began to haue compassion vppon her, and after that the countesse had rehearsed the whole circumstaunce, she continued her purpose, saying: "Now you haue heard amonges other my troubles, what two things they bee, which behoueth mee to haue, if I doe recover my husband, which I know none can helpe me to obtaine, but onelye you, if it be true that I heare, which is, that the counte my husband, is farre in loue with your daughter." To whom the gentlewoman sayd: "Madame, if the counte loue my daughter, I knowe not, albeit the likelyhoode is greate: but what am I able to doe, in that which you desire?" "Madame, aunswared the countesse, I will tell you: but first I will declare what I meane to doe for you, if my purpose be brought to effecte: I see your faire daughter of good age, readie to marie, but as I vnderstande the cause why shee is vnmarried, is the lacke of substance to bestowe her. Wherefore I purpose, for recompence of the pleasure, which you shall doe for mee, to giue so much readie money to marie her honourable, as you shall thincke sufficient." The countesse' offer was very well liked of the ladie, because she was poore: yet hauing a noble hart, she said vnto her. "Madame, tell me wherein I may do you seruice: and if

it be a thinge honest, I will gladlye performe it, and the same being brought to passe, do as it shall please you." Then said the countesse: " I thincke it requisite, that by some one whom you truste, you giue knowledge to the counte my husband, that your doughter is, and shalbe at his commaundement: and to the intent she may be well assured that hee loueth her in deede aboue anye other, she must pray him to sende her a ring that hee weareth vppon his finger, which ring as she knoweth, he loueth very dearely: and when he sendeth the ringe, you shal giue it vnto me, and afterwards sende him woorde, that your doughter is readie to accomplishe his pleasure, and then you shall cause him secretelye to come hither, and place me by him (in steede of your doughter) peraduenture God will giue me the grace, that I may be with child, and so hauing this ring on my finger, and the childe in mine armes begotten by him, I maye recouer him, and by your meanes continue with him, as a wife ought to do with her husbände." This thinge seemed difficulte vnto the gentlewoman: fearing that there woulde folowe reproche vnto her doughter. Notwithstandinge, considering what an honest part it were, to be a meane that the good ladie might recouer her husbände, and that shee mighte doe it for a good purpose, hauinge affiaunce in her honest affection, not onely promised the countesse to bring this to passe, but in fewe dayes with greate subiltie, folowing the order wherein she was instructed, she had gotten the ringe, although it was with the countes ill will, and toke order that the countesse in steede of her doughter did lye with him. And at the first meeting, so effectuously desired by the counte: God so disposed the matter that the countesse was begotten with child, of two goodly sonnes, and her deliury chaunced at the due time. Whereuppon the gentlewoman, not onelye contented the countesse at that time with the companie of her husbände, but at manye other times so secretly as it was neuer knowen: the counte not thinkinge that he had lien with his wife, but with her whom he loued. To whom at his vprising in the morning, he vsed many curteous and amiable woords, and gaue diuers faire and precious iewels, which the countesse kept most carefully: and when she perceiued herselfe with child, she determined no more to trouble

the gentlewoman, but said vnto her. "Madame, thanckes be to God and you, I haue the thing that I desire, and euen so it is time to recompence your desert, that afterwards I may depart." The gentlewoman said vnto her, that if she had done anye pleasure agreeable to her minde, she was right glad thereof which she did, not for hope of reward, but because it appertayned to her by well doing so to doe. Whereunto the countesse said: "Your sayinge pleaseth me well, and for my part, I doe not purpose to giue vnto you the thing you shal demaunde in reward, but for consideration of your well doing, which dutie forceth me to do." The gentlewoman then constrained with necessity, demaunded of her with great bashfulnesse, an hundred poundes to marie her daughter. The countesse perceiuinge the shamefastnesse of the gentlewoman, and her curteous demaunde, gaue her fife hundred poundes, and so many faire and costly iewels, as almost amounted to like valour. For which the gentlewoman more then contented, gaue most hartly thanks to the countesse, who departed from the gentlewoman and retourned to her lodging. The gentlewoman to take occasion from the counte of anye farther repaire, or sendinge to her house, toke her doughter with her, and went into the country to her frends. The counte Beltramo, within fewe dayes after, being reuoked home to his owne house by his subiectes, (hearinge that the countesse was departed from thence) retourned. The countesse knowinge that her husbände was goone from Florence and retourned home, was verye gladde, continuing in Florence till the time of her childbedde, being brought a bedde of twoo sonnes, whiche were very like vnto their father, and caused them carefully to be noursed and brought vp, and when she sawe time, she toke her iourney (vnknownen to anie) and arriued at Montpellier, and resting her selfe there for certayne dayes, hearing newes of the counte, and where he was, and that vpon the daye of Al Sainctes, he purposed to make a great feaste and assembly of ladies and knightes, in her pilgrimes weede she repaired thither. And knowing that they were all assembled, at the palace of the counte, readie to sitte downe at the table, shee passed through the people without chaunge of apparell, with her twoo sonnes in her armes: and when shee was come vp into the

hall, euen to the place where the counte sat, falling downe prostrate at his feete, weeping, saying vnto hym: " My lorde, I am thy poore infortunate wyfe, who to th'intent thou mightest retourne and dwel in thine owne house, haue bene a great whyle begging aboute the worlde. Therefore I nowe beseche thee, for the honoure of God, that thou wilt obserue the conditions, which the twoo (knightes that I sent vnto thee) did commaunde me to doe: for beholde, here in myne armes, not onely one sonne begotten by thee, but twayne, and likwyse thy ryng. It is nowe time then (if thou kepe promise) that I should be receiued as thy wyfe." The counte hearing this, was greatly astonned, and knewe the ryng, and the children also, they were so like hym. " But tell me (quod he) howe is this come to passe?" The countesse to the great admiration of the counte, and of all those that were in presence, rehersed vnto them in order all that, whiche had bene done, and the whole discourse thereof. For which cause the counte knowing the thinges she had spoken to be true (and perceiuing her constant minde and good witte, and the twoo faire young boyes to kepe his promise made, and to please his subiectes, and the ladies that made sute vnto him, to accept her from that tyme foorth as his lawefull wyfe, and to honour her) abiected his obstinate rigour: causing her to rise vp, and imbraced and kissed her, acknowledging her againe for his lawefull wyfe. And after he had apparelled her according to her estate, to the great pleasure and contentation of those that were there, and of al his other frendes not onely that daye, but many others, he kept great chere, and from that time forth, hee loued and honoured her, as his dere spouse and wyfe.

THE THIRTY-NINTH NOUELL.

Tancredi Prince of Salerne, caused his doughter's louer to be slayne, and sente his harte vnto her in a cup of golde: whiche afterwarde she put into poysoned water, and drinking thereof died.

TANCREDI prince of Salerne, (an vniuersitie in the region of Italie) was a curteous lorde, and of gentle nature: had he not in his age imbrued his handes with the bloud of his owne doughter. It chaunced that this prince in al his life time, had but that doughter: but more happie had he ben if she had neuer ben borne. That doughter he loued so well, as a father might loue his childe: and for the tender loue he bare her, he was not able to suffer her to be out of his sight. And could not finde in his harte to marie her, although she had many yeres passed the time that she was mariageable: notwithstanding, in thende he gaue her to wife to one of the sonnes of the duke of Capua, with whom she continued no long time, but was a widowe, and then retourned vnto her fathers house againe. This ladie was very faire and comely of bodie and face, as any creature could be, yonge, lustie, and more wise peradventure then a woman ought to be. And thus dwelling with her louing father, she liued like a noble ladie, in great pleasure: and seing that her father for the loue he bare vnto her, had no mynde or care to marie her agayne, and also she thinking it skarce honest to require him thereunto, denised secretly (if it were possible) to retaine some valiaunt man to be her louer. And seyng manye gentlemen and others, frequenting her fathers courte (as we commonly see in the courtes of princes) and marking the behaiour and order of many (amonges all) there was a young man, one of her fathers seruautes that liked her well, whose name was Guiscardo, of very base birth (but in vertue and honest condicions more noble then the reste) and many times when she sawe him, she wonderfully delited in him, alwayes praying his doinges aboue all others. The younge man, not hauing good consideration of him selfe, perceiuing her feruent affection, so fixed his minde that he disposed the same vpon

nothing els but to loue her. One louing an other secretly in this sorte, and the ladie verie studious to finde occasion that she might talke with him, vnwilling to committe the secrecie of her loue to any man, she imagined a newe devise to geue him knowledge thereof. And wrote a letter signifying vnto him, what he should doe the next day, and howe he might vse himself to come to talke with her: and then putting the letter into the cane of a rede, she gaue it vnto Guiscardo in sporting wise, and said. "Thou shalt this night make a paire of bellowes for thy seruauent wherwith shee may kindle the fire." Guiscardo toke it, and thought that shee did not geue it vnto him, without some special purpose went to his chamber, and loking vpon the cane perceiued it to be hollowe, and openyng it founde the letter within whiche shee had written. And when he had well perused it, vnderstandyng the tenour thereof, hee thought hym selfe the happiest man in the worlde, and began to put hym selfe in readinesse, to mete with his ladie, by suche wayes and meanes, as shee had to him appointed. There was in a corner of the princes palace a caue, long time before made vnder the syde of a hille, whiche caue receiued light by certayne ventes made of force within the sayd mountaine, and because the same was not frequented and vsed, it was ouergrowen with busshes and thornes. Into which caue was a discent by a secrete payre of stayers, into one of the lowest chambers of the palaice, wherein the ladie lay, which was out of all men's minde, because it was not occupied many a day before, and shut vp with a very strong doore. But loue (in the eyes wherof nothing is so secrete but will come to knoweledge) had brought the same againe into the remembraunce of the amorous lady. The opening of which doore (that no man might knowe it) many dayes did trouble her wittes: afterwarde when she had founde the waye, she went downe alone into the caue, and viewing the vente, whereunto she had geuen order for Guiscardo to come, she tolde him of what height it was from the ground: for the execution whereof, Guiscardo prepared a rope with knots and degrees to goe vp and downe, and putting vpon him a leather coate, to kepe him from the thornes and bushes, went downe the next night at the saide vente, vnknownen of any man: and fastening

one of the endes of the rope, to the stocke of a tree, that grewe at the mouth of the vente, hee slipte downe into the caue, and taried there for the ladie, who the next daye faining her selfe to slepe after dinner, sent her maydes out of her chamber, and locked her selfe within alone: and then opened the doore, and went downe into the caue, where finding Guiscardo, they marueilously reioysed one with an other. And from thence went vp together into her chamber: where they remained togethers, the moste parte of that day, to their great delight. And hauing geuen good order for the affaires of their loue, and the secrete vse therof, Guiscardo retourned into the caue, and the ladie locked the doore, and came out amonges her maides. The next night after, Guiscardo issued out of the vente vpon the rope, wherewith he descended, and conueied him selfe into his chamber. And hauing learned the waye, he resorted thither many times after. But fortune enuious of that pleasure, so long and great, with dolorous successe, tourned the ioye of those twoo louers into heauie and sorowefull ende. The prince accustomed sometimes to resorte alone into his doughter's chamber, and there for a whyle to tarie and talke with her, and so to departe. Vpon a daye after dinner, when the ladie (whose name was Gismonda) was in the garden with all her maidens, he repaired vnknownen or seene of any man into her chamber. But being loth to trouble his doughter of her pleasure, and finding the wyndowes of her chamber shut and the curtens of her bedde drawen, he satte down vpon a stoole at the beddes feete, and leaning his head to the bedde the curteine drawen ouer him (as he had bene hidden of purpose) he fel a slepe. And the king being thus a slepe, Gismonda that (in euill time) the same day had appointed Guiscardo to come, left her maydens in the gardeine, and entred very secretly into her chamber, locking fast the doore after her, and not knowing any man to be there, shee opened the doore of the caue to Guiscardo, who was redie to wayte for her comming. Then they caste them selues vpon the bedde, as they were wonte to doe, solacing the time together, vntill it chaunced that the prince awaked, heard and sawe what Guiscardo and his doughter did. Whereof being verie sorowfull, he would vpon the first sight haue cried out: but that he thought

it better for that time to holde his peace, still to kepe him selfe secrete, to the intent that he might more priuēlie, and with lesse shame, accomlishe that which he purposed to do. The two louers continued togethers a great time, as they were wont to do, without any knoweledge of the prince his being there, and when they saw time, they went downe from the bedde: and Guiscardo retourning to the caue, shee went forth of her chamber, from whence Tancredi (as olde as he was) conueyed him selfe into the gardeine out at a wyndowe of the same, vnseen and not perceiued of any. Who like a pensife man, and carefull euen vnto death, repaired to his owne chamber, and the next night, about one of the clocke, he caused Guiscardo to be apprehended, by an order that he had prescribed, at his comming forth of the caue, euen clothed as he was, with his leather coate: and by two men was secretly conueyed to the prince. Who so sone as he sawe him, sayd vnto him with teares standing in his eies: "Guiscardo, the beneuolence and goodnes towardes thee, haue not merited this outrage and shame, that thou hast committed this daye in mine owne house, which I sawe with mine owne eyes." To whom Guiscardo gaue no other aunswere, but that loue was of greater force, then either any prince or hym selfe. Then the prince commaunded him to be kept, in a chamber adioyning. The next day the king (Gismonda being ignoraunt hereof) reuolued in his minde, diuers and sundrye matters, and after diner as he was accustomed, he wente into his doughter's chamber, and caused her to be called vnto him, and shutting the chamber doore, in lamentable speche sayd vnto her. "Gismonda, I had so much affiaunce and truste in thy vertue and honestie, that it coulde neuer haue entred into my mynde (althoughe it had bene tolde me, if I had not sene it with mine owne propre eyes) but that thou haddest not onely in deede, but also in thought, abandoned the companie of all men, except it had bene thy husbände: whereof I shalbe right pensife and sorowefull so longe as this litle remnant of life (that mine olde age doth preserue) indureth in mee. And sithe thou couldest not conteyne from suche dishonest loue, I woulde it had pleased God, that thou haddest taken a manne, equall to thyne estate. But amonges so many that do frequente

my court, thou hast chosen this young man Guiscardo, whose birthe is very vile and base, and brought vp (as it were for God's sake) from a childe to this present daye, in our court. For whiche consideration, I am verie sore disquieted, not knowing how to take this at thy handes: for with him (whom I haue caused to be taken this nighte in going out of the caue, and nowe kepte as prisoner) I haue already concluded what to do. But with thee what I shal do, God knoweth: of the one side, the loue that I still beare thee, more then any father euer bare to his doughter, doth drawe me: on the other side, a iust displeasure and indignation, taken for thy great follie, doth moue me. The one mocion would that I should pardon thee, the other forceth me against my nature, to be cruell vnto thee. Notwithstanding, before I doe make any certaine resolucion, I desire to heare what thou canst saye for thy selfe." When hee had spoken those woordes, he kissed her face, weping verie bitterly like a childe that had ben beaten. Gismonda hearing her father, and knowing that not only her secret loue was discovered, but also her loue Guiscardo to be in pryson, conceiued an inestimable sorowe, vttering the same many times, with outcries and schreches, according to the maner of women, howe beit, her great courage surpassed her weakenesse, and did sette a bolde face on the matter, with marueilous stoutnesse determining, before she made any sute for her selfe, no longer to liue, seing that her frende Guiscardo was alreadie dead. Wherefore not like a sorowefull woman, or one taken in any faulte, but as a desperate persone, with a drie and stoute countenance, not troubled or vexed, she said thus to her father: "I doe not purpose, deare father, to stande in deniall, nor yet by humble sute to make requeste: for the one wyll nothyng auayle mee, and the other is to none effecte. Moreouer I doe not intende by any meanes, to beseche your clemencie and loue towards mee, to be beneuolente and bontifull, but confessinge the trouthe, I will first with true reasons and argumentes, defende myne honour, and afterwarde prosecute in vertuous wyse, by effectes, the stoutnesse of my courage. True it is, that I haue loued and do loue Guiscardo, and will loue him so long as I liue, which shalbe but a litle time. And if so be that a woman may loue a man after death, I will not cease

to loue him. But womanly frailtie and feminine weakenesse hath not so much induced me hereunto, as the litle care you haue had to bestow me in mariage, and the great vertues that daily I haue seene in Guiscardo. You ought deare father to knowe, that your selfe is of fleshe, and of fleshe you haue engendred me your doughter, and not of stone or iron. In likewyse you ought, and must remember (although now you be arriued to olde yeares) what yonge folkes bee, and of what great power the lawe of youth is: and although you were (during the force of your youthlie dayes) trayned and exercised in factes of armes, yet nowe you oughte to knowe what great puissaunce resteth in the idle and delicate life, as well in the aged, as amonges yonge people. I am then as you be, begotten of fleshe, and my yeres so few, as yet but yonge, and thereby full of lust and delight. Wherunto the knowledge which I haue had alredey in mariage, forceth me to accomlishe that desire: and to the same be added marueilous forces, against whiche it is impossible for me to resiste, but rather to folowe, whereunto they drawe me. I am become amorous like a yonge woman, and like a woman as I am, and certainly I would haue imploied my whole force that waye, so farre as I could not to committe any shame to you, or to my selfe in that, whereunto my naturall offence hath forced me. To which thing, pitiful loue, and gentle fortune haue founde out and shewed a waye secret enough, whereby without knowledge of any man, I am come to the effecte of my desires: whiche thing I will not denie (who so euer tolde you of it, or by what meanes so euer you are come to the knowledge of it) I haue not taken Guiscardo to be my loue by chaunce, as many women haue done, but I haue chosen him by long aduise and deliberation, aboue all others, and haue brought him into me in this wise, inioying with our wise continuance of longe time, the accomplishment of my desire, wherof me thincke (althoughe I haue not offended but by loue) that you doe purpose to prosecute rather the vulgar opinion, then the truth, purposinge in this wise moste bitterly to comptroll me, saying: 'That you had not had such an occasion of anger, if I had chosen one that had been a gentleman.' Wherein you do not consider, that the faulte is not mine, but rather to be ascribed to fortune, who ought to be

blamed because many times shee exalteth the vnworthie, and treadeth vnder foote those that be most worthie: but nowe let vs leaue of further talke of this matter, and consider the beginninge hereof. First of all you see, that of one masse of fleshe we haue all receiued flesh, and that one Creatour hath created euery lyuing creature, with force and poussaunce equally, and wyth equall vertue: which vertue was the first occasion that made the difference and distinction of vs all that were borne, and be borne equall, and they that obtayned the greateste part of vertue, and did the workes of her, were called noble, the rest continuing vnnoble. And albeit contrary vse afterwards obscured this law, yet therefore, shee is not remoued ne abandoned from nature, or good manners. In likewise hee that by vertue performeth all his doinges, doth manifestlie shewe himselfe to be noble: and he that doth otherwise terme him, doth commit the faulte, and not he that is so called. Behold all your gentlemen, and examine well their vertue, their conditions and maner of doinges. On the other part, behold the qualities and condicions of Guiscardo: then if you please to giue iudgement wythout affection, you shall say that he is righte noble: and that all your gentlemen be villaines in respecte of him. The vertuous and excellencie of whom, I beleeeue cannot be placed in any other wight, as in hym, aswell by your owne report as by the choyse of mine owne eyes. Who euer praysed man so, and with such ample commendacions praise worthis, wherein an honest man ought to be praised, as you haue done? and truly not without cause: for, if mine eyes be not deceiued, you neuer gaue hym anye praise but that I haue knowen more in him then your wordes were able to expresse. Notwithstanding, if I haue bin deceiued herein, it was you by whom I haue bin deceiued: wil you then say that I couple myselfe with a man of base condicion? Truly you cannot well say so. But if you will saye, perchaunce with a poore man, I confesse it: and verely it is to your shame, that you haue not vouchsafed to place in highe estate a man so honest, being your owne seruaunt. Neuerthesse, pouertie doth not deprive anye parte of nobilitie, but riches hath. Many kinges and greate princes, haue bin poore in olde time, and manye ploughmen and sheepehardes in times past, haue bin aduanced to riche estate. And the last doubt which troubleth

you, is, that you be doubtfull what to doe with me: caste boldly out of your minde that doubte, and if you do intend in the extremity of your age to vse that which in your youth you neuer did, I purpose to become cruel also. Use your cruelty against me, for the auoyding whereof I haue not determined to make any supplication to you as giltie of this fault, if faultes may be rehearsed. Assuring you, that if you do not vnto me, that which you haue done or will doe to Guiscardo, mine owne handes shall doe it. Wherefore goe to, and let fall your teares with women, and if you purpose to be cruell, kill him and let mee also drinke of the same cuppe, if you thincke wee haue deserued it." The king hearing the stout words of his doughter, thoughte not that shee woulde haue done in deede, as her wordes pretended, and as she said she would doe. Wherefore departing from her, and not willing to vse any maner of crueltie towards her, hee thoughte by the destruction and slaughter of Guiscardo, to coole her burning loue. And therefore commaunded two of his seruauntes (that had Guiscardo in keeping) without any noise, to strangle him the next night, and afterwarde plucking his harte out of his bodie, to bringe it vnto him: who did as they were commaunded. And the next day the king caused a faire cuppe of gold to be broughte vnto him, wherein he laid the harte of Guiscardo, which he sent (by one of his trustiest seruauntes) vnto his doughter: and commaunded him, when hee presented the same vnto her to say these wordes: "Thy father hath sent thee this presente, to comforte thy selfe with the thing, which thou doest chieflie loue, as thou haste comforted him of that which he loued most." Gismonda not amoued from her cruel determination, caused to be brought vnto her (after her father was gone) venemous herbes and rootes, which she distilled together, and made water therof to drinke sodenly if that came to passe which she doubted. And when the kinges seruaunte was come vnto her, and had deliuered his presente, he said as he was commaunded. Gismonda toke the cuppe with stoute countenance, and couering it, so soone as she sawe the harte, and vnderstoode the wordes, shee thoughte verelye that it was the hart of Guiscardo, wherefore beholding the seruaunt, she saide vnto him: "Truly it behoueth that such a hart as this is, shoulde be intombed in no worse graue then in golde, which my father hath

most wisely done." Afterwards lifting the cuppe to her mouth, she kissed it, saying: "I haue in all thinges, euen vnto this time (being the last ende of my life) alwayes found the tender loue of my father towards mee: but nowe I knowe it to be greater, then euer I did before. And therefore in my behalfe, you shall render vnto him, the laste thanckes that euer I shall giue him, for so great a presente." After those wordes, tourning herselfe towards the cuppe, which shee helde faste, beholdinge the hart, shee said thus: "Oh sweete harboroughe of my pleasures, cursed be the crueltye of him that hath caused mee at this time to loke vppon thee with the eyes of my face: it was pleasure ynoughe, to see thee euery hower, amonges people of knowledge and vnderstanding. Thou hast finished thy course, and by that ende, which fortune vouchsafed to giue thee, thou art dispatched, and arriued to the ende wherunto all men haue recourse: thou hast forsaken the miseries and traueyles of this world, and haste had by the enemy himselfe such a sepulture as thy worthinesse deserueth. There needeth nothing els to accomlishe thy funerall, but onely the teares of her whom thou diddest hartelye loue all the dayes of thy lyfe. For hauing wherof, our Lord did put into the head of my vnmercifull father to send thee vnto me, and truly I will bestow some teares vppon thee, although I was determined to die, without sheading any teares at all, stoutlie, not fearefull of any thinge. And when I haue powred them out for thee, I will cause my soule, which thou hast heretofore so carefully kepte, to be ioyned wyth thine. For, in what company can I trauell, more contented, or in better safegard in places vnknownen, then with thy soule? Truly I am well assured, that it is yet here within, that hath respecte to the place, aswell of his owne pleasures, as of mine, being assured (as she who is certaine, that yet he looueth me) that he attendeth for myne, of whom he is greatly beloued." When she had thus sayd, she beganne to let fall (as though there had been a fountaine in her head) so many teares, as it was a myracle to beholde her, oftentimes kissing the dead harte. Her maydens that stooode aboute her, knewe not what hart that was, nor whereunto those woords did tende: but beinge moued with compassion they all wepte: pitifullie demaunding (althoughe in vayne) the occasion of her sorowfull plaintes: and comforted her

so well as they could. Who after she had powred forth sufficient teares, lifted vppe her heade and when she had wiped her eyes, she sayd: "Oh louing hart, all my dutie is fulfilled towards thee, hauinge nowe nothinge to doe but onely to yelde forth my ghoste, to accompany thyne." And this sayd, she caused the glasse of water, which she had made the daye before, to be brought vnto her: and poured it out into the cuppe where the hart laye, all bained with a multitude of teares: whiche shee putting to her mouthe, without feare, dronke vp all. And that done went into her bedde, with the cuppe in her hand, tossing her bodie as decently as she could vppon the same, holding the harte of her dead frende, so nere as shee coulde, vnto her owne. Her maidens seing this (although they knewe not what water it was, that she dranke) sent worde to the king, who fearing that whiche happened, incontinentlye wente downe into his doughters chamber: where he arriued euen at that instant that she had cast her selfe vpon the bedde, and being come to late to succour her, with sweete wordes he began (seing her in those pangues) to wepe bitterly. To whome his doughter sayde: "Father, kepe in those vndesired teares and bestowe them not vpon me, for I desire them not: who euer sawe man beside you, to bewayle the wilfulnesse of his owne facte. Howe be it, if there do yet reste in you any sparke of that loue, which you haue alwayes borne towards me: graunt me this last requeste, that although you were not contented that I should liue secretly and couertly with Guiscardo, yet at lest, cause our bodies to bee openly buried together, where it pleaseth you to bestowe them." The anguishe and sorowe would not suffer the prince to aunswere one worde for weping. And the ladie perceiuing her ende approche, cleped and strained the dead hart harde to her stomacke, saying: "Farewell sweete harte in God, for I am going to him." And therewithall she closed her eyes, and lost her senses, departing out of this dolorous life. In this maner sorowefully ended the loue of Gismonda and Guiscardo, as you haue hearde, whome the prince after he had wepte his fill, and taken to late repentaunce for his crueltie: caused honorablie to be buried, and intombed both in one graue, not without great sorowe of all the people of Salerne.

THE FORTYETH NOUELL.

Mahomet one of the Turkishe emperours, executeth curssed crueltie vpon a Greeke maiden, whome hee tooke prisoner, at the wynning of Constantinople.

If you doe euer make any prooffe of trial, to knowe of what trampe the arrowes of loue be, and what fruite they brynge to them, that doe vse and practise them: I am assured you shall be touched with some pitie when ye vnderstande the beastlie crueltie of an infidell louer towards his ladie. He of whome I wyll declare the historie, is Mahomet, not the false prophete, but the great graundfather of Soliman Otiman, emperoure of the Turkes, whiche raigned at that tyme. He it is, that to the shame and eternall infamie of all christian princes of his tyme, did wyne Constantinople, and tooke awaye the Easte empire from Constantine, a Christian emperour, the yeare of our Lord 1453. Mahomet then hauing obtained so great victorie at Constantinople, amonges the spoyle of that riche citie, there was founde a Greeke mayden, of suche rare and excellent beautie, as she allured the eyes of euery wight, to wonder and beholde her, as a thing miraculous, whose name was Hyerencee, of the age of sixtene or seuentene yeares: whome a capitaine to gratifie his lorde, did presente, a iewell, (as hee thought) moste acceptable to him, aboue all thinges of the worlde. The emperour Mahomet, young and wanton beyonde measure, after he had caste his eye vpon the mayden, and had grauen her beautie in his harte, gaue a straighte charge that shee shoulde bee kepte for hym, hopinge after the tumulte of the warre was ended, to bestowe conuenient tyme vpon her. The re-tracte sounded, and the affaires of the empire reduced to sure estate, remembring him selfe of the beautie of Hyerencee, whiche had made a breache and entrie into his harte, commaunded that shee should be brought foorth vnto him, and hauing viewed her at his pleasure, hee felte him selfe so surprised with that newe flame, that hee conceiued none other delight but to playe and dallie with her, in suche sorte as his spirites being in loues full

on, loue dealt with hym so cruellie, as he coulde take no
re nor night. Who yelded him selfe suche a praie to his
Hyerenee, that he felte none other contentation in his
out that whiche he receiued of her. And this amorous
indured the space of three continuall yeares, taking suche
and increase by litle and litle, that he began to forget that
appertained to the ornament and honour of his empire,
the whole administration of publique causes to his Bas-
him selfe being so negligent, as he reposed in them all
concerning the state of the empire. During this disorder,
ar people began secretly to grudge, as well for the con-
d disorder of the empire, as for the il gouernment of the
and specially, because the Baschats corrupted with auarice
(them selues to their particuler profite, and to inriche
ies with the spoile of the people.) The Ianissaries on
side, a warlike people, and brought vp in continuall
of armes, began with open voyce, to detracte and
their lorde, commonlie complaining howe hee consumed
like an effeminate persone, without inferring or doying
fite to the empire. To bee shorte, the matter came to
olation, as it might rather haue bene called a sedition
urmure: and yet there was none so hardie as durst at-
to declare the same to the emperour, knowing hym to be
terrible, cruell, and rigorous, that with a woorde woulde
death that went about to withdrawe him from his de-
erewithall he was so dronke with the beautie of the
at the leste matter, wherewith they might geue occasion
we him from his negligent life, was enough to driue him
and furie. This poore emperour was so bewitched, as
hee consumed dayes and nightes with her, but he burn-
continual ielousie, whose beautie was so liuelie painted in
l partes of his hart and minde, that he remained thus
ed in beastly pleasure, euery man in particuler and all
b, conspired against him, with one determinate minde, to
more obedience vnto him in time to come, and purposed
ome emperour, that were more marciall and warlike,
hose succour and counsaile they might not onely con-

serue the thinges gotten, but also amplifie the boundes and limites of their empire. Mustapha which was brought vp with the emperour, a gentle personage, franke of talke, and so nere to his maiestie, that he might go into his chamber, although the Greeke was present: when he perceiued conuenient time, suche as he desired to haue, repaired to the emperour vpon a daye, who liking well his deuises, walked with him alone in his gardeine, to whom after he had made great reuerence, according to their custome, he sayde: "My soueraigne lord and maister, if I might speake freely, without seruile feare, whiche staieth mee, or if the terrour of your displeasure might not abash me, I would willingly declare vnto your maiestie that which concerneth not onely your securitie and saulfe garde, but (which is more) the saulfetie of your whole empire." Whom Mahomet aunswered with merie countenance in these wordes. "Cast away such colde feare as staieth thee, and speake hardly thy minde: Shewe me what it is that toucheth me." "I doubt, and it shall please your maiestie, leste I shall seeme ouer presumptuous and rashe, if I discover the secretes of my hart: but our auncient education, the dutie of my conscience, with the experience that you haue alwayes had of my fidelitie, haue so much forced mee, as being no longer able to rule my selfe, (I am constrained, by what vertuous prouocation I know not) to manifest thinges vnto you, that both time and necessitye will make you to thincke them good and necessarie: althoughe (it may so be) that now your eyes be so bounde vppe, in the vaile of your disordinate affection, that you cannot digeste, or take the same in good part. The life (my lorde) which you haue ledde, sithens the taking of Constantinople, and the excessiue pleasures wherein you haue bin plunged these three yeares, is occasion that not onely your souldiours and the rest of your popular people, but the most faithful lords of your empire, do murmure, conspire, and coniure against you. And pardon me (my lord) if I speake so vnreuerently, in thinges touching your preservation. For there is no man but doth very much marueile of this great and newe alteration that appeareth in you, which doth so abase you, and maketh you to degenerate from your auncient generositie and valiaunce. Your owne selfe hath giuen ouer your selfe to be a spoile and praye to a simple woman: that

you wholie depend vpon her flatteries and allurementes : reason or counsaile can take no place in your passionate and afflicted hart. But I humblie beseech your maiestie, to enter a little into your selfe, and make a suruey of your life, that you haue ledde these three yeares paste. The glory of your auncestours and predecesours, acquired and wonne by sheading of so much bloud, kepte by so great prudence, conserued by so happy counsell, haue they no representation, or shew before your face ? The remembraunce of theyr memorable victories, doth it not touche the depthe of your conscience ? The magnanimitie and valiaunce whereby they be immortalized, and their fame regestred throughe the whole world, is it extinguished in you ? Their trophees and monumentes grauen and aduaunced to all the corners of the earth, be they throwen downe and defaced from the siege of your remembraunce ? But where is now the ardent desire which boiled in you from your infancie, to make Italie tributarie vnto you, and to cause your selfe to be crowned at Rome, emperour aswel of Thorient, as of the Occidente ? This is not the way to amplifie and inlarge your empire, but rather to restraine and diminish the same. This is not the meane to preserue it, but to dispoile it and make it lesse. If Ottoman the first tronke or stocke of your gentle familye and kinred, had thus giuen himselfe to be corrupted in idlenes, you had not now inherited the noble kingdome of Greece, nor gouerned the countries of Galatia and Bithinia, and many other provinces, which environne the greate sea. Semblable his sonne Orcan (a liuely image of his father and a folower of his valiaunt factes) had not triumphed ouer Licaonia, Phrigia, Caria, nor dilated the boundes of his empyre to Hellesponte. What shall I speake of Amurates, the successour of Orcan, who was the first that inuaded Europa, conquered Thracia, Syria, Rasia and Bulgaria ? And Baiazet likewyse, did not he cut of the head of the greate Tamburlain, which called himselfe the scourge of God, and brought into the field foure hundred thousande Scithians a horsebacke, and sixe hundred thousande footemen ? Shall I passe ouer with silence the vertuous exploites of your grandfather Mahomet, who conquered Macedonia and made the countries to feelee the edge of his sword, euen to the sea Ionicum, letting passe many wonderfull expeditions

and iourneis by him made against the Lidians and Scicilians? But nowe I cannot reuiue the memorie of your father Amurate, but to my great sorow and grieve, who by the space of xl. yeres made the sea and earth to tremble and quake, and with the furie of his stronge hand vsed such cruell reuengment ouer the Grekes, that the memorie of the woundes do remaine at this present, euen to the mountaines of Thomao and Pindus: he subiugated the Phocians, made tributarie Athenes, Beotia, Aetolia, Caramania, and all the barbarous nations, from Morea to the straits of Corinthe. What neede I here to bring in the cruel battell that he fought with the emperour Sigismunde and Philip duke of Burgundia wherin he ouerthrew the whole force of the Christians, toke the emperour prisoner, and the duke of Burgundie also, whom he sent to Andrionopolis? or to remember other fierce armies which he sent into Hungarie, wherof your maiesty is a faithfull witnes, your selfe being stil there in your owne person. Iudge then, my lord, what diligence and intollerable trauell he vsed in his manifolde glorious enterprises and famous victories. Do you thincke that if hee had bin idle in his palace, amonges the ladyes, you had inherited your empyre, or had nowe bin lord of so many excellent prouinces: which he is not sufficient to rule, that cannot prouide to confirme and establish the same. There be many of your subiectes and vassals at this day, which do obey and honour your maiestie (more for feare then good loue they beare you) that woulde rebell against you, if fortune would turne her backe. The Christians of long time (as you know) haue sworne your ruine and destruction. Moreouer they say that their high bishop the pope of Rome hath conuocated all his prelates to vnitie, and reconciled the princes and monarches of Christendome together, to ouer run you, and to take the scepter out of your hands, and to dispoile you of your empire. But what know we whither they wil ioine their force with the power of the Persian Sophi, your capital enemie, or with the Souldan of Aegipt, your auncient aduersary: which if they come to passe (as God forbid) your empire wilbe consumed. Gather your wits then together from henceforth my lord, and call againe reason, which so many yeres you haue banished from you. Awake out of the deepe sleepe which hath sealed

vp your eyes: imitate and folow the trade of your auncestors, which euer loued better one day of honour then a hundred liuing yeares of shame and reproch. Attend to the gouernment of your empire: leaue of this effeminate life: receiue againe the smell of your generosity and vertue: and if you cannot at one time cutte of and remoue all that amorous heate which vndermineth so your hart, moderate the same by litle and litle, and giue some hope to your people, which thincke you to be vtterlye loste and desperate of recouerie. Or if so be the Greeke do delighte you so much, who shall let you to carye her with you in all your iourneis and expeditions? Why cannot you together both enioy her beauty and vse the practise of armes? Mee thincke that your pleasure shalbe greater after you haue wonne some victory, and subdued some countrie to inioye her in your armes, then to remaine in a house with eternal infamie and continuall grudging of your subiectes. But proue I pray you, to separate your selfe certaine dayes from her and you shall certainly iudge, how farre more passing the pleasures be so differred, then those that be daily vsed. Yet one thinge more, and it please your maiestie, there resteth to be saide, which is, that all the victories of your progenitours, or the conquestes which your selfe hath made be to small purpose, if you doe not keepe them and increase them, the keeping of a thing gotten being of no lesse glory and praise then the conquest. Be now then a conquerour of your selfe, humblie beseching your maiestie, that if I haue spoken any thing disagreeable to your minde, according to your wonted clemencie to pardon the same, and to impute the fault to my bounden duty and the care that I haue of your honour and safetye." Mahomet after he had heard the longe discourse of his slaue, stooke as still as a blocke, and fixing his eyes vppon the ground, with sodaine chaunge of colour, declared by outward signes, the agitations and vnquietnes of his minde in such wise, as the poore slaue Mustapha, seing in him those alterations, was in doubt of his life: whose words so pricked the emperour's harte, that he knew not what to do, or whereupon to be resolved, and feeling his conscience troubled with a furious battel: knowing euidentlye that Mustapha had spoken the truth, and that he vttered the same

like a trustie seruaunt to his maister. But on the other side the beautie of the Greeke, was still before his eyes, and the minde he had to abandon her, gaue him suche alarme, that he seemed at that instante as though his hart had been torne out of his belly. And thus moued with diuers tempestes, and disquieted with sundry thoughtes, hauing his eyes inflamed with great rage and furie, he said vnto him. " Althoughe thou hast spoken vnreuerently inough, yet our education together, and the fidelitie that I haue proued in thee in time paste, shalbe thy pardon for this time. To the purpose. Before the sunne doth compasse the Zodiacke, I will let it be knowen to thee and other, what puissance and power I haue ouer my selfe: whether I am able to bridle mine affection or not. Take order in the meane time that all my noble men, the Baschats and the principall of my men of warre, be assembled together to morowe, in the middes of the greate halle of my palace." This determination finished, the emperour went into the Greeke, with whom he reioysed all that day and night, and made more of her then euer he did before. And the more to flatter her, he dined with her, and commaunded that after dinner, she should adorne herselfe with her most precious iewels, and decke her with the costliest apparell shee had. Whereunto the poore wenche obeied, not knowinge that it was her funeral garments. On the other side, Mustapha vncertaine of the emperour's minde, at the houre appointed caused all the nobilitie to be assembled in the hall, euerye of theym marueilinge what moued the emperour so to do sithens he had so long time shut vp himselfe, without shewing his person abroad. Being thus assembled, and euerye man talking diuerslye of this matter, accordinge as their affection serued: beholde, the emperour entred the hall, leading the Greeke by the hand, who being adorned otherwise then she was wont to be, was accompanied and garnished with beautie, so rare and excellent as she resembled rather an heavenly goddesse then a humaine creature. The Turke being come into the hall, after that the lords had made their reuerence, according to their wonted maner, he holding still the faire Greeke by the left hande, and stooode still in the midst of the same, loking furiously round about him, he said vnto them. " So farre as I vnderstand, all ye

do mutine and grudge, because I (being vanquished with loue) cannot be deuided nor yet content my selfe day nor night, from the presence of this Greeke. But I do know none of you all so continente and chaste in loue, that if hee had in possession a thing so rare and precious, so amiable, indowed with beautie so excellent, but before he could forget her, and giue her ouer, hee woulde three times be well aduised. What say you to the matter? Euery of you shall haue free liberty, franckly to tel me your minde." But they rapt with an incredible admiration, to see so faire a thing, sayde that he had with greate reason passed his time wyth her. Wherunto the barbarous cruel prince aunswared. " Well, now then I will make you to vnderstand, that there is no earthlie thing that can bind vp, or captiuate my senses so much, but that from henceforth I will folow the glorie of mine auncestours, and immitate the valiaunce of the Ottomans, which is so fixed in my breaste as nothing but death is able to blotte it out of my remembraunce." Those wordes finished, incontinently with one of his handes, hee caught the Greeke by the heare of the head, and with his other hand he drew out his falchion from his side, and folding his handes about her golden lockes, at one blow hee strake of her head, to the great terrour of them all. When he had so done, he said vnto them: " Now ye know, whether your emperour is able to repress and bridle his affections or not?" Within a while after, meaninge to discharge the rest of his cholere, he addressed a campe of foure score, or an hundred thousand men: with whom percing Bousline, he besieged Belgrade, where fortune was so contrary vnto him, that he was put to flight, and loste there a notable battaile against the Cristians, vnder the conduct of Iohn Huniades, surnamed le Blanck, who was father of the worthie and glorious king Mathie Coruin.

THE FORTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A Ladie falslie accused of adultrie, was condempned to be deuoured of Lions: the maner of her deliuerie, and how (her innocencie being knowen) her accuser felt the paines for her prepared.

IN the countrie of Aquitane, there was sometime a lord, whose lands and lordships laye betweene Lismosine and Poictou, and for the antiquitye of his house was renowned both for bloude and wealth, amonges the chiefe of all the countrie. Being allied in kindred wyth the best, hee had full accesse and fauour as well in the houses of the aunciente dukes of Guienne, and countes of Poictou, as in the royall courtes of the French kinges. This lorde (whom Bandello the aucthour of this history, affirmeth to be Signor de la Rocca Soarda, but the translatour and augmentor of the same in French called Francois de Belle Forest, leaueth out his name, for good respect as he alleageth) kept a great court and liberal household, and singularlie delighted (after the maner of the French nobilitie) in huntunge and hawking. His house also was had in greater admiracion (the rudenes and ignoraunce of that tyme was such) because he had gotten beastes of straunge countries, cheffie lions, wherein he had great pleasure aswell for the rarenesse of that beast in Fraunce, as for a certaine generositie that he knew to be in the same, which resembled the magnanimitie and courage of noble men, whose mindes and spirites doe not esteeme thinges that be vaine and cannot be affraide in doing of deedes, whereunto honour is offred for reward. This lord married a ladie, the doughter of one of his neighbours, a woman worthie for such a husbände: whose beautie was so rare as there was none comparable vnto her: which the more increased for that shee was indued with perfite vertue, and furnished with so good behaiour as right good mindes and wittes should be occupied, naie rather put to their shiftes to decide, whether gifte were greatest, either the exquisite workemanshippe of her excelling beautie, or whether nature had imploied al her cunning, to frame a body to appeare before men miraculous, or els her honest

her good grace, curtesie, and graue mildnes, accompanied
 vertue, not vulgare or common to many men, which made
 her lie to shine like the glisteringe planet of Mars, amonges
 the wanderinge starres. In such wise as the very sauage
 brute were forced with splendent fame, to praise her to be
 a woman whose equall they neuer knew to be in all their
 age, who made the house of her husband glorious and him
 a great man, to beholde such a starre to lie by his side,
 sufficed to illustrate and beautifie a whole countrie by her
 presence, and to nobilitate a race, althoughe the blood of
 theirs did faile, for the accomplismente of their perfection.

The great force of vertue which not onely did aduance
 the other creatures, but also did constraine the enuious to
 be in admiration. But these admiratours and praisers of
 her doe not vse like indeuour for the merites of vertue, rather
 emploie their onely industrie to gather some profite of vertue
 in (following the nature of the dogge) they retourne to
 bite, and vomite forth their venime hidden in their ser-
 uice. As it came to passe and was euident in a certaine
 house, as well for the honest loue betwene the lord and the
 lady for the vertue and clemency wherewith both the one
 and the other were accompanied) who in the beginninge, as
 and duetie did require, was a louer of good maners and
 honorable demeanour of his lady and maistresse, afterwarde
 forgetting the fidelitie which he did owe vnto his lorde, the
 for of his predecessours, and the perill of his owne life)
 loue her and serue her in harte, and to wishe for the
 thinge which outwardlye did appeare to be in her, where he
 got so much as with the loke of his eye, to giue any atteint
 for the reuerence of him which was the right owner and
 possessor of the same. This maister foole then, not mea-
 sures forces, and lesse followinge the instincte of reason,
 so amorous of his madame, as continually he imagined
 neanes he mighte giue her to understand the paines and
 wherein he liued for the loue of her. But (alas) these
 finished, like a litle dispersed cloude at the rysinge of

the sunne: for thinkinge vpon the vertue of his maistresse, his desires were soner remoued from his hart, then he was able to impresse them in the seate of his iudgement, therby to take anye certaine assuraunce. Notwithstandinge his heade ceased not to builde castels in the ayre, and made a promise to himselfe to enioye her whom he worshipped in his hart. For he toke such paynes by his humble seruice, that in the ende he acquired some part of his ladies good grace and fauour. And for that he durste not be so bolde to manifest vnto her the vehemence of his griefe, he was contented a long time to shew a counterfaict ioy, which raised vnto him a liuely spring of sorowes and displeasures, which ordinarily did frette and boyle his minde so muche: as the force of his weping for vaine hope, was able to suffocate the remnant of life, that rested in his tormented hart, which caused certaine litle brokes of teares to streame downe, assailing the minde of this foolishe louer. This faire and chaste ladie was so resolved, in the loue of her husbände, that she toke no regarde of the countenaunces and foolishe fashiones of this maister louer. Who seing his mishappe to growe to dispaire, and from thence forth no remedie, that whether by reioyse, well hoping of better lucke, or for sodaine and miserable death, he determined to proue fortune: and to see if the water of his hope coulde finde any passage, stedfastlye determined that if he were throwen downe hedlong into the bottome of refusal, and contempned for his seruice, not to retire againe, but rather further to plondge for the accelerating of the ruine of him self, and his desires: for he thought it impossible that his harte could indure more intollerable heate of that invisible fier, then it had felt alreadye, if he founde no meanes for the smoke to haue some vent and issue. For whiche consideration, cleane besides him selfe, bewitched with foolish loue, like a beast thoroughly transformed into a thing, that had no sense of a reasonable man (such as they be accustomedly, that be inrolled in the muster bookes of Venus' sonne) was purposed to open to the ladie (when occasion serued) both the euill, and also the griefe that he sustained in bearing towarde her, so great and extreme affection. Behold here one of the effects of humane follie: this was the firste acte of the tragedie, wherein loue maketh this brain-

man to playe the first and principall parte vpon the stage: a good gentleman (otherwyse a good seruauant, and carefull profite and honoure of his maister) is nowe so voyde of life and blinde in vnderstanding as hee maketh no conscience to assaile her (to defraude her of her greatest vertue) the name of whom ought to haue made him tremble for feare, blushe for shame, rather then for her beautie sake and all curtesie, to dispoyle her of her honestie, and to attempte vncertaine to winne and also more daungerous to practise. whiles he liued in the attemte of his hoped occasion, it seemed that the ladie (thinking no malice at all) began to be the stewarde with a better eie and looke more familier, by of the gentlemen, and domesticall seruantes of the house as well for the painted honestie of this galant, as to see him leape and redie to obey her: and therefore vpon a daye as he walked in the gallerie she called him vnto her, and verie freely communicated certaine affaires touching the profite of the house. He that marched not but vpon one foote, and burned with love, and whose harte leapte for ioye, and daunced for gladnesse, thought that he had nowe obtained the toppe of his felicitie, the whole effect of his desire: sodainly he cast away the disguise of his former conceiptes, obiecting him selfe to the daunger he was like to bee overwhelmed, if the ladie accepted not of his request with good digestion. In the end, recouering force, hee was in minde this wicked opinion, wherwith foolish and fleshly louers doe blason and displaye the honour and chastitie of ladies, when they make their vaunte that there is no woman but she neuer so chaste, continente, or honest, but in the end she doeth die, if she be throughly pursued. O, the wordes and actions of a beast, rather then of a man knowing vertue. Is the reputation of chaste women so diminished that their renowme at this tyme is like a boate in the middes of some tempestious sea, that the mariners do repaire to saue them selues? It is the nature of ladies which doeth constrain them to vomite their poyson, when they see them selues deceiued, of their husbands and vncomely demaundes. A man shall neuer heare those words proceede, but from the mouthes of the moste lasciuious,

whiche delight in nothing els, but to corrupte the good names of ladies, afterward to make them ridiculous to the worlde. Retourne we then to our purpose, this valiaunt souldier of loue, willing to geue the first onset vpon his swete enemye, began to waxe pale and to tremble like the reede blowen with the wynde, and knoweth not in what part, or by what meanes, to bestowe the firste strokes of his assault. At length with foltring tongue and trembling voyce, he speaketh to his ladie in this wyse. "Alas, madame, how happie were the course of our transitorie life, if the common passions receiued no increase of troubles, by newe and diuers accidents, which seme to take roote in vs, for the very great diminution of that libertie, which euery man doth studie so much to conserue. But truly that studie is vain, and the paine therof vnprofitable bestowed: for he inforceth him selfe to liue free from passion, which in the middes of his inforcement, feeleth him selfe to be violently constrained, and seeth the taking away of his libertie, to be a certaine impeachement, whiche thereunto hee would geue. Alacke, I haue proued that mischiefe, and am yet in the greatest excesse and pangues of my disease. I fele (alas) a diuersitie of anguishes, and a sea of troubles, which tormente my minde, and yet I dare not discouer the cause, seing that the thing, which is the fountaine of my grief, to be of suche desert as my seruice paste, and all that is to come, is not able to geue the prooffe, if one speciall grace and fauour, doe not inlarge, the litle power that is in mee, to counteruaile the greatnesse, and perfection of that which thus doth variat and alter bothe my thoughtes and passions. Pardon mee (madame) if I doe speake obscurelye, for the confusion of my minde maketh my woordes correspondent to the qualitie of the same. Notwithstanding I wyll not kepe silente from you that whiche I doe suffer, and muche lesse dissemble what passion I indure, beyng assured for your vertue and gentlenes, that you (moued with compassion) will succour me so muche as shall lie in you, for preseruacion of the life of him that is the best and most obedient seruaunt amonges them all that do you humble seruice." The lady which neuer thought of the wickednesse which this insensate man began to imagine, aunswered him verie curteously: "I am sorie trulye for your mishap, and do marueile what should

be the effect of that passion which as you say, you feele with such diminution of that which is perfect and accomplished in you: for I do see no cause that ought to moue you to so straunge infirmitie, whereof you told mee, and wherewith I had alreadie found fault although you had said nothing. I would to God I knew which way to helpe you, aswel for my lord my husbandes sake, whoe I am sure doth beare you good will, as for the honestie which hetherto I haue knowen to be in you, wherein I thincke all other resembling you, for vertue and good conditions doe deserue that accompt and consideration." He that thought her already to be taken in his nettes, seing so faire a waye open and cleare, to disclose that which he had kept couerte so long, in the depth of his hart, aunsweared. " Ah, madame, are ye ignoraunte of the forces of loue, and how much his assaultes can debilitate the liuelihooode of the bodies and spirites of men? Knowe ye not that he is blinde and naked, not caring whither hee goeth, manifesting himselfe there, wher occasion is offred? Alas, madame, if you haue not pitie vpon mee, and do not regard that, which I do suffer for the loue of you, I know not how I am able to auoyde death, which will approche so sone to cutte of, and abridge my yeares, as I shall vnderstande a refusall of that which the extreme loue I beare you (madame) forceth mee to require: which is to receiue a new seruice of your auncient and faithfull seruiture: who inflamed by the brighte beames of your deuine face, knoweth not how to chaunge his affection, and much lesse to receiue helpe, but of the place where hee receiued the pricke. Excuse (madame I beseech you) my rashnesse, and pardon my follie: accuse rather, either your celestiall beautie, or els that tyrant loue who hath wounded me so luckelie, as I esteme mine euill fortunate, and my wounde happie: sithe by his meane my thoughtes and cogitations doe onelye tende to do you seruice, and to loue you in mine hart, which is the phenix of the fairest and moste curteous ladies, within all our prouince. Alas, that excellencie, which thus maketh me your seruaunt shall one daye be my ruine, if by your good grace (speaking it with weeping teares) you doe not fauour him, which liueth not but to obey you, and which lesing your good grace, will attempte to depriue him selfe of life,

which being deprived through your crueltie, will goe to complaine of his bolde attempt, and also of your rigor amonges the ghostes and shadowes of them that bee alreadie dead, for like occasion." The chaste ladie was so rapte of wittes for the straungenes of the case, and for the grieve whiche she conceived, to see the vnshamefast hardinesse of the varlette, as she could not tell how to make him aunswere: but in the ende breaking silence, and fetching a great sighe from the bottome of her harte, her face stayned with a freshe vermilion ruddy, which beautified her colour, by reason of disdaine conceived against this impudent orator, she aunswered him verie seuerely. "O God, who would haue thought, that from a hart nobly brought vp, and deriued from an honourable race, a vilanie so greate could haue taken roote and spring vp with such detestable fruite? What maister stewarde? haue ye forgotten the dutie of a seruauent towarde his lorde and maister? Haue ye forgotten I saye, the dutie of a vertuous gentleman, wel nourished and trayned vp towarde suche and so great a ladie as I am? Ah, thefe and traitour! Is this the venime whiche thou kepest so couert and secrete, vnder the swetenesse of thy counterfaicte vertue? A vaunte varlet, a vaunt: goe vtter thy stuffe to them that be like thy self, whose honour and honestie is so farre spent, as thy loialtie is light and vayn. For if I heare thee speake any more of these follies be assured that I wil mortifie that raging flame, which burneth thy light beleuing harte, and will make thee feelee by effecte what maner of death that is, wherein thou reposest the reste of thy trauell." As this deceiued oratour was framing his excuse, and about to moderate the iust wrath of his ladie, displeased vpon good occasion, she not able to abyde any more talke, sayde further. "And what signes of dishonestie haste thou seen in mee, that moue thee to perswade a thing so wicked, and vncomely for mine estate: yea and so preiudiciall to me, to my frendes, and the house of thy maister, my lorde and spouse? I can not tell what it is that letteth me, from causing thee to be caste foorth amonges the lions (cruell and capitall enemies of adulterie amonges them selues) sithe thy pretence is, by violating my chastitie to dishonour the house, whereunto thou owest no lesse, then al the aduancements thou hast: from the taste whereof

thou hast abandoned vertue, the best thing wherwith thou were affected. Auoyde now, therefore, let me heare no more of this, vppon payne of thy life, otherwyse thou shalt feele the rewarde of thy temerite, and vnderstande the bitternesse of the litle pleasure, whiche I haue conceiued of thy follies." So the good ladie held her peace, reseruing in her harte, that whiche should bee her helpe in time and place: howbeit she sayde nothing hereof vnto her husbände, aswell for raising offence or slaunder, as for prouoking him against him whiche susteined the punishment him selfe, sithe that this refuse, did more straungely pinche him, nerer at the harte then euer the egle of Caucasus (whereof the poetes haue talked so muche) did tier the mawe of the subtile thefe Prometheus. And yet the vnhappie stewarde not contented, with the mischiefe committed against the honour of his maister, seing that it was but lost time to continue his pursute, and that his gaine would bee no lesse then death, if she according to her promised threatens did therof aduertise her husband, being a cholericke man, and lighte of beliefe, and because the said steward for such an enterprise had receiued a simple recompence, although he correspondent to his desert, premeditated worse mischiefes, more noisome then the first. He was in doubte, whether it were better for him to tarie or to departe, sith two thinges in a maner, were intollerable for him to suffer. For he coulde not forsake the house where from his cradle he had been so finely brought vp, the lord wherof made so much of him, as of his owne person. On the other side, he knewe that so long as the lady was aliue, he could haue no maner of ioy or contentation. For that cause, conuerting extreeme loue (which once he bare to the lady) into cruel hatred, vnseemely for a brutal beaste, and into an insaciabie desire of reueng, he determined to addresse so strong an ambushe, trained with so great subteltie, that she was not able to escape without daunger of her life and honour, whereof she declared herselfe to be so carefull. Alas, what blindnes is that, which captiuateth the wittes and spirite of him, that feedeth himselfe of nothing els, but vpon the rage of fantastical despite and vpon the furie of dispaire. Do wee not see, that after reason giueth place to desired reuenge of wrong thought to be receiued, man

dispoyleth himselfe of that, which appertayneth to the kinde of man, to put on the fierce nature of the moste brute and cruell beastes, to runne headlonge without reason toward the place wher the disordinate appetite of affections, doth conduct him? whereof I will not aduouche any other example, but of this traitour, who passionated not with loue, but rather with rage and fury, ceaseth not to espie all the actions and behauiour of his ladie, to the intente he mighte bringe to ende his deuised treason against her, that thoughte (perchaunce) no more of his folies, but honestlie to passe the time with her deare and wel beloued husbände. Truly, if this lady had been of the disposition of some women (that care not to moleste theyr husbands, for the first flie that buzzeth before their eyes, conceyuing a friuolous and sodaine opinion of their chastitie, not so much assailed, or to sharpely defended, chaunting glorious hymnes and high prayses of their victorie) certainly she had not tumbled herselfe into the daunger, wherunto afterwards she fell. Not for that I will blame them that do reueale to theyr husbändes the assaults which they receiue of importunate suters, that doe assaie to deflower their chastitie. Yet I will saye that modestie in the same (as in euery other humaine action) is greatly to be required, sith that such a one, by thincking to extolle her honour and honestie, and to make prooffe of her chastitye, rendreth the same suspicious, and giueth occasion to talke to the people that is more apt and redie to slaunder and defame, then by good report to prayse them, which by vertue do deserue commendation, bringing the lyfe and fame of her husband, to such extremitie, as it had been better vertuously to haue resisted the force of loue, and the flattering sute of such louers, then to manifest that which might haue been kept secrete without preiudice of eyther. And truly that woman deserueth greater glorie, which of herselfe defendeth her honestie, and quencheth the flames liuelye kindled in the hartes of other, with the coldnes of continencie, by that meanes vanquishing two, then she doth, which manifesting the vice of an other, discloseth as it were, a certaine apparaunce of her frailtie, and the litle reason wherewith she is indewed, to vanquish him that confesseth to be her seruaunt, and whose wil dependeth at her commaundement. And when the whole matter shalbe rightlye

iudged, shee that reuealeth the imperfection of a suter sheweth her opinion and minde to be more pliant to yelde then indewed with reason to abandone pleasure and to reiect the insolencie of the same, sith reason's force doth easely vanquish light affections of sensuall partes, whose fancies imprinted wyth ficklenes, do make them so inconstant, as they perswade themselues to be so puissaunte and mightie, as all thinges be, and rest at their commaundement. Retourning nowe then to our former discourse, the steward so laboured with might and maine, till he had found meanes to be reuenged of the receiued refusall, with such subtilty and diuelish inuention as was possible for man to deuise, which was this. Among the seruantes of this great lorde, there was one no lesse yonge of witte and vnderstanding then of age. And albeit that he was fayre and comely, yet so simple and foolishe as hee had much a do to tell the nomber of sixe. This foole by reason of his follye and simplicitie, was the onely sporte and pastime of the lord and lady: the lady many times toke pleasure to talke with this maister foole, to bringe him into a choler and chaufe, thereby to prouoke laughter. And therefore all the houshold vsed to call him in mockerie, my ladyes darelinge. In whom the lorde toke singuler pleasure and delight, esteeming him so wel as any of his other seruants. The malicious steward, seing the familiaritie of the lady with the foole (like one that had already caught his pray within his snares) began also to make much of that yonge cockescome, in such wyse as he had brought him into such fooles paradise, as he mighte make him do and saye what he liste. Who seing him diligent to his desire, one day toke him aside, and after he had whittled him well, he sayd vnto him. "Dicke, I can tell thee a knacke, that thou shalt make my lady laugh wel, but thou must say nothing, till she do perceiue it." The poore idiot glad to please his maistres, was desirous to knowe what it was, and promised to doe whatsoeuer he woulde bidde him. "Thou must (sayd the steward) in the eueninge before she go into her chamber, hyde thy selfe vnder her bedde, and tary there till it be an hower or two before day, and then I wil tell thee what thou must doe besides." This plat deuised the foole the same euening

executed the deuise of hys diuelish counsaylour, who seing his desire to take effecte, went to an olde gentleman, that was of great honestie and vertue, for which he was of all men so wel knownen, as they esteemed his word so true as the gospell. To that gentleman this craftie villaine, full of poison and malice, wholly bent to mischiefe, told and reported the fact, not as it was in deede, but to the great preiudice and dishonour of the lady, geuing him to vnderstand how much she had forgotten herselfe, how without the feare of God, reuerence of her husband, and respect of her owne honesty, she had filthely giuen herselfe ouer to him which was called her dareleng. The good gentleman hearing this straung case, was astonned like one that had been stroken with a flashe of lightening, then drawing nere to the accuser, he aunswered. "Is it possible that suche wickednes can lye hidden in the breast of our madame? I sweare vnto thee by God, that if any other had told it me besides you, I would not haue beleued it, and truly yet I am in doubt thereof." "No no," saide this wicked blasphemer, "I will make you see that, which you cannot beleue:" and hauing lessoned his foole, in his conceiued follie, the next day he procured the gentleman thither, who seing the ladies minion, going out of her chamber (which many times lay seuerally from her husband) could not refraine weeping, lamenting the ill fortune of his lord, who thinkinge that he had had an honest wyfe, was abused with an impudent and vnshamefast whore. Then he began to frame a long oracion, against the incontinenzie of women, moued rather through the good will hee bare to his mayster, then to the truth of the matter, which vndiscretely he spake against the order of women kynd. So ignorant was he of the treason and indeuour of the steward, who demaunded of him what was to be done in that matter? "What," sayd the old gentleman, "such wickednesse ought not to be vnpunished. My lorde must be aduertised hereof, that the house maye be purged of suche a plague and infection, that hee maye euidentlye vnderstande the hypocrisie of her that so longe time hath kepte close her incontinenzie, vnder the vaile of fayned chastitie." But the righteous God made openly to appeare before mens eyes the secrete sinnes of the wicked, to thintent greater slaunders should not increase.

The steward very ioyful that he had gotten so honeste a man to be a witnesse of his accusation, approued his aduise, for that it agreed wel with his intent. So they two together went to the lord, with countenance sad and heauie, correspondent to their minde, and specially the traitour, whose sense was so confounded with gladnesse, that thinking to begin his tale his wordes so stucke in his mouth as he was not able to vtter a word. Whereat the lorde was wonderfully abashed, marueyling what that timidite did meane, till he had heard the vnfaithfull stewarde tell his tale, who sayde to him in this maner. " My lord, I am sory that it is my lotte to declare vnto you a matter hitherto vnknownen and not marked or taken heede of by any, which wyl so much offend you, as any pleasure that euer till this day did please and content you. And God knoweth what griefe it is to me (in your presence) to be an accuser of a person in the world, which I haue esteemed nexte vnto you aboue anye other creature that lyueth: but being in that place I am, I might (by good deserte) be accused of treason and felonie if concealing such a detestable crime, I should leaue the dutie of fidelitie to an other, lesse desirous to do you seruice then I am. Who beleueth there is no second person, that desireth better to acquite the goodnes and preferment which I haue receyued of your lordship, then I do. This it is my lord: my lady misprising her duty to your lordship, and the honour of the house whereof shee came, hath not disdayned to receiue into her chamber at inconuenient time, the foole that is called her darelinge, and in the place into which none but your honour, ought to haue peaceable entrie: whereof this gentleman present (whom you know to be without comparison) shalbe witnesse: touching myselfe the fayth and trust, which alwayes I haue vsed in all your affayres, and the litle affection which I haue to things contrary to vertue, shal giue true testimonie of that which I haue saide." The lorde hearing these pitifull newes, which pearced his harte more deepe then anye two edged sword, at the first was so astonied, that he could not tell what to say or do, sauing the ardente furie of cholere made him distill a certaine melancholique humour into his eyes, which receyued the superfluous vapours of his braine. At length breakinge that forth, which troubled him with-

in, and grindinge his teethe for furie, with stutteringe and vncertaine voice, fetchinge sighes betweene, saide: "O God, what newes be these that I heare? Is it possible, that the fairest and chastest lady that liueth, hath in this wise defaced her honour: and so wickedly blemished my reputation? Alas, if it so be, that she hath in this wise disparaged herselfe, no trust is to be reposed in any other, what soeuer she bee. Ah, God! vnder what planet was I borne, that after so longe pleasure receiued with my beloued fere and companion, I should by her feelee a displeasure, an hundred times worse then death? Is there no remedie but that my house muste receiue and see an enterprise so vilanous, by her onely meane, which ought rather to haue been the ornamente and beautie of the same?" Then he chaufed vp and downe the chamber, without speaking any more wordes, with his eyes rolling in his heade, making straunge countenaunces, which did well expresse the grieve that vexed and tormented his minde. In the ende halfe pacified, he tourned his face toward the accuser, saying: "My frende if this be true, which thou hast told mee, I sweare by God, that I will make her feelee the smarte of such greuous punishmente, as shalbe spoken of for euer. But if my wyfe be slaundred, and accused wrongfully, assure thy selfe that I will be reuenged vppon thee. I know the vertue of this gentleman very well (hauing had good prooffe thereof) and of thy fidelitie I am nothing at all in doubt. But, alas! the loue that I beare vnto my wife, and her former vertue, which maketh mee to loue and esteeme her so much, doth throughlye pearce my hart, and much adoe I haue to liue hearing this reporte: which doth deface and blotte all the honestie and vertue that euer remained in mee." "And that was it my lord, (answared the traitour) which did deceiue you. For the shewe of that painted vertue did so delude you, that you be almoste bewitched from vnderstanding the wronge, so manifestlye perpetrated against you, and all your house. Now to thend, that you thincke not the accusacion to be false, I trust (if it please you to assist me) to let you see the thing, whereof wee haue giuen you intelligence." "I wil do (sayd the lord) what you will haue me, although it be to my great grieve and sorow." "To morow morning then (answared the traitour) one hower before day, I

will let you see the varlet goinge out of her chamber with so great ioy, as I do conceiue heauines and grieve for the simple remembraunce of so greate wickednes." When they were agreed hereupon, this knaue most detestable, weauing the toile wherein he himselfe was caughte, wente to suborne the personage of his foole, holy made and instructed in his trumperie: leauinge the poore lord with a hamer working in his head, that he was lyke to runne out of his wittes. So great is the furious force of the poison of ialosie, whych ones hauing dispersed the venime ouer the harte and intrayles of men, the wysest sorte haue lost the due discretion of theyr wittes. In the morning about the hower that the amorous foole (ignoraunt wherfore he went in) should issue out of his maistresse chamber, the stewarde rauished with inexplicable ioye and gladnesse, like to the pleasure of hym that had attayned the summe of his desires, called hys lorde to see that heauey and dolourous sighte. The good gentleman, perceyuing the report to be true, and thincking that she had vsed the foole to be her bed-felowe, was lyke to haue dyed for sorow, or els to haue torne in peeces that vnhappy sotte, innocent of the euill suspected by the lorde, who durst not so much as thincke to do such a wicked fact. In the ende geuing place to reason, he caused the poore foole to be apprehended, and put in the bottome of a dongeon, and beyonde measure was offended wyth his wyfe, for that he thought the simplicitie of the imprisoned wretche, had not the face to demaund the question, and therefore did verely beleeeue that it was she that had induced him to do the deede to satisfie her vnbrideled and filthy lust, and therefore caused her to be shut vp, within a darke and stincking prison, not meaninge to see her, or to heare her speake for her iustification, ne yet woulde suffer that any man should take vppon hym to stand in her defence, to bring witnesse of her innocency. "For" (sayd he, replete wyth wrath and anger): "I do better beleue that which I haue seene, and knowen by myne owne presence, then your wordes, vayne reasons, and complaintes of no good ground and effecte as founden vppon her, that hath to muche forgotten herselfe, and her dutye towards me." Moreouer vanquished with the cholere (not without cause truly) of a husband that thought himselfe by her onely meanes deceyued and betrayed, sent

word to the poore captiue, that she should then prouide for her soules health, sith he was determined the very same day to make her play a tragedy, more cruell then that was pleasaunt, which she had already done wyth her beloued, in extruding her to be deuoured of hys lions, which were the ministers for the execution of the iustice ordayned against her, as thoughe she had bin the most lasciuious and detestable woman that euer the earth brought forth. The fayre and innocent lady, knowing the humour and cholere of her husband, and likewyse seing (contrary to right order of all iudgement) that she could not be heard or suffred to make aunswere, passed throughe the rigorous law of hym, that thoughte her to be an adultresse: and could not tell what to doe but to lamente her ill fortune, gushing forth teares in such abundance, as the most part of her attyre were wet and bedewed with the same, then fortelying herselfe in the hope of the mercifull hande of Almighty God the father of all consolacion, who neuer forgetteth them, which with intire faith do call vppon him, and appeale to the succour of the holy and precious name of his sonne Iesus Christe our sauour, she with compunction of hart, and sincere deuocion, with ioyned handes and knees vppon the grounde, addressing her eyes to the heauens, prayed in this wyse: "Alas, my God, I do knowe and confesse, that the multitude of my sinnes do surpasse the sea sands, and am not ignoraunt, that this unhappie time is chaunced vnto me, for the punishment of my forepassed offences. Notwithstandinge (Lord) accordinge to thy greate goodnes, haue no respecte vnto my demerites and wickednes (whereof my life is ful) but rather extende thy fauour and mercy vppon thy poore creature, whose innocencie thou (which art the searcher of mennes hartes) doest well vnderstande and knowe, I do not desire prolongation of miserable lyfe, onely maye it please thee (O God) for thy goodnes and iustice sake, to saue mine honour, and to graunt that my husbände maye see with what integritie I haue alwayes honoured the holy band of mariage, by thee ordayned, to thintent he may liue from henceforth quiet of his suspicion conceyued of mee, and that my parentes may not sustaine the blot of ignominie, which will make theym blushe, when they shall heare reporte of my forepassed life." She beinge

in these contemplacions and holye prayers, preparinge herselfe to receyue death, her husband caused her to be conueyed into the parke of lions, which being straunge and terrible at the first sight, did marueylouslie affray her, but remembring how innocent she was, putting her hope in God, she wente thither with such constancie and courage, as if she had bin ledde to some ioyous banquet, and the people which neuer heard tell before of suche a kinde of death, was assembled in great multitude, tarying to see the ende of that execution, and talking diuersly of that sodaine iudgement, prayed all with one voyce, for the preservation of the ladie, of whose chastitie they were alredy right well assured. Now as they attended for the time of execution, the lady was placed in the mid of the parke, not without teares and sighes of the assistantes who murmured at the remembraunce of the horror of a sight so furious. The innocent ladye kneeled downe vpon her knees, and both by gesture and mery countenance, shewed how ioyful she went to suffer that which she had neuer deserued: then recommending her soule to God, for whose saluation she stedfastly hoped, she pronounced this praier a loude: "O my Lorde God, whiche diddest ones deliuer Daniell from a daunger like to this, wherunto the false accusation of the wicked, haue wrongfully cast me hedlond: and diddest discharge Susanna from the slaunder of the peruerse and adulterous iudges, pleaseth the pitifully to behold thy poore creature. Pardon, O Lorde! forgiue I humblie besече thee, the simplicitie of my deare husband, who dealeth thus with mee, rather through the circumuention of deceitfull cauling slaunderers, then by his owne malice and crueltie. Receiue, O my God, and mercifull father, receiue my soule betwene thy blessed handes, which thou hast redemed by the bloudshedding of thy sonne Iesus, vpon the tree of the crosse!" As she had ended these wordes, she sawe the lions come forth ramping, and bristling vp their heare, stretching forth their pawes with roaring voice, cruelly looking round about them, of whom the lady thought to be the present pray. But the goodnesse of God, who is a iust iudge, and suffreth his owne elect to be proued to the extremitie, of purpose to make their glorie the greater, and the ruine of the wicked more apparaunt, manifested there an euident miracle. For

the lions (being cruell of nature, and that time hungrie and gredie of pray) in lieu of tearing the ladie in pieces, to gorge their raue-ning paunche, they fill to licking and fawning vppon her, making so much of her as if they had familiarly ben nourished with her own breastes. A thing no lesse pleasaunt to the ladye then merueilous to all the people standing round about, who seing a chaunce so miraculous cried out, incontinently for the deliuerie of the ladie, and for vengeaunce to be taken of him, which so wickedly had protruded her into that daunger: which for her vertue, ought to be extolled and praised of the whole world. When the noble man was certified of this straunge aduenture, hee caused his steward to be apprehended and imprisoned, whose conscience forced great remorse, yet not knowing the ende of the tragedie, condemned himselfe by his countenance. During his imprisonment the deposition of the beloued foole was taken, who saide: "That by the suggestion of the malicious steward, many times (ignoraunt to the lady) he conueied himself in her chamber, not knowing wherunto the intent of him that caused him so to do did tende." The other gentleman made excuse (although he was blame worthy) that he was deceiued by the same false practise, that the lorde himselfe was. The steward openly confessed the treason, which he had devised against the ladie, and the whole occasion thereof, and thinking to be reuenged of the refusall of loue by her denied, he framed this slaunder to make her lose her life. Which the lord hearing could not abide that his death should any longer be respected, but without other forme of lawe, he was thrust out to the lions, and was presently seased vpon, and torne in peeces by those beastes, which by Gods iuste iudgement, did absteine from the good ladie, for the punishment of the detestable sinne of this varlet. In the meane time the chaste and innocent ladie, being brought before her husbände, after he had kissed and imbrased her, with humble reuerence she sayde vnto him: "My lorde, I render my humble thanks to God, for that through his holy grace, and inscrutable iustice, he hath let you to vnderstande, two diuers affections, in two seuerall persones of this worlde, which you loue so well. In one, the treason so pernicious, which prouoked you to soile and imbrue your handes (not without



ill this daye proued contrarie) in the bloud of your faith-
 dere beloued wife. In thother, a will and minde so good
 you, and to persist in continuation of that effecte,
 maketh her generally to be prayesd, and worthy of your
 loue, for so much as she is your very affectionate spouse.
 standing, iustly may I make my complaint of you,
 without excuse for my discharge, or hearing any thing
 might serue for my purgation, you condemned her, for
 honour and defence you ought to haue imployed both
 and life. But God shalbe iudge betwene your litle discre-
 d my righteousness, betwene mine obedience and your
 wherewith you haue abused the nobilitie, of the race
 I came." The husbände hearing this wise and iust com-
 on the one side transported with ioye, leapt and reioysed,
 his deare companion in libertie, and declared to be inno-
 the other parte he blushed for shame, that hee had so
 and without better prooffe and trial condemned her, whom
 his grace had preserued from the lions throates, and durste
 vp his head, by reason his harte freated at the remem-
 of his light credite and furie immoderate. Finallie im-
 his wife, and kissing her louingly, said vnto her: "Ma-
 d deare beloued wife, I can not denye, but foolishly I
 empted to blemishe the honor of her, that whilome made
 ine and glisten amongst the best and chief of al this coun-
 he that doth wel marke and beholde the galle and dis-
 a husband louing his wyfe, and then vnderstandyng her
 and greates forgetfulnesse whiche shee hath, bothe of his
 and glorie of his comforte; will easely excuse and pardon
 whiche I will not by any meanes colour and cloke, but
 sue pardon at your handes, assuring you, that I will
 and requite the same, so well and in suche wise as you
 shall haue no cause but to be content and satisfied."
 eth me, sir, (quod she) that my gittlesse offence is knowen
 and that I haue recouered place in your fauourable ac-
 : for I doe accompte mine aduersitie well imployed,
 by you and your friendes may glorie, of the seuerie ius-
 tred against malefactors, and I reioyce in resistance of

the assaultes of loue, and of death to garde and kepe my chastitie pure and inuiolable: and may serue for example to euery honourable ladie, being assailed with suche strong and mightie aduersaries, to kepe them selues honest. For the crowne is not due but to her that shall lawfully combate to the ende." After this the lorde by perswasion of his wife, commaunded that the foole should be auoided the house, that his presence might not grieue or torment her, ne yet renewe the memorie of a thing that neuer was thought or doen. And not without cause: for the lorde, whiche reclined his eare to euery trifling report, and credited the woordes of euery whistling pikethanke, had much a do to escape from doing thinges vnworthy his estate and calling. Of so great force truely is the venime of such serpentes, that seasing by little and little, the harte of him disposed to receiue it in furie, maketh it to be in effect like the nature of poyson and drogues corrupt: wherof men ought to be no lesse, but rather more diligent and carefull then of meates, amonges persones whom they suspect and feare, sithens that maladies and infections of minde be farre more daungerous then outward passions, which torment the body. Whereunto if the said noble man was not hede-full, he felt the damage for penaunce of his inconsideration. Howbeit as thinges, both good and ill amonges men, bee not still durable and perpetuall, certaine daies after, he began to solace hymselfe with his wife, and rode an huntinge abroad, visited his neighbours, and at home made great feastes and banquettes, whereunto his kindred and frends were inuited, to congratulate this newe alliaunce, endeavouring thereby to satisfie the fault committed, and the better to gratifie and pleasure his wyfe, to make her know how much more hee esteemed and regarded her then before: hee caused the successe of this presente historie, to be ingrauen with great industrie, and marueilous cunning in marble, which he placed ouer the gate of the first entrie into his castell, aswell to immortalize the great chastitie of his fayre and vertuous wife, as to set forth a mirrour and example to euery housholde seruaunt, and to all other whatsoever they bee, to beware how they attempt any thing against the honour of ladies. For many times it chaunceth, that he which diggeth a ditch, and setteth vp a gallowes, is the first that doth

fall, or is stretched thereuppon. As you maye see by this present discourse, which setteth before your eyes what ende the fonde loue of them ordinarily haue, which without reason, not measuring their owne ability, doe suffer themselves to be guided and led into their sensuall lustes and appetites: for ill successe faileth not in a beginning, the ground whereof abhorring reason, is planted and layed vppon the sandie foundation of pleasure, which is shaken and ouerthrowen, by the least winde and tempest that fortune can bluster against such building.

THE FORTY-SECOND NOUELL.

Didaco a Spaniarde, is in loue with a poore maiden of Valencia, and secretly marieth her, afterwarde lothinge his first mariage, because she was of base parentage, he marieth an other of noble birth. His first wyfe, by secrete messenger prayeth his company, whose request he accomplisheth. Beinge a bedde, shee and her maide killeth him. She throweth him into the streete: shee in desperate wise confesseth the facte before the maiestrates, and is put to death.

THERE is no man but doth knowe, that Valencia is at this day, the chiefe and onely rampar of Spaine, the true seate of faith, iustice and humanity. And amonges all the rare and excellent ornamentes, that citie is wel furnished with so trimme ladies and curteous gentlewomen, as they know how to baite and feede yong men with foolish daliaunce, and idle pasetime. So that if there be any beetlehead or grosse person, the better to allure and prouoke him to those follies, they tell him by a common prouerbe: That he must go to Valencia. In this citie there was in old time as it is at this day, a verye aunciente stocke and familie called Ventimiglia, oute of which be descended a great number of riche and honourable knightes. Amonges whom, not long time paste, there was one named Didaco, verye famous and renowned to be the most liberall and familiar gentleman of the city, who (for want of better businesse) walked vppe and downe the citie, and so consumed his youth in triumphes, maskes, and other expences, common and apte for suche pilgrimes, addressing his loue indifferently to al women, without greater affection to one, then to an other, and continued that order, till vppon an holy daye, he espyed a yonge mayde of final yeares, but of very exquisite beauty: which maiden sodainlye castinge her eye vppon him, so pearced the knighte Didaco with her looke, that from that time forth shee entred more neare his hart than any other. And after he had well marked her dwelling place, he many times passed and repassed before the doore, to espie if he might get some loke or other fauour of her, that began already to gouerne the bridle of his

thoughtes, and if it chaunced that the gentleman beheld her, she shewed herselfe curteous and amiable, indued with grace so good as he neuer departed ill contented out of the streate. The gentleman continuing certaine time in those vanities, was desirous to know a far of what she was, of what lineage and of what vocation. And after he had curiously searched out all her original, he vnderstoode by diuers reporte, that she was a goldsmithes doughter, whose father was dead certaine yeares before, hauinge no more but her mother aliue, and two brethren, both of their father's science. Notwithstanding, of life she was chaste and honest, defamed with none, although shee was pursued of many. Her outward beautie did not so much set her forth, as her grace and order of talke, who although brought vp in a citizen's house, yet no lady or gentlewoman in the citie, was comparable to her in vertue and behaiour. For from her tender yeares, she was not onely giuen to her nedle (a meete exercise for mayds of her degre,) but also was trayned vp to write and reade, wherein she toke so greate pleasure, as ordinarilie shee caried a booke in her hande, which she neuer gaue ouer, till she had gathered som fruit thereof. This knight hauing receyued that first impression, of the valor and vertue of Violenta (for that was her name) was further in loue then before: and that which added more oile to the matche, was the continuall lookes, wherwith she knew howe to delight him: and wyth them shee was so liberall, that so oft as he passed through the streate she shot them forth so cruelly, as his poore hart (feeling it selfe so tormented) could not indure that new onset. By reason whereof, thincking to quench the fire, that by litle and litle consumed him, he attempted her chastity, with giftes, letters, and messengers, which he continued the space of halfe a yeare or more. Whereunto Violenta geuing no place, in the ende hee was constrayned to assayle her with his owne presence: and one daye finding her alone at the doore, after he had made a verye humble reuerence vnto her, he sayde: "Maistresse Violenta, considering your order and the colde regard that you haue to my letters and messages, I do remember the subtiltye that is attributed to the serpente, who with his taile stoppeth his eares, because he will not heare the words, which hath power to constraine him to do against his wil, which

hath made me to leaue to write vnto you, and to desire specially to speake vnto you, that mine affectuous accentres, my sorowful words and feruent sighes mighte certifie you better then paper, the rest of my passion, beleuing verely, that if the heauy sound of my greuous complaints, may come to your delicate eares, they will make you to vnderstand a part of that good and euill, which I feele continually in my harte, although the lone which I beare you, be such as I cannot giue such liuely experience outwardly, being but litle in comparison of them, which may be scene within." And pronouncing those words, there followed so many teares, sobbes and sighes, as they gaue sufficient testimony, that his tongue was the true and faithfull messenger of his hart. Wherof Violenta some what ashamed, with a constante grace said vnto him: "Senior Didaco, if you do yet remember your life past, and mine honesty (which peraduenture you haue thought either rude or cruell) I doubt not, that you haue any cause to maruaile of my presumption and to attribute that to vice, which is familiar with vertue. For although that you haue sollicited mee to loue you, by an infinite nomber of letters and messages, yet it is so, that following the nature of maydes of my degree, I haue neither allowed them, nor yet condempned them, as wherunto accordingly I haue made no aunswere: not for despite or contempt, but to let you know more certainly, that by fauouring your enterprises, I should increase your grieffe, which can receiue none ende by the waye you pretende. For although that I haue made the firste prooffe vpon my selfe, and therefore of reason I ought to lamente them, whiche be in semblable paine, yet I will not let slippe the bridle in suche wise to my passion, that mine honestie shall remaine in an other man's power, and (so it may be) at the mercie and curtesie of them, who not knowing howe dere it is to me, shall thinke they haue made a pretie conquest. And that I maye haue no cause to repent to late, I haue stopped mine eares for feare, that I be not arested and stayed with the violence of your charmes, a thing as you say proper to serpentes. But I haue fortified my harte, and so armed my inwarde minde, as if God continue that grace in me, which hitherto he hath done, I hope not to be surprised. Although that I must needes confesse (to my shame) that I haue receiued marueilous

assaultes of loue, not onely for the common renowme of your vertues, and through the curtesie and gentlenesse dayly imparted to me by your letters, but specially by your presence, whiche hath yelded vnto me experience and assuraunce of that, whiche all the letters of the world could not do, nor all other messages were not able to conceiue. And to the ende that I may not be vtterly ingrate, and that you doe not departe from me, altogether discontent, I doe promise you nowe that from henceforth, you shall inioye the first place of my harte, whereunto an other shall neuer enter: if so be you can be content with honest amitie, wherein you shall finde me in time to come so liberall, in all that whiche honestie shall permitte, that I am contente to forgoe the name of a presumptuous or cruell damosell for your sake. But if you meane to abuse me, or hope for anye thing of me, contrarie to mine honour, you be meruailously deceiued. Wherefore if you thinke your worthinesse to great to cary away a recompence so small, you shall doe very wel both for me and yourselfe, in forgetting that is past, to cut of all hope in time to come." And she thinking to prolonge a further discourse, the mother of Violenta which stil stode at the wyndowe al the time that Senior Didaco was with her doughter, came downe to the doore, interrupting their talke, saide to Didaco: "Sir, I suppose you take great pleasure in the follie of my doughter, because you tarie and abide here, rather to contriue your tyme, then for any other contentacion you can receiue. For she is so euill taught, and of suche rude behauiour, that her demeanour will rather trouble you, then geue you cause of delight." "Maistresse," said Didaco, "although in the beginning I purposed not to tary so long, yet when I entred in more familiar acquaintance and had well experienced her good graces, I confesse that I haue staied here longer then I thought. And were hee neuer so great a lorde, that liueth at this daie, I dare auouche that he might thinke his tyme well spent, in hearing suche sober and honest talke, wherewith I thinke my selfe so well satisfied and instructed, as all the daies of my life I wyll witnesse, that vertue, curtesie, and sober behauiour is to bee founde, as well in meane degrees and houses, as in them that be right noble, amonges which meane families, although she be one (it maye so be) that

one more illustre and noble, can not bee more excellent, and accomplished with better manners, then shee : whiche is nowe well manifested to mee in this litle discourse." And after certaine other common talke, Didaco tooke his leaue, and wente home to his house, where hee lyued fourtene or fiftene monethes without any reste, assaying by all meanes to mortifie his desires, but it auayled not : For although he was ryche, a trymme courtiar, and an eloquent gentleman, and had oportunitie to speake vnto her many times, and she gentle enough to heare him, and to vnderstande his errantes, and was assured by frendes that she for her part was also in loue, yet he was not able by humane arte and pollicie, to conuerte her to his mynde. Wherewithall hee was long tyme molested, and at lengthe pressed with grief and annoyance, hee was aduised to sende sixe hundred ducates to the mother, for a reliefe to the mariage of her doughter, promising besides, that he would assigne her an honest dowrie, when she found a man worthy to be her husbände : vpon condicion that she would yelde to him some comforte, to ease his affection. But shee whiche could not be wonne with loue, was not able to bee recouered with money : and was offended that Senior Didaco had forgotten him selfe so farre as to thinke to gaine that for money, whiche with so great paine, teares and sighes, had bene denied him. And to make him vnderstande howe she was offended, shee sent woorde by him that brought her the money, that he should goe and prone hereafter to deceiue them that measured their honour with the price of profite, and not to sette trappes to deceiue other that would buye nothing hurtfull to vertue. And after Didaco was aduertised of her minde, and perceiued that he lost time in all his enterprises, and was able no longer to susteine his extreme paine and sorowe, whiche daily augmented, and when hee had debated in his minde all the successe of his loue, he resolved in the end vpon that which he thought moste profitable for his quiet, whiche was to marye her. And although she was of no suche house, and yet lesse indowed with substaunce, as he deserued, yet her beautie and vertue, and other giftes of grace, wherewith she was enriched, made her worthie of a great lorde. And resolved vpon this, hee repaired to Violenta, to whom he said : " Maistresse Violenta, if the true touch-

stone to knowe them that be perfecte louers (amonges other) is mariage, certainly you haue gotten a husbände of me, if it please you to accepte me for suche one, whome in time you shall make to vnderstande the difference betweene goodes and vertue, and betweene honestie and richesse." Violenta then rauished with ioye, and incredible contentation, somewhat abashed, sayd vnto him: "Senior Didaco, I knowe not whether you pretende by woordes to proue my constancie, or els to bring me into fooles paradise: but of one thing I can assure you, that although I acknowledge my selfe inferiour to you in merites, goodes and vertue, yet if that come to passe which you promise, I will not geue place to you in loue, trusting if God sende vs life together, you shall well vnderstande one daye that you would not exchaunge my persone for a greater ladie, what so euer she be." For confirmation whereof, Didaco plucked from his finger an emeralde of great value, which (when he had kissed her) he gaue vnto her in the waye of mariage, praying her that she would not disclose it for a certaine time, vntill he him selfe had made all his frendes priuie vnto it. Notwithstanding, he willed her to imparte the same to her twoo brethren, and to her mother, and he would get some priest of the countrie to solempnize the mariage within their house: which was doen in a chamber, about fower of the clocke in the morning, being onely present the mother, the brethren, the prieste, and a seruauant of the house, brought vp there from her youthe, and his own man, without making any other preparation of coste, requisite for suche a matter. In this sorte they spent the day in great ioye and mirthe (which they can conceiue, that be of base birth, and exalted to some highe degree of honour) till night was come, and then euery man withdrewe them selues, leauing the bride and her husbände to the mercie of loue, and order of the night. Who being alone receiued equal ioye, and like contentation, which they fele that being pressed with ardent and greuous thirste, doe in the ende afterwarde with liuely ioye, and all kinde of libertie, quenche that cruell discommoditie. And continued in those pleasures till morning, that daye began to appeare, to whome Violenta saide: "My honourable lorde and dere husbände, sithe that you be nowe in possession of that which you haue so greatly desired, I humbly beseche you, to con-

sider for the time to come, howe and what wyse your pleasure is that I shall vse my selfe. For if God graunt me the grace to be so discrete in pleasing you, as I shalbe readie and desirous to obey you, in all that you shall commaunde mee, there was neuer gentleman's seruaunt, that did more willingly please his maister, then I hope to doe you." Whereunto Didaco aunswered: " My sweete and welbeloued wife, let vs leaue this humblenesse and seruice for this time, to them whiche delight in them: for I promise you of my faith, that I haue you in no lesse reuerence and estimation, then if you had come of the greatest house in Cathalongne: as I will make you vnderstande some other time, at more leasure. But till I haue giuen order to certaine of mine affaires, I praye you to kepe our mariage secrete, and bee not offended if many times I do resorte home to mine own house, although ther shall no daye passe (by my wil) but at night I will kepe you companie. In the meane time to buye you necessities, I will sende you a thousande, or twelue hundred ducates, to imploye not vpon apparell, or other thinges requisite to your degree (for I will provide the same my selfe at an other time) but vpon small trifles, such as be apt and conuenient for housholde." And so departed Senior Didaco from his wiue's house: who did so louingly interteigne him as by the space of a yeare, there was no daye wherein he was content without the view and sight of his wife. And vpon his ofte resorte to their house, the neighbours began to suspect that he kept the mayden, and rebuked her mother and brethren, but specially Violenta, for suffering Didaco to vse their house in suche secrete wise: and aboue al they lamented the ill happe of Violenta, who being so wel brought vp till she was twentie yeares of age, and a maiden of such beautie, that there was none in all the citie of Valencia but greatly did esteme her to be of singuler honestie and reputation. Notwithstanding, degenerating from her accustomed vertue, they iudged her to be light of behaiour, giuen to lasciuious loue: and albeit that verie many times, such checkes and tauntes were obiected, yet she made smal accompte of them, knowing that her conscience by anye meanes was not charged with such reproch: hoping therewithall that one daye she would make them to giue ouer that false opinion when her

ge should be published and knowen. But certaine times
g her selfe touched, and her honestie appaired, could not con-
but when she sawe time with her husband, she prayed him
earnestlie to haue her home to his own house, to auoyde
ler and defamacion of neighbours. But sir Didaco knewe so
owe to vse his wife by delaies and promises, as she agreed
him in all thinges, and had rather displease the whole world
her then offende him alone. Being now so attached with
ue of the knight as she cared for nothing els, but to please
content him in al things wherunto she sawe him disposed,
ke as in the beginning she was harde and very slacke in
owe she became so feruent and earnest in her affections as
ceiued no pleasure but in the sight of Didaco, or in that
might content and please him best. Which the knight
sely perceiue, and seing him selfe in full possession of her
began by litle and litle to waxe cold, and to be grieved at
hich before he compted deare and precious, perswading
f that he should do wrong to his reputation, if that mariage
thy of his estate, were discouered and knowen in the citie:
prouide for the same, he more seldome tymes repaired to
his wife Violenta: yea and when soeuer he resorted to her,
more to satisfie his carnall pleasure, then for any loue he
er. And thus forgetting both God and his owne conscience,
quented other companies in diuerse places, to winne the
will of some other gentlewoman. In the ende by sundrie
dissimulations, and hipocrisies, he so behaued him self, as he
red the good wil of the doughter of Senior Ramyrion Vig-
ta, one of the chieftest knightes, and of moste auncient house
entia. And (as we haue declared before) because he was
and wealthie, and issued of a noble race, her parentes did
agree to the mariage: and the father hauing assigned an
able dowrie to his doughter, the nupcials were celebrated
ely with great pompe and solemnitie, to the singuler con-
on of all men. The mariage done and ended, Sir Didaco
newe wife continued at the house of his father in lawe,
he liued a certaine time in suche pleasure and delectation
y do that be newly married. Wherof the mother and

brethren of Violenta being aduertised, conceiued like sorowe, as accustomably they doe, that see the honor of them that be issued of their owne bloud vniustly and without cause to be dispoiled. And these poore miserable creatures, not knowing to whom to make their complainte, liued in straunge perplexitie, bicause they knew not the priest which did solempnise their mariage. On the other side they had no sufficient prooffe of the same. And albeit they were able to verifie in some poinctes the first mariage of Didaco, yet they durst not prosecute the lawe against two of the greatest lordes of their citie: and knowing the stoute hart of Violenta, they thought to conceale the same from her for a time, but it was in vaine: for not long after shee was certified thereof, not onely by the next neighbours, but by the common brute of the citie, which reported that in tenne yeres space, there was not seen in Valencia, a mariage more honourable or royall, nor frequented with a nobler companie of gentlemen and ladies, then the same was of the yong knight Didaco, with the doughter of Senior Ramyrio. Wherewithall Violenta vexed beyonde measure pressed with yre and furie, withdrewe her selfe into her chamber alone, and there began to scratche and teare her face and heare, like one that was madde and out of her wittes, saying: " Alas, alas, what payne and trouble, what vnmeasurable tormentes suffreth nowe my poore afflicted mynde, without comfort or consolation of any creature liuing? what dure and cruell penaunce doe I susteine, for none offence at all? Ah! fortune, fortune, the enemy of my felicitie and blisse, thou haste so depriued me of all remedie, as I dare not so muche as to make any man know or vnderstand my mishap that the same might be reuenged, which being doen would render such content to my mind, that I should departe out of this worlde the beste satisfied mayden that euer died. Alas, that the goddes did not graunte me the benefite, that I might haue come of noble kinde, to the intent I might haue caused that trayterous ruffien, to feele the grievous paine and bitter tormentes, which my poore harte susteineth. Ah wretched caitife that I am, abandoned and forlorne of all good fortune: nowe I doe see that with the eies of my minde, which with those of my body daseled and deceiued, I could not see or perceiue. Ah cruell enemy of all

pitie, doest thou not knowe and feele in thy minde, the heauie and sorowfull sounde of my bitter plaintes? Vnderstandest not thou my voyce that crieth vengeaunce vpon thee for thy misdede? Can not thy crueltie in nothing be diminished seing me dismembred with the terrour of a thousand furious martirdomes? Ah ingrate wretche, is this now the rewarde of my loue, of my faithfull seruice, and mine obedience?" And as she thus bitterly tormented her selfe, her mother and brethren, and her maide, whiche was brought vp with her from her tender yeres, went vp to the chamber to Violenta, where they found her then so deformed with rage and furie, that almoste she was out of their knowledge. And when they went about to reduce her by al meanes possible from those furious panges, and saw that it nothing auailed, they lefte her in the keeping of the olde maiden, whom she loued aboue any other. And after the maiden had vttered vnto her particularly many reasons, for the appeasing of her grieve, she told her that if she would be quiet a litle while, she would go and speake to the knight Didaco, and make him to vnderstand his fault. And would with discrete order so deale with him, that he should come home to her house, and therefore shee prayed her to arme herselfe against this wickednes, and to dissemble the matter for a time, that hereafter she might vse vpon him iust reuenge. "No, no Ianique" answered Violenta, "that offence is very small and lighte, where counsaile is receiued: and albeit that I cannot chose, but confesse thine aduise to be very meete, yet there wanteth in me a minde to followe it: that if I did feele any part in me disposed to obeye the same, I would euen before thy face, separate that minde from my wretched bodie: for I am so resolved in the mallice and hatred of Didaco, as he cannot satisfie me without life alone. And I beleue the gods did cause me to be borne with mine owne hands to execute vengeaunce of their wrath and the losse of mine honour. Wherefore, Ianique, if from my youth thou diddest euer loue me, shew now the same to me by effect, in a matter whereunto thy helpe is moste necessary: for I am so outraged in my mischief, as I do enuie the miserablest creatures of the world, remayning no more in me to continue life in wailing and continuall sighes, but the title of a vile and

abominable whore. Thou art a straunger and liuest here a beastly life, ioyned with continuall labour: I haue twelue hundred crownes with certaine iewelless, which that false traitour gaue me, which be predestinated by the heauens for none other purpose but to paie them their hire, which shall do the vengeaunce vpon his disloyall persone. I doe put the same money now into thy hands, if thou wilt helpe mee to make sacrifice with the bodye of poore Didaco: but if thou doest denie me thy helpe I will execute the same alone: and in case he do not die, as I do intende, he shalbe mured as I may, for the first time that I shal see him with mine eyes, come of it what will, his life shalbe dispatched with these two trembling hands which thou seest." Ianique seing her maistresse in these termes, and knowinge her stoute nature, indued with a manly and inuincible stomacke, after shee had debated manye thinges in her minde, she determined wholie to imploye herselfe for her maistres in that shee was able to doe. Moued partly with pitie to see her maistres dishonored with a defamed mariage, and partly prouoked with couetousnes to gaine so great a summe of money, which her maistres did offer if she would condescende to her enterprise (thinking after the fact committed, to flee into some other cuntrye.) And when shee was throughlye resolved vpon the same, shee imbraced Violenta, and said vnto her: " Maistres, if you will be ruled by mee, and giue ouer the vehemencie of your wrathe and displeasure, I haue found a way for you to be reuenged vpon Didaco, who hath so wickedly deceyued you: and albeit the same cannot be doen secretly, but in the end it must be knowen, yet I doubte not but the cause declared before the iudges, and they vnderstandinge the wronge hee hath doen you, they wil haue compassion vpon your miserie: who know right well that alwayes you haue been knowen and esteemed for a very honest and vertuous maiden: and to the ende that you be informed how this matter may be broughte to passe, first you must learne to dissemble your grieve openlye, and to faine your selfe in anye wise not to bee offended with the new mariage of the knight. Then you shall write vnto him a letter with your owne hande, letting him therby to vnderstande the paine that you suffer for the greates loue you beare him, and ye shal

humble beseech him, some times to come and visite you. And sithe that frowarde fortune will not suffre you to be his wife, yet that it would please him to vse you as his louer, that you maye possesse the second place of his loue, sith by reason of his new wife you cannot inioy the first. Thus the deceiuour shalbe begiled by thinkinge to haue you at his commaundement as he was wont to doe: and being come hither to lie with you, we will handle him in such wise, as I haue inuented, that in one night he shall lose his life, his wife, and her whom hee thinketh to haue for his louer: for when he is a bedde with you, and fallen into his first sleepe, we will sende him into an other place where in a more sonder sleepe hee shall euerlastingly continue." Violenta all this time which fed her bloudie and cruell harte with none other repaste but with rage and disdaine, began to bee appeased, and founde the counsaile of Ianique so good, as she wholly purposed to follow the same. And to begin her enterprise, shee prayde Ianique for a time to withdrawe her selfe, vntill shee had written her letter, by the tenor whereof shee should vnderstande with what audacitie shee would prosecute the reste: and being alone in her chamber, takinge penne and paper, she wrote to Didaco, with fayned hart as followeth. " Senior Didaco I am perswaded, that if you wil vouchsafe to read and peruse the contentes of these my sorowful letters, you shalbe moued with some compassion and pitie, by beholdinge the true image of my miserable life, pourtrayed and painted in the same, which through your disloyaltie and breach of promise is consumed and spent with so many teares, sighes, tormentes and griefes, that diuers times I maruaile howe nature can so long support and defende the violente assaultes of so cruell a martyrdome, and that she hath not many times torne my feeble spirite out of this cruell and mortall prison: which maketh me to thinke and beleue by continuinge life, that death himselfe hath conspired my miserie, and is the companion of my affliction: considering that by no torment she is able to make diuision betweene my soule and body. Alas, how many tenne hundred thousande times in a day haue I called for death, and yet I cannot make her to recline her eares vnto my cries. Alas, how many times am I vanquished with the sharpe tormentes of sorowe, redie to take my

leauē and last farewell of you, being arriued to the extreme panges of death. Beholde Didaco mine ordinary delites, behold my pleasures, behold all my pastime. But yet this is but litle in respect of that which chaunceth in the night: for if it happen that my poore eyes do fall a sleepe, weary with incessaunt drawing forth of well springes of teares, slombring dreames cease not then to vexē and afflict my minde, wyth the cruellest tormentes that are possible to be deuised, representing vnto me by their vglie and horrible visions, the ioye and contentacion of her, which inioyeth my place: wherby the greatest ioy which I conceiue is not inferior to cruell death. Thus my life maintayned with continuation of sorowes and griefes, is persecuted in most miserable wise: now (as you know) I dailye passe my sorow, vnder painefull silence, thinkinge that your olde promisses, confirmed with so many othes, and the assured prooffe which you still haue had of my faith and constancie, would haue broughte you to some order, but now seing with mine eyes, the hard mettall of your harte, and the crueltie of my fate, which wholie hath subdued mee to your obedience, for respect of mine honour: I am forced to complaine of him that beateth me, and thereby dispoileth me, both of mine honour and life, not vouchsafing onely so much as ones to come vnto mee. And vncertaine to whom I may make recourse, or where to finde redresse, I appeale vnto you, to thende that seing in what leane and vglie state I am, your cruelty maye altogether be satisfied, which beholdinge a sighte so pitifull, wherein the figure of my tormente is linelye expressed, it may be moued to some compassion. Come hither then thou cruell manne, come hither I saye, to visite her whom with some signe of humanitie, thou maiest staye or at least wise mollifie and appease the vengeance which shee prepareth for thee: and if euer sparke of pitie did warme thy frosen hart, arme thy selfe with greater crueltie then euer thou was wont to doe, and come hither to make her sobbe her laste and extreme sighes, whom thou haste wretchedly deceiued: for in doing otherwise thou maiest peraduenture to late bewaile my death and thy beastlye crueltie." And thinking to make a conclusion of her letter, the teares made her woords to die in her mouth, and woulde not suffer her to write any more:

fore she closed and sealed the same, and then calling Ianique
 er she said: " Holde, gentle Ianique, carye these letters
 im, and if thou canste so well playe thy parte as I haue doen
 hope wee shall haue shortly at our commaundement him
 the occasion of this my painfull life, more greuous vnto me
 thousand deathes together." Ianique hauing the letter,
 ed with diligence, and went to the house of the father in
 f Didaco, where quietly shee waited till shee mighte speake
 me of the house, which was within a while after: for one
 seruauntes of Didaco whom she knew right well, wente
 certaine his maisters busines, and meeting Ianique was
 l. Of whom she demaunded if the lord Didaco were with-
 saide that she would faine speake with him: but if it were
 e she would talke with him secretly. Wherof Didaco ad-
 l, came forth to her into the streate, to whom smilingly
 made to him a fayned reuerence) she said: " Senior
 I can neither write nor reade, but I dare laie my life, ther is
 ide vnto you by these letters, which madame Violenta hath
 o you. And in deede to say the truth, there is great in-
 en vnto her of your part, not in respecte of your new
 e: (for I neuer thought that Violenta was a wife meete
 , considering the difference of your estates) but because
 not vouchsafe to come vnto her, seeming that you make
 accompte of her and speciall ye for that you prouide no
 for her in som other place. And assure your selfe she
 re in loue with you, that she is redie to die as she goeth,
 wise that making her complaint vnto me this day weeping,
 vnto me: ' Well, for so much then as I cannot haue
 e my husbande, I would to God he would mainteigne
 is frende, and certaine times in the weeke to come to see
 cially in the night, lest he should be espied of the neigh-
 And certainly if you would followe her minde herein, you
 very well: for the case standeth thus, you may make your
 that you be prouided of so faire a wife, and with so beau-
 ende as any gentleman in Valentia." And then Ianique
 him the letter, which he receiued and redde, and hauing
 sidered the tenor of the same he was incontinently sur-
 t.

prised with a sodaine passion: for hatred and pitie, loue and disdain (as within a cloude be contained hotte and colde, with many contrary winds) began to combate together, and to vexe his hart with contrary minds, then pawsing vpon answere, he said vnto her: " Ianique, my dere frende, recomende mee to the good grace and fauour of thy maistres, and say vnto her, that for this time I will make her no answere, but to morow at fower of the clocke in the morning I will be at her house, and keepe her companie all the daye and nighte, and then I will tell her what I haue doen sithens I departed last from her, trusting shee shall haue no cause to be offended with me." And then Ianique taking her leaue, returned towarde Violenta, telling her what shee had doen. To whom Violenta answered: " Ianique, if thou hast made a good beginninge to our plotted enterprise, I likewise for my part haue not slept. For I haue deuised that wee must prouide for a stronge roape, which wee will fasten to the beddes side, and when hee shalbe a sleepe, I will caste the other ende of the rope to thee, ouerthwart the bedde, that thou maiest plucke the same with all thy mighte, and before thou beginnest to pull I will with a knife cutte his throate, wherefore thou muste prepare two great kniues, what soeuer they cost, but I pray thee let me alone with doing of the facte, that I may dispatche him of his life, which alone did make the first assault to the breach of mine honour." Ianique knew so well how to prouide for all that was requisite for the execution of their enterprise, as there rested nothing but oportunitie, to sort their cruel purpose to effect. The knight sir Didaco, at the houre appointed, tolde his new wife that he must go into the countrie, to take order for the state of his land, and that he could not retourne, til the next day in the morning. Which she by and by beleued: and the better to couer his fact, he caused two horse to be made redie, and rode forth when the clocke strake iiii. And when he had riden through a certain streat, he said to his man, which was wonte to serue his tourne in loue matters: " Carie my horse to such a manour in the countrie, and tarrie there all this day, and to morowe morning come seeke mee in suche a place, when I am gone from the house of Violenta. In the meane time set my horse in some inne: for in any wise I will haue no

now that I doe lie there." Which doen the maister and the
nte wente two senerall wayes. The knight being come to
use of Violenta, he found Ianique taryng for him, with good
ion to vse him according to his desert, and conueyed him to
hamber of Violenta, and then she retourned about her
es. The knighte kissed Violenta and bad her good morowe,
g her how she did? Whom Violenta aunsweread: " Sir
o, you bid me good morrow in words, but in deede you go
to prepare for me a heuie and sorowfull life. I beleue that
ninde beareth witnes, of the state of my welfare: for you
broughte me to such extremitie, that you see right wel how
g els but my voice declareth me to be a woman, and there-
l so feeble a creature, as I still craue and call for death or
ie, although both of thone and of the other, I am not heard
and yet thincke not Didaco, that I am so farre oute of my
to beleue that the cause of my writing the letter was for
that (you remembring my bitter paines, and your owne
s crime) I coulde euer moue you to pitie: for I am per-
l that you wil neuer cease to exhauste and sucke the bloud,
and life of them that credite your trumperies and deceiptes,
e by experience I know by my selfe, with such deadly
that I still attende and loke for the sorowfull ende of my
Didaco seing her thus afflicted, fearing that her cholere
further inflame, began to cull her, and to take her now
s armes, telling her that his mariage with the doughter of
acuta, was concluded more by force then his owne will
ade, because they pretended to haue a gift of all the lande
ods he had in succession after his father was dead, which
did obtain by law he should be a begger all the dayes of
and that the same was doen to prouide for the quiet state
both, and notwithstanding hee had married an other wife,
purposed to loue none but her, and meant in time to
his wife, and to spend the rest of his life with her. And
eming to remedie his former fault, by surmised reports,
age vppon the cordes of his pleasaunt tongue, hee thought
urtlike allurements, to appease her, which had her wittes
sharpened to be wise taken in one trap, howbeit for feare
g him awaye, and to loose the meane to accomplish that

which she intended, she said vnto him with forced smiling: "Sir Didaco, althoughe you haue so ill vsed mee in time paste, as I haue no greate cause to beleeeue your presente woordes, yet the loue that I beare you, is so rooted in my harte, as the faulte muste be verye greate, which shoulde remoue the same: in consideration whereof, I will constraîne my selfe to beleeeue that your woords be true, vpon condicion that you will sweare and promise to lie with me here ones or twyse a weeke. For me thinke that if I might at times inioye your presence, I should remaine in some part of your grace and fauour, and liue the best contented woman a liue." Whereunto hee willingly agreed, with a great number of other like protestations, prompte and redy in them which meane deceipt. But in the poore miserable woman had perced the same in the depth of her harte, and had credited all that he spake, no doubt he woulde haue chaunged his minde. Thus either partes spent the daye in colde and dissembled flatteries till darke nighte, with his accustomed silence, did deliuer them the meane to exercise their cruell facte. So sone as supper was doen, Didaco and Violenta walked vp and downe together, talking of certaine common matters, till the knight (pressed with slepe) commaunded his bed to be made redie: it neded not then to inquire with what diligence Violenta and Ianique obeyed his requeste: in whome onely as they thought consisted the happe, or mishappe of their intent: to whom because Violenta might shewe her selfe more affectionate, went first to bedde, and so sone as they were layde, Ianique drewe the curteines and tooke away Didaco his swoorde, and making as though she had a thing to do vnder the bedde, she fastened the rope and raked vp the fire which was in the chimney, carying a stoole to the beddes side, and layd vpon the same twoo great kechin knifes, which doen she put out the candle, and, fayning to goe out of the chamber, she shut the dore and went in againe. And then the poore infortunate knight, thinking that he was alone in the chamber with Violenta, began to clepe and kisse her, whereunto she made no refusal, but desirous to renew his old priuate toies, she prayed him of al loue that he bare vnto her to kepe truce for twoo or three howers, for that the night was long inough to satisfie his desires, affirming that it was impossible for her to wake, because fīue or sixe dayes before by

reason of her griefes, she had not slept at all, notwithstanding, she said, that after her first sleepe she would willingly obey him: wherunto the gentleman was easely perswaded, aswell bicause he hadde els where sufficiently staunched his thirst, as also for that he was loth to displease her: and faining her selfe to sleepe, she turned her face to the other side, and in that wyse continued, till the poore gentleman was fallen into his sound slepe. Then Ianique softly conueyed the rope ouer his bodye, and gaue it to Violenta, and after she had placed it according to her minde, as they together had deuised before, she deliuered thende to Ianique, who being at the beddes side satte down vpon the grounde, and folding the rope about her armes, hoisted her twoo feete against the bedde to pull with greater force when nede required. Not long after, Violenta toke one of the great knifes, and lifting her selfe vp softlye, she proued with her hand, to seke a place most meete for her to stabbe a hole into her enemies fleshe. And inchaunted with wrath, rage and furie, like another Medea, thrust the poincte of the knife with suche force into his throte as shee perced it through, and the poore vnhappie man thinking to resiste the same, by geuing some repulse against that aduerse and heauie fortune, was appalled, who feeling a new charge geuen vpon him againe, specially being intricated with the roape, was not able to sturre hand nor foote, and through the excessiue violence of the paine, his speache and power to crie, was taken away: in such sorte that after he had receiued tenne or twelue mortall woundes one after an other, his poore martired soule departed from his sorowfull body. Violenta hauing ended her determined enterprise, commaunded Ianique to light the candle, and approching nere the knightes face, shee sawe by and by that he was without life. Then not able to satisfie her bloudye harte, ne yet to quenche her furious rage which boiled in her stomacke, she with the point of the knife tare out the eyes from his head, crying out vpon them with hideous voice, as if they had ben aliue: "Ah traiterous eyes, the messengers of a minde most villanous that euer seiorned within the bodie of man: come out of your shamelesse siege for euer, for the spring of your fained teares is now exhausted and dried vp." Then shee played the bocher vppon those insensible members, continuing still her rage,

and cruelly seized vpon the tongue, which with her bloody handes she haled out of his mouth, and beholding the same with a murderous eie as she was cutting it of, sayd: " Oh abhominable and periured tongue, how many lies diddest thou frame in the same, before thou couldest with the canon shot of this poysoned member, make breache into my virginie: whereof now being depriued by thy meanes, I franckly accelerate my self to death, wherunto thou presently hast opened the way." And when shee had separated this litle member from the reste of the body (insaciable of crueltie) with the knife ripped a violent hole into his stomacke, and launching her cruel handes vpon his harte she tare it from the place, and gashing the same with many blowes, she said: " Ah, vile hart, harder then the diamont whose andeuile forged the infortunate trappes of these my cruel destenies! oh that I could haue discouered thy cogitations in time past, as I doe now thy materiall substaunce, that I might haue bene preserued from thine abhominable treason, and detestable infidelitie." Then fleashing her selfe vpon the dead body, as a hungry lion vpon his praye, she lefte no parte of him vnwounded: and when shee had mangled his bodye all ouer, with an infinite number of gashes, she cried out: " O infected carrion, whilom an organ and instrumente of the moste vnfaithfull and trayterous minde that euer was vnder the coape of heauen: nowe thou art payed with dèserte, worthy of thy merites!" Then shee sayed to Ianique (whiche with great terrour, had all this whyle viewed her playe this pageant) " Ianique I feele my selfe nowe so eased of payne that come death when he will, he shal find me strong and lustie to indure his furious assault, which of long time I haue assaied. Helpe me then to traine this corps out of my father's house, wherein I was first defloured, then will I tell thee what thou shalt doe: for like as mine honestie is stayned and published abroad, euen so will I the reuenge to be manifeste, crauing that his bodie may be exponed to the viewe of all men." Whose request Ianique obeied: and then she and Violenta toke the body, and threwe it out at one of the chamber wyndowes downe vpon the pauement of the streate, with all the partes whiche she had cut of. That done she sayd to Ianique: " Take this casket with all the money

within the same, and shippe thy selfe at the next port thou shalt come to, and get thee ouer into Africa to saue thy life so spedely as thou canst, and neuer come into these partes again, nor to any other wher thou art knowen." Which Ianique purposed to doe, although Violenta had not consailed her thereunto: and ready to departe, shee gaue a sorowefull farewell to her maistres, and betoke her selfe to her good fortune: and from that time forth, no man could tell whether she went, for all the persute made after her. So sone as daye appeared, the firste that passed by the streete espied the dead bodie, whiche by reason of the noyse and brute made throughout the towne, caused many people to come and see it: but no man knew what he was, being disfigured as well by reason of the eyes torne out of his head, as for other partes mutilated and deformed. And about eight of the clocke in the morning, there was suche a multitude of people assembled, as it was in maner impossible to come nere it. The moste parte thought that some theues in the nighte had committed that murder: whiche opinion semed to be true, because he was in his shurte: other some were of contrary opinion: and Violenta, whiche was at the wyndowe, hearing their sundrie opinions came downe and with a bolde courage and stoute voyce, that euery man might heare, said: "Sirs, you do contend vpon a thing whereof (if I were demaunded the question of the magistrates of this citie) I am able to render assured testimonie: and without great difficultie this murder can not be discouered by any other but by me." Whiche woordes the people did sone beleue, thinking that diuers gentlemen ielous of Violenta had made a fraye: for she had now loste her auncient reputacion by meanes of Didaco, who (as the fame and common reporte was bruted) did keepe her. When she had spoken those wordes, the iudges were incontinently aduertised as well of the murder as of that whiche Violenta had said, and went thither with sergeauntes and officers, where they founde Violenta, more stoute then any of the standers by: and inquired of her immediatlye howe that murder came to passe, but shee without feare or appallement, made this aunswere: "Hee that you see here dead, is the lorde Didaco: and because it apperteineth to many to vnderstand the trouth of his death (as his father in lawe, his wife and other

kinsmen) I would in their presence, if it please you to cause them to be called hither declare what I knowe." The magistrates amased to see so great a lorde so cruelly slayne, committed her to warde til after dinner, and commaunded that all the before named should bee sommoned to appeare: who assembled in the palace, with such a number of the people, as the iudges could skant haue place: Violenta in the presence of them all, without any rage or passion, first of all recompted vnto them the chast loue betwene Didaco and her, whiche hee continued the space of fourtene or fiftene monethes, without receiuing any fruite or commoditie thereof. Within a while after (he being vanquished with loue) married her secretly at her house, and solemnized the nuptialles by a prieste vnknown: declaring moreouer, how they had liued a yere together in housholde, without any occasion of offence, on her part geuen vnto him. Then she rehersed before them his seconde mariage with the doughter of such a man, being there present, adding for conclusion, that sith he had made her to lose her honestie, shee had sought meanes to make him to loose his life: which she executed with the helpe of Ianique her mayde: who by her aduise being loth to liue any longer, had drowned her selfe. And after she had declared the true state of the matter, passed betwene them, shee sayd for conclusion, that all that she had rehersed was not to incite or moue them to pitie or compassion, thereby to prolong her life, whereof shee iudged her self vn-worthy: "For if you (quoth she) do suffer me to escape your handes, thinking to saue my body, you shalbe the cause and whole ruine of my soule, for with these mine owne handes, whiche you see before you, I will desperatly cut of the thred of this my life." And with those wordes she held her peace: wherat the people amased, and moued with pitie, let fall the luke warme teares from their dolorouse eyes and lamented the misfortune of that poore creature: imputing the fault vpon the dead knight, which vnder colour of mariage had deceiued her. The magistrates determining further to deliberate vpon the matter, caused the dead bodie to be buried, and committed Violenta againe to warde, taking away from her kniues and other weapons, wherewith they thought shee might hurt her selfe. And vsed such diligent search

enquire, that the priest which married them was found out, the seruaunt of Didaco that was present at the marriage of Viola, being examined, deposed how by his maister's commandement he carried his horse into the countrie, and how he persuaded him to come to him againe the next morning to the house of Violenta. And all things were so well brought to light, that nothing wanted for further inuestigation of the truthe, but onely confession of him that was dead. And Violenta by the commandment of the iudges was condemned to be beheaded: not for that she had presumed to punish the knightes tromperie, but for her excessiue crueltie doen vpon the dead.

Thus infortunate Violenta ended her life, her mother and brother being acquitted: and was executed in the presence of the Duke of Calabria, the sonne of king Frederic of Aragon: which Duke at that time the Viceroy there, and afterwarde died at Torry in Sicily: who incontinently after caused this historie to be reprinted, with other things worthy of remembrance, chaunced in Italy at Valencia. Bandell doth wryte, that the mayde Ianique was put to death with her maistres: but Paludanus a Spaniard, a liue at that time, writeth an excellent historie

in Latine, wherein he certainly declareth that
 she was neuer apprehended, which opinion
 (as most probable) I haue
 folowed.

THE FORTY-THIRD NOUELL.

Wantones and pleasaunt life being guides of insolencie, doth bring a miserable end to a faire ladie of Thurin, whom a noble man aduanced to high estate: as appereth by this historie, wherein he executeth great crueltie vpon his sayde ladie, taken in adulterie.

THE auncient and generall custome of the gentlemen, and gentlewomen of Piedmonte, was daily to abandon famous cities and murmures of common wealthes to retire to their castels in the countrie, and other places of pleasure, of purpose to beguile the troublesome turmoyles of life, with greatest rest and contentation. The troubles and griefes wherof they do feelee, that intermedle with businesse of common wealth, whiche was with great care obserued before the warres had preposterated the order of auncient gouernement, til which time a harde matter it had ben to finde an idle gentleman in a hole citie. Who rather did resort to their countrie houses with their families, which were so well gouerned and furnished, that you should haue departed so well satisfied and instructed, from a simple gentleman's house as you should haue doen from a great citie, were it neuer so wel ruled by some wise and prouident senatour. But sithens the world began to waxe olde, it is come again to very infancie, in suche sorte that the greatest nomber of cities are not peopled in these dayes but with a many of carpet squiers, that make their resiance and abode there, not to profite, but to continew their delicate life, and they doe not onely corrupt themselues, but (which is worse) they infecte them that keepe them companie, whiche I will discourse somewhat more at large, for so much as the gentlewoman, of whome I describe this historie, was brought vp al the time of her youth, in one of the finest and most delicate cities of Piedmonte. And feeling as yet some sparke of her former bringing vp, she could not be reformed (being in the countrie with her husbände) but that in the ende she fill into great reproche and shame, as you shall vnderstande by the content of that whiche foloweth. In the time that madame Margaret of Austriche, doughter of Maximilian the

our, went in progresse into Sauoie, towards her husbände :
was a great lorde, a valiaunt and curteous gentleman, in a
ne cōtrie of Piedmonte, whose name I will not disclose,
for the reuerence of his nerest kynne, which doe yet liue, as
e immoderate cruell punishement, that he deuised towards
yfe, when he toke her in the fault. This great lorde, although
d goodly reuenues and castelles in Piedmonte, yet for the
parte of his time, he followed the courte, by commaunde-
of the duke, that interteyned him nexte his owne persone,
commonly his aduise in all his greatest affaires. This lorde
t time married a mayden in Thurin, of meane beautie, for his
re, not esteeming the place from whence shee came. And be-
he was well nere fiftie yeares of age when he married her,
tired her selfe with such modestie, as she was more like a
v then a married woman : and knewe so well how to vse her
ude, the space of a yere or two, as he thought him self the
st man aliue, that he had founde out so louing a wyfe. This
a being serued, and reuerenced with great honour, waxed
of to muche reste and quiet, and began to be inamoured of
leman her neighbour, whom in a litle tyme she knewe so
o vse by lookes, and other wanton toies, as he did easely
ue it, notwithstanding for the honour of her husband, he
not seme to knowe it, but a farre of. Nowe this warme
y litle and litle, afterwarde began to grow hot, for the
oman wearie of suche long delay, not able to content her
th lookes, vpon a day finding this yong gentleman in con-
place, as he was walking harde by her house, began to
with him of termes, and matters of loue: telling hym that
d to solitarie, in respect of his yong yeares, and howe shee
wayes bene brought vp in townes, and places of great com-
and resorte, in suche wyse as now being in the cōtrie,
uld not easely digeste the incommoditie of being a lone,
y for the continuall absence of her husbände, who scarce
onethes in a yere remayned at home in his owne house.
o falling from one matter to another, loue pricked them
, as in fine they opened a waye to that whiche troubled
o much, and specially the woman: who forgetting her

honour, which ordinarily dothe accompanie great ladies, priuely she tolde hym the loue that she had borne hym of long tyme, whiche notwithstanding shee had dissembled, wayting when hee should haue geuen the fyrst onsette, for that gentlemen ought rather to demaunde, then to be requyred of ladies: This gentleman vnderstanding (by halfe a woorde) the cause of her disease, told her: "That although his loue was extreme, neuertheless, deming himself vnworthy of so high degree, he stil conceal- ed his grief, which because he thought it coulde not come to passe, feare forced him to kepe it silent. But sithe it pleased her so much to abase her selfe, and was disposed to doe him so much honour to accepte him for her seruaunte, he would imploye his indeuour, to recompence that with humilitie and humble seruice, whiche fortune had denied hym in other thinges." And hauing framed this foundation to their loue, for this tyme they vsed no other contentment one of an other but onely deuise. But they so prouyded for their affaires to come, that they neded not to vse longer oration. For beyng neyghbours, and the husbände manye tymes absent, the hyghe waye was open to bryng their enterpryses to desired affecte. Whiche they full well acquieted, and yet vn- able wysely to maister and gouerne their passions, or to moderate them selues by good discretion, the seruauntes of the house (by reason of the frequented communication of the gentleman with the gentlewoman) began to suspecte them, and to conceiue sinister opinion of their maistresse, although none of them durste speake of it, or make other semblaunce of knowledge. Loue holding in full possession the hartes of these twoo louers, blynd- ed them so muche, as leauing the brydle to large for their honour, they vsed thei selues priuely and apertlye at all tymes one with an other, without anye respect. And when vpon a tyme, the lorde retourned home to his owne house (from a certayne voyage, wherein he had bene in the duke's seruice) he founde his wyfe to be more fine and gorgeous then she was wont to be, whiche in the beginning dyd wonderfully astonne him. And perceiuing her sometimes to vtter wanton woordes, and to applie her mynde on other thynges, when he spake vnto her, he began diligently to ob- serue her countenance and order, and being a man broughte vp

partlye trade, and of good experience, hee easely was persuaded that there was some ele vnder that stone, and to come to the pouthe of the matter, hee made a better countenaunce, then shee wonte to doe, which she knewe full well howe to requite recompence: and liuing in this simulation, either of them attempted to beguile the other, that the simplest and leste craftie of both could not be discovered. The yong gentleman, neyghbour of the lord, grieved beyond measure, for that he was come passed and repassed manye tymes before his castell gate, longing to get some looke of his ladie's eye: but by any meanes could not for feare of her husbände, who was not so foolishe, after he sawe him goe before his gate so many times, without occasion, but that he easely iudged there was a secret betwene them. Certaine dayes after, the gentleman to induce himselfe into the lord's fauour, and to haue accesse to his house, sent him a very excellent tercelet of a faucon, and at other tymes he presented him with veneson, and vmbles of dere, which he had killed in hunting. But the lorde (which well knew that he had many times serued the torne of diuerse, to beguile foolish lords of their faire wiues) that he might not seme vngrateful, did also certain straung things. And these curtesies continued so long, that the lorde desirous to play a baite, sent to praye him to come to dyner: to which requeste the other accorded readily, for the deuocion he had to the saint of the castell. And when the table was taken vp, they went together to walke abroade in the fieldes. And that more frendly to welcome him, he prayed her to goe with them, whereunto she made no greate deniall. When they had debated of many thinges, the lorde sayd vnto the gentleman, "Neighbour and frende, I am an old man and melancholie, and know, wherfore I had neede from henceforth to reioyce my selfe. I pray you hartely therfore to come hither many tymes, to see me, and therewithal to participate such fare as God doth send. And I will geue you the thinges of my house, as they were your owne." Whiche the gentleman gratefully accepted, humbly praying that his lordshyp would commaunde him and that he had, when he pleased, and to vnderstande him as his very humble and obedient seruaunt. This daye layed, the yong gentleman ordinarie came ones a daye

to visite the lorde and his wife. So long this pilgrimage continued, vntill the lorde (vpon a time, faining himselfe to be sicke) commaunded that no man should come into his chamber, because all the night before he was ill at ease, and could take no reste. Whereof the gentleman was incontinently aduertised by an old woman hired of purpose for a common messenger, of whom a none we purpose to make remembraunce. Being come to the castell, he demaunded how the lord did, and whether he might go see him, to whom aunswer was made, that he could not, for that he was fallen into a slomber. Madame now was in the garden alone, roming vp and down for her pleasure, and was aduertised that the gentleman was come. Who being brought into the gardeine, and certified of the lordes indisposition, began to renew his old daliaunce with the ladie, and to kisse her many times, eftsones putting his hand into her bosome, and vsing other pretie preparatifes of loue, which ought not to be permitted but only to the husband. In the meane time, while they twoo had ben there a good space, the husband slept not, but was departed out of his chamber, the space of two houres and more, and was gone vp to the highest place of all his castell, wher at a very litle window, he might discerie al that was done, within the compasse of his house. And there seing al their curteous offers and proffers, hee waited but when the gentleman should haue indeuoured himself to procede further, that he might haue then discharged his mortal malice vpon them both. But they fearing that their long abode in the gardein might ingender some displeasure, retourned into the castell, with purpose in time to content their desires, so sone as opportunitie serued. The lorde noting all the demeanour betwene them, retourned to his chamber, and so went againe to his bed, faining to be sicke, as he did all the day before. Supper time come, the lady went to know his pleasure, whether he would sup in his chamber or in the hall: he answered (with a disguised cherefull face) that he began to feele himselfe well, and that he had slept quietly sithens diner, and was determined to suppe beneth, sending that night for the gentleman, to beare him companie at supper: and could so well disemble his iust anger, as neither his wife, nor the gentleman perceiued it by any meanes. And so the lorde with his lady still

ued, the space of fiftene dayes, or three wekes, making so of her (as though it had ben the firste moneth that he married) in suche sorte, as when the poore miserable woman thought she gotten victorie ouer her husband and frend, it was the that fortune did weaue the toyle and nette to intrappe her.orde which no longer could abide this mischief, driuen into treame choler, seing that he was able to finde no meanes to them (himselfe being at home) deliberated either sone to die prouide for the matter: and the better to execute his determination, he counterfaieted a letter from the duke of Sauoie, and secretly to the post him selfe alone, and commaunded him to laye to bring it to his castell, whereby he fained that the duke had sent the same vnto him. Whiche matter the post did so well, as he brought the letter when he was at supper, and notes on his legges all durtie and raied, as though he were lighted from his horse. And the better to maintain his wife in error, after he had reade the letter, he gaue it to her to see, which contained no other thing, but that the duke commaunded him presently with all diligence, himselfe and his traine to come vnto him, to be dispatched vpon ambassage into Fraunce. When he said vnto her: " Wife, you see howe I am constraigned to depart with spede (to my great grief) bid my men therefore be ready in the morning, that they may go before and wayte for me at Thurin, where my lord the duke is at this present. I will departe from hence to morow at night after supper, and ride in post in the freshe of the night." And the better to deceiue this poore unhappie woman, he went into his closet, to take his caskette, wherein was the moste part of his treasure, and shewing the same vnto her, sayde: " That fearing leste hee should tarie long in Fraunce, he would leaue the same with her to see when she wanted." And after all his traine was gone, he caused one of the yeomen of his chamber to tary behynde, to delitie he had at other times proued: and all that daye he was not to cherishe and make much of his wyfe. But the duke did not forsee, that they were the flatteries of the yeomen, which reioyseth when he seeth one deceiued. When he was departed, he made a particuler remembraunce to his wife howe the things of his house should be disposed in his absence: and

then toke his leaue, giuing her a Iudas kisse. The lorde vnethes had ridden twoo or thre miles, but that his wife had sent the olde woman to carye worde to her loue, of the departure of her husband, and that he might sauely come and lie with her in the castell, for that all the seruauntes were ridden forth with their maister, sauing one yeoman and her twoo maydes, whiche doe neuer vse to lie in her chamber. Vpon this glad newes, the gentleman thought no scorne to appeare vpon that warning, and the old woman knew the waye so well, as she brought him straight into the ladies chamber, whom loue inuegled in such wise, as they lay together in the bedde, where the lord was wont to lye. And the olde woman laye in an other bed in that chamber, and shut the dore within. But while these twoo poore passionate louers thought they had attayned the toppe of all felicitie, and had inioyed with full saile the fauours of the litle God Cupide, fortune desirous to departe them, for the last messe of the feast prepared so bitter comfettes, as it cost them both their liues, with such cruell death, as if they which make profession of semblable things doe take example, wyues will get them better names, and husbandes shalbe lesse deceiued. The lorde that night made no longer tracte of time, but lighted from his horse, at the keper of one of his castles houses, whom he knewe to be faythfull. To whome in the presence of the yeoman of his chamber, he discoursed the loue betwene the gentleman and his wyfe, and commaunded them with all spede to arme themselues, and with a case of pistols to follow him, whom they obeyed. And beyng come to the castell gate, he saide to the keper of his castell: "Knocke at the gate, and fayne thy selfe to be alone, and saye that I passing by thy house, did leaue a remembraunce with thee, to cary to my ladie. And because it is a matter of importaunce, and requireth hast, thou were compelled to bring it this night." Knocking at the gate somewhat softly (for feare lest they whiche were in the chambers should heare) a yeoman rose whiche laye in the courte, knowing the voyce of the keper (because he was one, whome his lorde and maister dyd greatly fauour) opened the gate, and the firste thyng they did, they lyghted a torche, and wente vp all three to the lordes chamber, not sufferyng anye man to cary newes to the ladie, of their approche. Being come to the chamber doore,

keeper knocked, whiche immediatly the olde woman hearde, without opening the doore, asked who was there. "It is I (the keeper,) that haue brought a letter to my ladie, from my my maister, who ryding this nyght in post to Thurin, passed my house, and very earnestly charged me by no meanes to come but to deliuer it this night." The ladie aduertised hereof, who did not mistruste that her owne man (whome she tooke to be true, and voyde of guyle) would haue framed a platte for suche reason, sayde to the olde woman: "Receiue the letter at the doore, but in any wyse let him not come in, and I will accomlishe my contentes." The olde woman, which thought onely but to open the letter betwene the doore, was astoned when the keeper (giuing her a blow with his foote vpon the stomacke) threwe her backward, where she laie more then a quarter of an houre, without speaking or mouing. And then they three entring the chamber in great rage, with their pistolets in their handes, found two miserable louers starke naked, who seing them selues surround in that state, were so sore ashamed as Eue and Adam were, when their sinne was manifested before God. And not knowing what to doe, reposed their refuge in lamenting and teares, but at the same instant, they bounde the armes and legges together of the poore gentleman with the chollers of their horse, which was brought with them of purpose. And then the lorde commanded that the two maydes, which were in the castell, and the other of the seruantes, should be called to assiste them, to take the sight of that faire sight. And all the meane people being gathered in this sort together, the lorde turning him self vnto his wife said vnto her: "Come hither thou vnshamefast, vile, and filthy whore, like as thou hast had a harte so traiterous and full, to bring this infamous ruffian in the night into my house, not only to robbe and dispoile me of mine honour, which I erre and esteeme more then life: but also (whiche is more to be sorrowed) to infringe and breake for euer, the holie and precious sacrament of mariage, wherewithall wee be vnited and knit together. Now I forthwith, that with these thyne owne handes, with which thou gauest me the firste testimonie of thy faith, that he shall be hangd and strangled in the presence of all menne,

.. 1.

H H

not knowing howe to deuise anye other greater punishmente, to satisfie thyne offence, then to force thee to murder hym, whome thou haste preferred before thy reputation, aboue myne honour, and esteemed more then thine owne life." And hauing pronounced this fatall iudgement, he sent one to seeke for a greate naile of a carte, which he caused to be fastened to the beame of the chamber, and a ladder to be fetched, and then made her to tie a collar of the order belonging to theeues and malefactours, about the necke of her sorowfull louer. And because she alone was not able to do that greuous and waightie charge, hee ordayned that like as the olde woman had bin a faithfull minister of his wiue's loue, so shee should put her hand in performing the vttermost of that worke. And so these two wretched women, were by that meanes forced to such extremitie, as with their owne handes, they strangled the infortunate gentleman: with whose death the lord not yet satisfied, caused the bedde, the clothes, and other furnitures (wherupon they had taken their pleasures past) to be burned. He commaunded the other vtensiles of the chamber to be taken away, not suffering so much straw, as would serue the couche of two dogges, to be left vnconsumed. Then he said to his wife: "Thou wicked woman, amonges al other most detestable: for so much as thou hast had no respecte to that honourable state, whereunto fortune hath aduaunced thee, being made by my meanes of a simple damosell, a greate ladie, and because thou hast preferred the lasciuious acquaintance of one of my subiects, before the chast loue, that thou oughtest to haue borne me: my determination is, that from henceforth thou shalt kepe continuall company with him, to the vttermost day of thy life: because his putrified carcase hath giuen occasion to ende thy wretched body." And then hee caused all the windowes and doores to be mured, and closed vp in such wyse, as it was impossible for her to go oute, leauing onely a litle hole open, to giue her bread and water: appointing his steward to the charge thereof. And so this poore miserable woman, remained in the mercie of that obscure and darke prison, without any other company, then the deade body of her louer. And when shee had continued a certaine space in that stinking dongeon, without
aire or comfort, ouercome with sorow and extreme
paine, she yelded her soule to God.

THE FORTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The loue of Alerane of Saxone, and of Adelasia the doughter of the Emperour Otho the thirde of that name. Their flight and departure into Italie, and how they were known againe, and what noble houses of Italie descended of their race.

THE auncient histories of Princes (as wel vnder the name of kinge, as of the title of duke, which in time paste did gouerne the countrie of Saxone) do reporte that Otho the seconde of that name, which was the first emperour that lawfullye raigned (after the empire ceased in the stock of Charles the great) had of his wife Matilde doughter of the king of Saxone, one sonne which succeeded him in the Imperial crowne, called Otho the third, who for his vertuous education and gentle disposition, acquired of all men the surname of *The loue of the world*. The same emperour was courteous and mercifull, and neuer (to any man's knowledge) gaue occasion of grieffe to any person, he did good to euery man, and hurt none: likewise he thought that kingdome to be well gotten, and gotten to be better kept, where the king, prince or ruler therof, did studie and seeke meanes to be beloued, rather then feared, sith loue ingendreth in it selfe a desire of obedience in the people. And contrary wise, that prince which by tyrannie maketh himselfe to be feared, liueth not one houre at rest, hauing his conscience tormented indifferently, both with suspition and feare, thinking stil that a thousand swords be hanging ouer his head, to kill and destroye him. Otho then vnder his name of emperour, couered his clemencie with a certaine sweete grauitie and princely behauiour. Who notwithstanding declared an outward shew of curtesie, to make sweete the egreness of displeasure, which they feele and taste that be subiect to the obeysaunce of any new monarchie. Man being of his owne nature so louing of himselfe, that an immoderate libertie seemeth vnto him sweeter, more iust and indurable, than auctorities rightly ordained, the establishment wherof seemeth to represente the onely gouernmente of that first kinge, which from his high throne, giueth being and mouing to al thinges. That good

emperour then knowinge verie well the mallice of men, who although he was a good man of warre, hardye of his hands, and desirous of glorie, yet moderated so well the happie successe of his enterprises, as his grace and gentlenes principally appeared, when he had the vpper hand, for that he cherished and well vsed those whom he had subdued vnder his obedience: his force and felicitie was declared when he corrected and chastised rebells, and obstinate persons, which wilfully would proue the greate force of a princes arme iustly displeased, and to others what fauour a king could vse towards them, whom he knew to be loyal and faithfull: giuing cause of repentaunce to them which at other times had done him displeasure. And to say the truth, he mighte be placed in the ranke of the most happie princes that euer were, if the priuate affaires of his owne house had so happily succeeded, as the renowne which hee wanne in the science of warfare, and in the administration of the common wealth. But nothing being stable in the life of man, this emperour had in him, that which diminished the glorie of his wisdom, and (resembling an Octavius Augustus) the unhappie successe of his owne house did somewhat obscure the fame of his noble factes, and those insolent doinges serued vnto him as a counterpoyse to prosperous fortune, which may be easely perceiued, by the progresse and continuation of this historie. This good prince had one daughter, in whom nature had distributed her giftes in such wise, as she alone might haue vaunted her selfe to attaine the perfection of all them, which euer had any thing, worthy of admiration, were it in the singularitie of beauty, fauour and courtesie, or in her disposition and good bringing vp. The name of this fayre princesse was Adelasia. And when this ladie was very yong, one of the children of the duke of Saxone, came to the emperour's seruice, whose kinsman he was. This yonge prince, besides that he was one of the fayrest and comliest gentlemen of Almaine, had therewithall, together with knowledge of armes, a passing skill in good sciences, which mitigated in him the ferocitie both of his warlike knowledge, and of the nature of his countrey. His name was Alerane, who seing himselfe the yongest of his house, and his inheritaunce very small, indeuoured to conciliate euerye man's fauour and good will, to remoue his owne fortune, and

to bring himselfe in esteemation with the emperour, wherein all thinges hee employed so well his indeuour, as through his worthines hee wanne commendation and report, to be the most valiaunte and stoutest gentleman in all the emperour's court, which praise did greatly commend the tendernes of his yong yeares, and was therewithall so sober, and of so gentle spirite, that although he excelled his companions in all things, yet he auoyded cause of offence (shewing himselfe familiar amonge all the courtiers.) Euery man (which is a greate matter) praised him and loued him, and he thought himself most happie, that by any meanes could fashion himselfe to imitate the vertue that made Alerane's name so renowned. And that which made him fuller of admiracion, and brought him into fauour with his lord and maister was, that vpon a day the emperour being in hunting alone in the middes of a launde, and in a desert place, it chaunced that a beare issuinge out of her caue, was assayled of hunters: the fierce beaste, auoydinge the toyles and flyinge the pursute of the dogges, came with greate vehemencie and speede from a mountaine, and was vpon the emperour or he was ware, separated from his companie and without his sword. But Alerane by good fortune was at hand, who more careful for the safetie of his prince than for his owne life, encountred the beare, and killed him in the presence of the emperour and many other. All which beholding (to their great astonishment) the dexteritie and hardines of Alerane at those small yeares, (for then hee was not aboue the age of xvii.) the emperour imbracing him, did highly commende him, tellinge them that were by, that his life was saued chiefly by God's assistaunce, and nexte by the prowesse of Alerane. The newes hereof was so bruted abroade, as there was no talke but of the valiaunce and stoutenes of this yong man of warre, which caused faire Adelasia (moued by naturall instigation, and with the opinion and reporte of the vertue toward in that yonge prince) to feele a certaine thing (I cannot tell what) in her minde, which inflamed her senses and hart. And she had no sooner caste her eyes vpon Alerane, but loue, which had prepared the ambushe, so pearsed her delicate breast, as he toke full possession of her: in such wyse as the princesse was so straungelye in loue wyth the yonge prince, that she neuer founde pleasure

and contentment but in that which was done or said by her louer, whom she accompted the chiefe of all the men of his time. In this burning heate, she felt the passions of loue so vehement, and his pricks so sharpe, that she could not euaporate the cloudes which darkened her spirites and continually tormented her minde. And albeit that the litle occasion, which she saw, for their comminge together in time to come, did dissuade her from pursuing the thing which she most desired: yet the tyrant loue shewed himselfe very extreame in that diuersitie of thoughts, and varietie of troubles which vexed the spirite of the princesse: for shee could not so well dissemble that, which honour and age commaunded her to keepe secrete, but that Alerane which was (as we haue already said) well expert and subtile, perceiued the inwarde disease of Adelasia. Moreouer there was betweene them a naturall conformitie and likelyhode of conditions, which made them to agree in equall desires, to feede of like meates, their passionate mindes were martired with equall sorowe and paine, departed as wel in the one as in the other. For Alerane by taking carefull heede to the lookes which the princesse continually did stealingly cast vpon him, saw the often and sodaine chaunces of colour, wherein sometimes appeared ioye, which by and by did ende with infinite number of sighes, and with a countenance agreeable to that, which the hart kept secrete and couert, whereby he assured himselfe vnfaignedly to be beloued, which caused him to do no lesse (for satisfaction of such like merite and desert done by Adelasia) but to beare vnto her like affection, forcing her by all diligence and seruice to continue still that good will toward him, yelding himselfe a pray to the selfe same loue. Who ruling thaffections of the princesse, (as braue and pleasaunt as she was) made her sorowfull and pensife, and altered her in such wise as shee thought the companie wherein she was did impeach her ioy, which companie she imagined to conceiue the like pleasure that she did, when at libertie and alone shee reuolued her troubles, and fansied her contentation in her minde. Alerane on the other side slept not, but as though he had receiued the first wound by the handes of the blinde little archer Cupide, ceased not to thincke of her, whose image ordinarelye appeared before his eyes, as engrauen more liuely in his minde than anye

may be insculped vpon mettall or marble. And yet neither the one nor the other, durste discouer the least passion of a number which oppressed their besieged hartes, and which led not to liue in anye reste this faire couple of loyall louers. Eyes alone did thoffice of the handes and tongue, as trustie taries, and faithful messengers of the effectes of the minde. which kindled the fier moste, was their frequente talke together which was but of common matters, withoute vtterance of which the hart knewe well enoughe, and whereof the eyes gaue testimonie. A passion truly most intollerable for a yongesse, as well because she neuer had experience of semblable, as for her tender age, and yet more for a naturall abashment of hame, which with the vaile of honor doth serue, or ought to be for a bridle, to euery ladie couetous of fame, or like to be a ornament or beauty of her race. Adelasia then floting in the stuous seas of her appetites, guided by a maister which death in the shipwracke of them he carieth, vanquished with moderate rage of loue, tormented with grief vnspeakeable, and with her owne desires, beinge alone in her chamber, began to explaine her sorowes, and saide: " Ah, what passion is it that nowen vnto me, that ingendreth an obliuion of that which wont to delighte and contente me? From whence commeth this newe alteration, and desire vnaccustomed, for solitarie being is the reste and argumente of my troubles? What diuersities haunges be these that in this sorte do poise and weigh my heart? Ah, Adelasia, what happie miserie dost thou finde in this prison, where pleasure hath no place till the enemies haue ended the life, with a million of painefull and daungerous troubles. What is this to say, but that againste the nature of maidens I lyes I will not, or cannot be quiet day nor night, but take no rest and feeding vpon cares and thoughtes? Alacke, I thought I should finishe my sorowes and griefes, when (being alone) I began to frame the plot of my tormentes and paines, with so many and deuises in my fansie, as I do make wishes and requestes for the thing I loue and esteeme aboue all, vpon which all my affections do depende and take their beginning. What is the cause, saye, but that my maydes do offende mee, when with

discrete wordes they go about to diuert me from my follies and pleasaunt noysome thoughtes? Wherefore should not I take in good part the care which they haue of my health, and the paine which they take to remember me of my torment? Alas, they know not wherein consisteth the force of mine euil, and much lesse is it in their power to remedie the same. Euen so I would haue none other plaister but him that hath giuen me the wound, nor none other meate but the hunger that drieth me vp, I craue none other comfort but the fire which burneth mee continuallye, the force wherof pearceth the sucke and marie within my bones. Ah Alerane, Alerane, the floure and mirror of all prowesse and beautie: it is thou alone that liueste in mee, of whom my minde conceyueth his hope, and the hart his nourishment. Alas: that thy worthines should be the ouerthrow of mine honour, and thy perfection the imperfection of my life. Ah loue, loue, how diuersly thou dealest with mee. For seing mine Alerane, I am attached with heate in the middes of ise that is full colde. In thinking of him, I do both rest and trauaile continually. Nowe I flee from him, and sodainly againe I desire him. In hearing him speake, the suger and hony, that distilleth from his mouth, is the contentmente of my minde, till such time as his words appeare to be different from my desire. For then, ah Lord: my rest is conuerted into extreme trauaile, thy honye into gall, and wormewoode more bitter than bitternes it selfe, the hope of my minde is become dispayre so horrible, as the same onely wil breede vnto me, (if God haue not pittie vpon me) a short recourse of death." After these wordes, shee rested a longe time without speaking, her armes a crosse, and her eyes eleuate on highe, which ranne downe like a ryuer of teares, and seemed to be so rauished, as a man would haue iudged her rather a thing withoute life, than a creature sensible, and labouring for life, till, recouering her spirites againe, as comming from an extasie and sounde, she beganne her plaintes againe in this sort: "What? must such a princesse as I am, abase my selfe to loue her owne subiect, yea and her kinseman, and specially not knowing yet how his minde is disposed? Shall I be so vnshamefast, and voyde of reason, to surrender my selfe to anye other but to him, whom God and fortune hath promised to be my espouse? Rather death shall

cut of the threde of my yeres, than I wil contaminate my chastitie, or that any other enioy the floure of my virginitie, than he to whom I shal be tied in mariage. Ah: I say and promise muche, but there is a tormenter in my minde which dealeth so rigorouslie with my reason, as I cannot tel wherupon wel to determine. I dare not thincke (which also I ought not to do) that Alerane is so foolish to despise the loue of one, that is the chiefe of the doughters of the greatest monarches of the world, and much lesse that hee should forget himselfe, in such wise to forsake mee, hauing once enjoyed the best and dearest thing that is in mee, and whereof I meane to make him the onely and peaceable possessor. Truly the vertue, gentlenes, and good nurriture of Alerane, doe not promise suche treason in him, and that great beautie of his, cannot tell how to hyde such rigor as hee will refuse one that is no deformed and ill fauoured creature, and which loueth him with such sinceritie, as wher she shall lose the meanes to enioy him, there shee shal feelee, euen forthwith, the miserable ende of her sorowfull dayes." And then againe she helde her peace, tossed and turmoiled with diuers thoughtes fleetinge betweene hope and feare: by and by she purposed to deface from her hart the memorie of loue, which already had taken to faste footing, and would not be separated from the thing, which heauen himselfe seemed to haue prepared, for the perfection and glorie of his triumphe. Loue then constrayned her, to resolute vpon her laste determination. Then continuinge her talke, sighing without ceasing, she said: "Chaunce what may to the vttermost, I can but wander like a vagabonde and fugitiue with mine owne Alerane (if hee will shew mee so much pleasure to accept mee for his own): for sure I am, the emperour wil neuer abide the mariage, which I haue promised: and sooner will I die, than another shall possesse that which Alerane alone deserueth: hauinge a long time vowed and dedicated the same vnto him. And afterwards let the vulgar sort blabbe what they liste of the bolde and foolish enterprises of Adelasia, when my harte is contented and desire satisfied, and Alerane enioyeth her that loueth him more than her selfe. Loue verily is not liable to the fansie of the parentes, nor yet to the will euen of them that subiungate themselues to his lawes. And besides that I shall not

be alone amongst princesses, that haue forsaken parentes and countries, to folow their loue into straunge regions. Faire Helena the Greeke did not she abandon Menelaus her husbände and the rich citie of Sparta, to follow the faire Troian Alexander sailing to Troie? Phedria and Ariadne, despised the delicates of Creta, lefte her father a very old man, to go with the Cecropian Theseus. None forced Medea the wise furious lady (but loue) to departe the isle of Colchos, her owne natiue countrey, wyth the Argonaute Iason. O good God, who can resist the force of loue, to whom so many kinges, so many monarches, so many wise men of al ages haue done their homage? Surely the same is the onely cause that compelleth me (in makeinge my selfe bolde) to forget my dutie towards my parentes, and specially mine honour, which I shall leaue to be reasoned vpon by the ignoraunt which considereth nothing but that which is exteriorly offred to the viewe of the sighte. Ah: how much I deceiue my selfe, and make a reckeninge of much without mine hoste: and what know I if Alerane (although hee do loue me) will loose the good grace of the emperor, and forsake his goods, and (so it maye bee) to hazard his life, to take so poore and miserable a woman as I am? Notwithstanding I wil proue fortune, death is the worst that can chaunce, which I wil accelerate rather than my desire shall loose his effecte." Thus the fayre and wise princesse concluded her unhappie state: and all this time her best frende Alerane, remained in greate affliction, and felt such feare as cannot be expressed with woordes, onely true louers know the force, altogether like to that wherof the yong prince had experience, and durst not discouer his euill to her, that was able to giue him her allegeaunce, much lesse to disclose it to any deare frende of his, into whose secrecie he was wont to commit the most parte of his cares, which was the cause that made him feeble his hart to burne like a litle fier in the middes of a cleare riuer, and saw him selfe ouerwhelmed within the waters, hotter than those that be intermixed with sulphure, and do euaporate and sende forth ardente smokes in an Æthna hill or Vesuuie mountaine. The princesse impaciente to endure so long, could no longer keepe secrete the flames hidden within her, without telling and vttering them to some, whom her minde liked best, and there to

er them wher she thought they toke their essence and beinge,
age away all shame and feare, which accustomed doth
iate ladies of her estate and age. One day she toke secretly
one that was her *gouvernesse* named *Radegonde*, a gentle-
man, so vertuous, wise and sober, as any other that was in the
our's court, who for her approued manners and chaste life,
he charge of the bringing vpp and nourishing of *Adelasia*
her infancie. To this gentlewoman then the amorous prin-
deliberated to communicate her secretes, and to let her vn-
derstand her passion, that shee might finde some remedie. And
at purpose they two retired alone within a closet, the poore
trembling like a leafe (at the blaste of the weasterne winde,
the sunne beginneth to spread his beames) sighinge so
ely, as if her bodye and soule would haue departed, said

"The trust which euer I haue found in that naturall good-
at appeareth to be in you, my mother and welbeloued ladie,
I with discretion and fidelitie, wherwith all your actes and
es be recommended, do presently assure me, and make me
in this my trouble, to participate vnto you my secretes,
be of greater importance without comparison, than anye
uer I tolde you, perswading my selfe that the thing which I
tell you, whatsoever it be (be it good or ill) you will accept
suche wyse, as your wisdom requireth, and to keepe it so
as the secrete of such a ladie as I am doth deserue. And that
e not holde you longe in doubt what it is, know ye, that of
e valor, prowesse, beautie, and curtesie of Senior *Alerane* of
hath founde such place in my hart, as (in despite of my
am so in loue with him, that my life is not deare vnto me
his sake, my hart taketh no pleasure but in his glorie and
hauinge chosen him so vertuous a prince for my frend, and
y (by God's sufferance) for my lawfull spouse and husband.
assaied a thousand meanes, and so many wayes, to cast him
to blot him out of my remembrance: but, alas! unhappie
fortune is so froward and so vnmercifull to my endeour,
more I labour and go aboute to extinguishe in me, the
ie of his name and commendable vertues, so much the more
large and augmente them, the flames of which loue do take

such increase, as I do litle or nothinge esteeme my life without the enioyinge the effecte of my desire, and the taste of suche licour, which nourishing my hope in pleasure, may quenche the fier that doth consume me: otherwise I see no meanes possible but that I am constrayned, either to lose my good wittes (whereof alreadye I feele some alienation) or to ende my dayes with extreme anguise, and insupportable hartes sorowe. Alas, I know well that I shall loose my time, if I attempt to pray the emperour my father to giue me Alerane to husbände, sith he doth already practise a marriage betwene the king of Hungarie and me: and also that Alerane (although he be a prince of so noble bloud and honourable house, as the Saxon is) yet he is to base to be sonne in lawe to an emperour. In these my distresses, it is of you alone, of whom I looke for ayde and counsaile, beinge certaine of your prudence and good iudgement: and therefore I pray you to haue pitie vpon mee, and haue remorse vpon this immoderate passion, that doth tormente mee beyonde measure." Radegonde hearing Adelasia disclose this talke, wherof she would neuer haue thought, was so confounded and astoned, that of long time she could not speake a word, holding her head downe, reuoluing a thousand diuers matters in her minde, knewe not well what to aunswere the princesse. Finally gatheringe her spirites vnto her, shee aunswered her with teares in her eyes, saying: "Alas, madame what is that you saye? Is it possible that the wisest, vertuous, and most curteous princesse of Europa could suffer herselfe in this sort (through her onely aduise) to be transported to her owne affections and sensuall appetites? Is it well doen that you seing in me, a discretion and modestie, doe not imitate the puritie thereof? Be these the godly admonicions which heretofore I haue giuen you, that you will so lightly defile your father's house with the blot of infamie, and your self with eternal reproch? Would you, madame, that vpon the ende of my yeares I should begin to betraye my lord the emperour, who hath committed to my hands the most precious iewell of his house? Shal I be so vnconstant in mine old dayes to become an vnshamefast minister of your fonde and foolishe loue, a thing which I neuer did in the ardent time of youth? Alas, madame, forget I beseech you this folish order, cast vnder your feete this determi-

n wickedly begonne, such as to the blemishing of the
 arable brightnes of your fame, maye cause the ruine of vs all.
 w the counsell of your deare nourice Radegonde, whoe loueth
 etter than her owne soule: quenche these noisome and parch-
 flames which haue kindled, and throwen forth their sparkes
 your chaste and tender harte. Take heede, I beseech you,
 a vaine hope doe not deceiue you, and a foolishe desire abuse
 Alas, thincke that it is the parte of a sage and prudente
 e, to restraîne the first motions of euerye passion, and to
 e the rage that riseth in our willes, and the same very oft by
 ssion of time, bringeth to it selfe to late and noysome repen-
 . This your thought procedeth not of loue: for hee that
 keth to sustaine himselfe with venim sugred with that drogue,
 ende he seeth himselfe so desperatly impoysoned, as onely
 is the remedie for suche disease: a louer truly may be
 the slaue of a tyrant most violent, cruell, and bloudie that
 be found, whose yoke once put on, can not be put of, but
 painful sorowe and vnspeakeable displeasure. Do you not
 madame, that loue and follie be two passions so like one an
 that they engender like effectes in the minds of those that
 ssesse them: in such wise as the affection of the paciente
 t be concealed? Alas, what shall become of you and him that
 ue so well, if the emperour do know and perceiue your light
 nd determinations. Shew madame, for God's sake, what you
 et the ripe fruits of your prudence so long time tilled, appeare
 e to the worlde: expell from you this vnruled loue, which
 suffer frankly to enter into your hart, assure your selfe he
 te such holdfaste of the place, that when you thincke to ex-
 the enimie out, it is he that will driue away that small por-
 force and reason that resteth in you: and then the comfort
 r miseries, will be the lamentation of your losses, and a
 ng repentaunce for that which cannot be by any meanes red-
 d." Adelasia burning in loue and fretting with anger, not
 abide contrarie replie to her minde, began to loke furiouslie
 the ladie that gaue her suche holsome admonicion, to
 she said with more than womanly stoutnes, these words:
 what are you, good gentlewoman, that dare so hardly pre-

scribe lawes to loue that is not subiect or tied vnto the fantasie of men? Who hath giuen you commission to take the matter so hote against that I haue determined to doe, say you what you can? No, no, I loue Alerane and will loue him whatsoeuer come of it: and sithe I can haue none other helpe at your handes, or meete counsell for mine ease and comfort: be assured that I wil endeavour to finde it in my selfe: and likewise to prouide so well as I can for mine affaires, that eschewing the alliaunce which the emperour prepareth, I will liue at hartes ease with him, whom (in vaine) you go about to put out of my remembraunce: and if so be I chaunce to fayle of my purpose, I haue a medicine for my calamities which is death, the laste refuge of all miseries: which will be right pleasaunt vnto me, ending my life, in the contemplation and memorie of the sincere and perfecte loue that I beare to mine Alerane." Radegonde no lesse abashed, than surprised with feare, hearinge the resolution of the princesse, could not at the first make any aunswere, but to make her recourse to teares, the most familiar weapons that women haue. Then seing by the countenances of Adelasia, that the passion had set in foote to deepe for any to attempt to plucke oute the rootes, from that time forth shee wiped her eyes, not without euident demonstration (for all that) of her great griefe conceyued, with infinite sighes, turning her face to the ladie, shee said to her with pleasaunter countenance than before: "Madame, sith your mishap is such as withoute Alerane you cannot bee quiet or pacified in minde, appease your plaintes, wipe awaye your teares, shew your countenance ioyful, and setting aside all care, put on good corage, and repose in mee all your anguishe and trouble. For I doe promise you and sweare by the fayth that I do owe you madame, come whatsoeuer shall vnto me, I will devise in practising your rest to beginne mine owne sorow. And then you shall see how much I am your frend, and that the words which I haue spoken do not proceede els where, but from the desire that I haue to doe you seruice, seeking al wayes possible your aduancement." Adelasia at these last words felt such a motion in her minde, as much as doe she had for the exceeding great ioy and pleasure she conceiued, to staie her soule from leaping forth of that corporall

on (like the spirite of that Romaine ladie which once lefte bodye to descende into the Elisien fields, to vse the perfect of her ioy with the blessed soules there, when she saw her e retorne safe and sounde from the battaile of Thrasimene les the lake of Peruse, where the consull Flaminus was come by Hanniball): but in the ende, the hope to haue that wh Radegonde had promised, made her to receiue hart againe, to clepe her counseler, sayinge: " God forbid, deare mother, the thing you do for me should rebounde to your mishap or contentmente, sithe the affection which you haue consisteth in onely pitie and conseruation of a poore afflicted maiden. your desire tendeth to the deliuerance of the moste passionate plesse that euer was borne of mother: and beleue that fortune bee so fauourable, that what mischief soeuer chaunce, you synning without paine, I shall be shee that alone shal beare penaunce: wherefore once againe I beseech you, (sayd shee facing Radegonde) to bringe that to passe whereof you giue me hope." " Care not you madame," sayde Radegonde " I will cause you to speake vnto him whom you desire so muche: you shal be meerye and forgette these straunge fashions, in tormenting your selfe so muche before your maides, to the intente that, which hitherto hath bin kepte secrete, maye not be reueyled to your great shame and hinderaunce, and to the vtter ruine and sorrow of me." During all this time, Alerane liued in desire and hardy cowardise, for although he sawe the amorous looks of Adelasia, yet he durst fixe no certain iudgement of his satisfaction, although his harte tolde him, that he was her fauoured friend, and promised him that, which almost he durst not thinke, whiche was to haue her one day for friend, if the offer of spouse were refused. Thus tormented with ioye and doubt, wandering betwene doubt and assuraunce of that he desired, the selfe same daye that Adelasia practised with Radegonde, for the obtaining of her ioy, and secrete ministerie of her love, he entred alone into a garden, into whiche the princesse had had prospect, and after he had walked there a good space of way, viewing diligently the order of the fruitful trees of so

diuers sortes, as there be varietie of colours, with in a faire meade, during the verdure of the spring time, and of so good and saourours taste as the harte of man could wyshe: he repaired vnder a laurel tree so well spread and adorned with leaues, about whiche tree you might haue seene an infinite number of myrtle trees of smell odoriferous and sweete, of oringe trees laden with vnripe fruite, of pliable mastickes and tender tameriskes: and there he fetched his walkes a long the thycke and greene herbes, beholding the varietie of floures, whiche decked and beautified the place, with their liuely and naturall colours. He then rauished in this contemplation, remembring her which was the pleasure and torment of his minde, in sighing wise began to saye: " O that the heauens be not propitious and fauourable to my indeuours: sithe that in the middes of my iolities, I fele a new pleasaunt displeasure, which doth adnihilate all other solace, but that which I receiue through the image painted in my harte, of that diuine beautie, whiche is more varieted in perfection of pleasures, than this paradise and delicious place, in varietie of enamel and painting, although that nature and art of man, haue workemanlye trauailed to declare and set forth their knowledge and diligence. Ah, Adelasia, the fairest lady of al faire and most excellent princesse of the earth: is it not possible for me to feede so well of the viewe and contemplation of thy heauenly and angelicall face, as I doe of the sight of these faire and sundry coloured floures? may it not be brought to passe that I may smell that swete breath which respireth through thy delicate mouth, being none other thing than baulme muske, and aumbre, yea and that which is more precious, and for the raritie and valour hath no name, even as I do smell the roses, pincks, and violets, hanging ouer my head, frankly offering themselues into my handes? Ah, infortunate Alerane, there is no floure that ought to be so handled, nor saour, the swetnesse whereof ought not to bee sented without desert merited before. Ah! loue, loue, that thou hast fixed my minde vpon so high thinges: alas I feare an offence so daungerous, which in the ende will breede my death: and yet I can not withdrawe my harte from that sincke of loue, although I would force my selfe to expell it from me: alas, I haue red of him so many times, and

haue heard talke of his force, as I am afraid to boorde him, and yet feare I shall not escape his gulf. Alas, I knowe well it is he, of whom is engendred a litle mirth and laughing, after whiche doth followe a thousande teares and weapings, which for a pleasure that passeth away so sone as the whirlwinde, doth giue vs ouer to great repentaunce, the sorowe whereof endureth a long time, and sometimes his bitternesse accompanieth vs euen to the graue. The pacientes that be tainted with that amorous feuer, although continually they dye, yet they can not wholly see and perceiue the default and lacke of their life, albeit they do wyshe and desire it still. But, alas, what mishap is this that I doe see the poyson whiche causeth my mischief, and doe knowe the waye to remedye the same, and yet neuerthelesse I can not or will not recouer the helpe: did euer man heare a thing so straunge, as a sicke man seking helpe and fynding recouerie, should yet reiecte it?" Saying so, he wepte and syghed so piteouslye as a litle chylde threatred by his mother the nourice. Then roming vp and downe vppon the grasse, he seemed rather to be a man straught and bounde with chaines, than like one that had his wittes and vnderstanding. Afterwardes being come againe to himselfe, hee retourned to his firste talke, saying: " But what? am I more wyse, more constant and perfecte, than so many emperours, kynges, princes, and greate lordes, who notwithstanding their force, wisdom, or riches, haue bene tributarie to loue? The tamer and subduer of monsters and tyrants, Hercules, (vanquished by the snares of loue) did not he handle the distaffe in stead of his mightie mace? The strong and inuincible Achilles, was not he sacrificed to the shadowe of Hector vnder the colour of loue, to celebrate holy mariage with Polixena, doughter to king Priamus? The great dictator Iulius Cæsar, the conquerour of so many people, armies, captaines, and kinges, was overcome with the beautie and good grace of Cleopatra, queene of Egipt. Augustus his successour, attired lyke a woman, by a yeoman of his chamber, did he not take away Liua from him that was first married vnto her? and that common enemy of man and of all cürtesie, Claudius Nero, appeased yet some of his furie for the loue of his ladie? What straunge things did the learned, wise and vertuous monarche Marcus Aurelius indure of his

well beloued Faustine? and that greate captaine Marcus Antonius the very terror of the Romaine people and the feare of straung and barbarous nations did homage to the child Cupido for the beautie of queene Cleopatra, which afterwarde was the cause of his vtter ouerthrow. But what meane I to alledge and remember the number of louers, being so infinite as they be? Wherefore haue the poetes in time past fained in their learned and deuine bookes the loues of Iupiter, Apollo, and Mars, but that euery man may knowe the force of loue to be so puissaunt as the gods themselves haue felt his force to be inuincible and ineuitable? Ah: if sometimes a gentleman be excused for abassing himself to loue a woman of base birth and bloud, why should I bee accused or apprehended for louing the daughter of the chiefe prince of Europe? Is it for the greatnesse of her house and antiquitie of her race? Why, that is all one betwene vs twoo, and toke his original of the place, whereof at this daye my father is the chiefe and principall. And admitte that Adelasia be the doughter of an emperour: ah, loue hath no regarde to persons, houses, or riches, rather is he of greater commendation whose enterpryses are moste famous and haute gestes extende their flight farre of. Now resteth then to deuise meanes how to make her vnderstand my payne: for I am assured that she loueth me, sauing that her honour and yong yeres doe let her to make it appeare more manifest: but it is my propre dutie to make requeste for the same, considering her merites and my small desertes in respect of her perfections. Ah: Alerane, thou must vnlose the tongue which so long time hath ben tied vp, through to much fonde and fearful shame. Set aside the feare of perill, whatsoeuer it be, for thou canst not imploye thy selfe more gloriously than vpon the pursuit of suche a treasure that semeth to be reserued for the fame of thy mind so highly placed, which can not attaine greater perfections, except the heauens do frame in their impressions a seconde Adelasia (of whom I think dame nature her selfe hath broken the moulde) who can not shake of Alerane from the chiefe place, in whom he hath layd the foundation of his ioye that he hopeth to finde in loue." During these complaintes, Radegonde, that sawe him rauished in that extasie, coniecturing the cause of his being alone, caused him to be called

page: who hearing that, was surprised with a new feare in-
t with a secrete pleasure, knowing very well, that she being
gouvernesse of his lady, vnderstode the greatest priuities of her
, hoping also that she brought him gladsome newes, and
g a good chere vpon his face all mated and confused for
les past, hee repayred to the lady messenger, who was no lesse
ned, for the tale that she must tell, than he was afeard and
e, by sight of her whom he thought did bring the areste
etermination, either of ioye or of displeasure. After curtesie
welcoms done betwene them, the lady preambled a certayne
discourse touching the matter, to do the Saxon prince to
stande the good will and harty loue of Adelasia towarde
praying him that the same might not be discovered, sith the
of his lady did consiste in the secrecie thereof, assuring
that he was so in fauour with the princesse as any true and
all louer could desire to be for his content. I leaue to your
iteration, in what sodayne ioye Alerane was, hearing suche
ome newes whiche he loked not for, and thought he was not
o render sufficient thanks to the messenger, and much lesse
olle the beautie and curtesie of his lady, who without any
merites done before, (as he thought) had him in so good re-
raunce. Beseching moreouer Radegonde, that she would
name do humble commendations to his lady, and therewith
firme her in the assuraunce of his perfect good will, and im-
le desire, euerlastingly at her commaundement, onely praying
at he might saye vnto Adelasia three wordes in secrete, to
at shee might perceiue his harte, and see the affection where-
e desired to obey her al the dais of his life. The messenger
him of al that he required, and instructed him what he
doe for the accomplishment of that he loked for, which
at the next day at night she would cause him to come into
derobe, which was adioyning to the chamber of his lady,
ende that when her maydes were a bed, he might repaire to
ce where he might easely visite his maistresse, and say
er what he thought good. The compact thus made, the
turned to the princesse, that wayted with good deuotion for
ues of her beloued. And hearing the report of Radegonde,

shee was not contente that she should make repeticion of the same, twise or thrise but a million of times and euen till nighte, that she slept vpon that thought with the greatest rest, that she had receiued in long time before. The morrowe at the houre that Alerane should come, Adelasia fayning her self to be ill at ease, caused her maydes to goe to bed, making her alone to tarie with her that was the messenger of her loue, who a litle while after went to seeke Alerane, whiche was a building of castels in the ayre, fantasying a thousand deuises in his minde: what might befall of that enterprise he went about: notwithstanding he was so blinded in folly, as without measuring the fault which he committed, he thought vpon nothing but vpon the present pleasure, which semed to him so great as the chamber wherein hee was, seemed not sufficient to comprehend the glory of his good houre. But the princesse on the other part, felte a maruellous trouble in her minde, and almoste repented that she had so hardely made Alerane to come into a place vndecent for her honour, and at a time so inconuenient. Howbeit seing that the stone was throwen, shee purposed not to premitte the occasion, which being balde can not easely be gotten againe if she be once let slip. And whiles she traueiled in these meditations and discoursed vpon that shee had to doe, Radegonde came in, leading Alerane by the hande, whom she presented to the princesse, saying to her with a verie good grace: "Madame, I deliuer you this prysoner, whom euen nowe I founde here, betwene your chambre and that wherin your maydes lye: now consider what you haue to doe." Alerane in the meane tyme, was fallen downe vpon his knees before his saint, wholly bent to contemplate her excellent beautie and good grace, which made him as dumbe as an image. Shee lykewyse beholding hym that made her thus to erre in her honestie, forced through shame and loue, could not forbear to beholde him, the power of her mynde wholly transferred into her eyes, that then yelded contentation of her harte whiche shee so long desired. In the ende Alerane holding the handes of Adelasia many tymes did kisse them, then receiuing courage, he brake of that long silence and began to saye thus: "I neuer thought (madame) that the sight of a thing so long desired, had bene of such effect, as it

would haue rauished both the mynde and bodye of their propre duties and naturall actions, if nowe I had not proued it in beholding the diuinitie of your beautie moste excellent. And truely madame Radegonde dyd rightly terme this place here, my pryson, considering that of long tyme I haue partly loste this my libertie, of the whiche I feele nowe an intire alienation: of one thing sure I am, that being your prysoner as I am in deede, I may make my vaunt and boast, that I am lodged in the fairest and pleasauntest pryson that a man can wyshe and desire. For which cause madame, be wel aduised how you do vse and entreate your captiue and slaue, that humbly maketh petition vnto you, to haue pitie vpon his weakenesse, which he will accept as a grace vnspeakeable, if of your accustomed goodnesse it may please you to receiue him for your owne, for that henceforth hee voweth and consecrateth his life, goodes, and honour, to your commaundement and seruice." And saying so, his stomake panted with continuall sighes and from his eyes distilled a ryuer of teares, the better to expresse and declare the secret force, that made hym to vtter these woordes. Which was the cause that Adelasia embrasing hym very louingly made aunswere thus: "I knowe not (lorde Alerane) what pryson that is, where the prisoner is in better case, than the pryson of whom he termeth himselfe to be the slaue, considering that I fele in me such a losse of my selfe, as I can not tell whether to go, or where to retire, but euen to him that craueth the same fredome, whereof I my selfe doe make requeste. Alas, my welbeloued Alerane, into what extremitie am I brought: the very great loue that I beare you, forceth me to forget my dutie, and the ligneage wherof I come, yea and mine honor, which is more to bee esteemed than all the reste. But I repose in you such affiance, as you will not deceiue so simple a ladie as I am, vtterly voyde of guyle and deceit. Who, if you be tormented, liueth not without grieffe and sorrowe altogether like vnto yours. If you doe sighe, I am wholly spent and consumed in teares. Do you desire reste? Alas: I wishe and craue the same vnto vs both, that be now sundred and deuided, whiche can not be aquired except they be vnited which before were wholly separated." Radegonde interrupting their talke, smilingly said: "And how

can this separation be combined, where the parties them selues do liue in such disiunctions?" " You say true, madame," saide Alerane, " for the perfection of vnitie consisteth in the knitting of that which is separated. Wherfore madame (sayd he to Adelasia) I humbly besech you, aswel for your comfort as my rest, not to suffer this diuision to be to long, sith the outward bound shall combine the same so inwardly, as very death shall not bee able hereafter to deface or diminishe the same." " If I may assure my selfe," sayde she, " of your fidelitie, it so may come to passe, as I wold giue you a very great libertie, but hearing tell so many times of the inconstancie and fickle trust of men, I will be contented with my first fault, without adding any further aggrauation, to fasten and binde that, which I do specially esteme." " Alas, madame," sayd Alerane, " doe you thinke that the prouf of my fidelitie may receiue greater perfection, by enioying the pleasures that I hope for than it doth alredy? No, no, madame, and therefore be sure of my harte and stedfastnesse: for soner shall my body fayle, than defaulte in me to serue and honor you, if not according to the worthinesse of your estate, yet by al meanes, so farre as my power shal stretch. And can you finde in your hart to conceiue, that your Alerane would play the traitour with her, for whose seruice he feareth not to aduenture a thousand liues if God had geuen him so many?" Adelasia be sprent all with teares, was in an extasy or traunce. Which Alerane perceiuing and saw that Radegonde was gone into the wardrobe, to suffer them to talke their fill, he began to take possession of her mouthe, redoubling kisse vpon kisse, sometimes washed with teares, sometime dried vp, with frequent vse thereof, leauing neither eye nor cheke vnkissed: and seing the pacience of his lady, he seased vpon her white, harde, and round breastes, whose pappes with sighes moued and remoued, yelding a certaine desire of Alerane to passe further. Which Adelasia perceiuing, dissembling a swete anger and such a chafe as did rather accende the flames of the amorous prince, than with moiste licour extinguishe the same, and making him to geue ouer the enterprise, she fiercely sayd vnto him: " How now, (Sir Alerane) howe dare you thus malapertly abuse this my secret frendship, in suffering you to come so frankely into my chamber. Thinke not that although I

haue vsed you thus familiarly, that I can be able to suffer you to attempt any further: for (if God be fauourable to conserue me in my right wittes) neuer man shal haue that aduauntage to gather the floure of my virginitie, but he with whom I shall be ioyned in mariage. Otherwyse I shall bee vnworthy, bothe of my honourable state, and also of that man what soeuer he be, worthy of estimation and preferment." " So I thynke to madame," aunswered Alerane: " for if it woulde please you to doe me that honour, to receiue me for your faythfull and loyall espouse, I sweare vnto you by him that seeth and heareth all thynges, that neuer any other shall bee maistresse of Alerane's harte, but the fayre princesse Adelasia." She that asked no better, after mutche talke betwene them, in the ende condescended that Alerane should geue his faith to marrie her, and to conuey her out of the courte, till the emperour were appeased for their committed fault. Thus had the Saxon prince, the full possession of his desires, and caried away the pray so long time sought for. Radegonde was she, that receiued the othes of their espousalles, and capitulated the articles of their secrete mariage. And after the determination made of their flying awaye, and a daye thereunto appointed, the two louers entred the campe, to make proufe by combate of their hardinesse, and assaye of their trauayle in tyme to come, wherein they thought for euer to perseuere and continue. Beyng a bedde then together, they did consumate the bande that strayghtly doth bynde the harte of louers together, intiring the vnion diuided, whiche before they thought imperfect and could not be accomplished but by inward affections of the minde. And God knoweth howe this new married couple vsed their mutuall contentation: but sure it is, that they continued together vntil the morning had vncouered from the night her darkenes, euen to the point of day, that Alerane was somoned by Radegonde to depart, who to conclude his former ioye, very louingly kissed his newe wife, and sayd vnto her: " Madame, the felicitie that I fele nowe, by enioying that which vniteth me so nerely being indissoluble and neuer hereafter to be broken, semeth so great as no perill whatsoever doth happen, can make me forget the least part of my ioye. So it is that seing the state of our present affaires, and fearing the danger that may chaunce, I will for this time take my leaue of you,

and goe about to put the same in order, that no negligence may slacke your ioye and desired pleasure." "Ah, sir," (saith she) "that my hart forethinketh both the best and worste of our intended enterprise. But to the intent we may proue our fortune, by whose conduction we must passe, I doe submitte my selfe to the wisdom of your mynde, and to the good successe that hetherto hath accompaigned all your indeuours." And then they kissed and embraced again, drinking vp one anothers teares, which distilled from them in such aboundaunce. Thus Alerane departed from his ladies chamber, and went home to his owne house, where he solde all his goodes at small price, making men to vnderstand, that he would employ the money otherwise in things whereof he hoped to recouer greater gaine. With that money he bought precious stones, and pretie iewels, that he might not be burdened with carriage of to much gold, or other money, and then he put his males and bougets in readinesse to go with his wife, either of them in the habite and apparell of pilgrimes, faire and softly a foote, that they might not be discovered: which was done in the night. The princesse faining her selfe to be sicke, made her maydes to withdrawe themselues into their chamber, and then she went into the garden where Alerane firste made his plaintes, as you haue heard before: in whiche place her husbände taried for her. God knoweth whether they renewed their pastime begon the daye of their mariage, but fearing to be taken, they began to playe the comedie, the actes wherof were very long, and the scrolle of their miseries to prolix to carie, before they came to the catastrophe and ende of their comical action. For leauing their sumptuous and riche apparell, they clothed themselues with pilgrims attire, taking the skallop shell and staffe, like to them that make their pilgrimage to S. Iames in Gallisia. The princesse toke the personage of a yong wench, ruffling her heare whiche she had in time past so carefully kempt, curled, and trimmed with gold and iewels of inestimable value, wherein consisteth the chieftest grace of the beautie and ornament of the woman. Who is able to deny, but that this naturall humour and passion, borne so sone as we, whiche they call loue, is not a certayne essence and being, the force and vigor whereof, not able to abide comparison? Is it no small matter, that by the only instinction of loue's force, the daughter of so great a prince, as

the emperour of the Romaines was, shoulde wander like a vagabonde in dissembled tire, and poorely cladde, to experiment and proue the long trauaile of iourneyes, the intemperature of the ayre, the hazarde to meete with so many theeues and murderers, which wayte in all places for poore passengers, and moreouer, to feele the bitterness of trauayle, neuer tasted before, the rage of hunger, the intollerable alteration of thirst, the heate of hotte sommer, the coldenesse of wynter's yce, subiect to raines, and stormy blastes: doth it not plainly demonstrate that loue hath either a greater perfection, than other passions, or els that they which feele that alteration, be out of the number of reasonable men, endued with the brightnesse of that noble qualitie. This fayre lady recouering the fields with her husband, with determination to take their flight into Italie, was more ioyfull, freshe, and lusty, than when she liued at ease amonges the delicates and pleasures, which she tasted in her father's court. See howe fortune and loue are content to be blinde, closing vp the eyes of them, that followe their trace, and subdue themselues to their edictes, and vnstable dispositions. And truely this rage of loue was the only meane to dulcorate and make swete the bitter gal of grieve whiche those twoo louers felte, defatigated almoste with tedious trauaile, iudging their wearinesse a pastime and pleasure, being guided by that vnconstante captaine, whiche maketh dolts and fooles wyse men, emboldeneth the weake hearted and cowardes, fortieth the feeble, and to be shorte, vntieth the purses and bagges of couetous carles and miserable misers. Nowe whyles our faire pilgrimes, without any vowed deuocion, were abroad at their pleasures (beyng wery with the waye they had traueyled all nighte) the morrowe after their departure, all the emperour's house was in a great hurly burly and stirre for the absence of Adelasia. The wayting maydes cried out, and raged without measure, with such shrichinges, that the emperour moued with pitie, although his grieve and anger was great, yet he caused euery place there aboutes to be searched and sought, but all that labour was in vaine. In the ende, perceiuing the absence of Alerane, suspected that it was he that had stolen away his fayre doughter, whiche brought him into such passion and frensie, as he was like to runne out of his wyttes and

transgresse the boundes of reason. "Ah, traytour," sayd the good prince, "is this the guerdon of good turnes, bestowed vpon thee, and of the honour thou hast receiued in my company? Do not thinke to escape scot free thus without the rigorous iustice of a father, deserued by disobedience, and of a prince, against whom his subiect hath committed villany. If God geue me lyfe, I wyll take such order, as the posteritie shall take example by that iuste vengeaunce whiche I hope to take of thee (arrant theefe, and despoyle of my honor and consolation.) And thou vnkynde doughter shalte smartely feelee the wrong done to thy kynde, and welbeloued father, who thought to prouide for thee, more honourably than thy disloyaltie and incontinenzie, so farre as I see, doe merite and deserue, sythe that without my leaue, and respect of thy vocation, thou hast gotten thee a husband worthy of thy folly, with whom I hope to make thee vnderstand thy fault, and my displeasure which I receiue through thy shamefull acte, so reprochfull, specially in her which is the doughter of such a father as I am, descended of the moste royall race within the circuit of Europe." Many other things the emperour sayd, in great rage and furie: and in thend commaunded, that one should go into Saxone, to knowe if Alerane had conueied his stolen doughter thither: but he could bring no newes at all from thence. He assaied then if he could learne any tidinges of them by other meanes, causing by sound of trumpet to be cried in all the townes confining that if any persone could bring him worde, or do him to vnderstande certaine and sure newes of those twoo fugitiues, he would geue them that, wherewith they should be contented all the daies of their life. But he wan so much by this thirde serche, as he did by the firste twoo. Whiche thing the maiestie of God, semed to permit and suffer as wel for the happie successe that chaunced afterwarde, as for the punishing of the rashe enterprise of two louers, whiche liued not very long in prosperitie and ioy, but that they felte the hande of God, who sometime suffereth the faithfull to fall, to make him acknowledge his imbecillitie, to the ende he may confesse, that all health, sustenance, reste, and comfort, is to be attended and looked for at the handes of God. When Alerane and his lady were gone out of a citie with in the emperour's lande called Hispouge,

being come into a certaine wilde and desert place, they fell into the lapse of certaine theues, whiche stripped Alerane into his shirte, and had done as much to the poore princesse, if certaine marchauntes had not come betwene, which forced the theues to flie. Alerane was succoured with some clothes to couer his bodie, and releued with a litle summe of money, which being spent, those two kinges children were constrained to begge, and aske for God's sake reliefe to sustaine their infortunate life. Whiche distresse was so difficulte for Alerane to disgest, as he was like (standing vpon his feete) to die for sorrowe and want, not so much for the aduersitie whereunto he was brought through his owne fault, as the pitie that he toke vpon his deare beloued lady, whome he sawe in so lamentable state, and knew that she might attaine her aun-cient dignitie and honour againe, if she listed to preferre reward or prise before his life, for which she spared not the very last drop of her blood. She knowing the dolor and anguishe that her hus-bande endured, comforted him very wisely with ioyfull counte-naunce, saying: "Howe now, deare husband, thinke you that fortune is or ought to be still fauourable to princes and great lordes? Do you not knowe that great bulkes and shippes do soner perishe and drowne in maine seas and riuers amiddes the raging waues and surges, than in narrowe floudes and brookes, where the water is still and calme? Doe you not see great trees, whose toppes doe rise aloft, aboue high hilles and stepe mountaines, soner shaken and tossed with blustering windie blastes, than those that be planted, in fertile dales and low valleis? Haue you forgotten so many histories, by you perused and read with so great delight, when you were in the emperour's court? Doe not they describe the chaunge of monarches, the ruine of houses, the destruction of one realme acquired, by the establishing and raigne of an other? What prince, monarch, or captaine was euer so happy, as hath not felt some grieffe and misfortune? Alas, sweete heart, thinke that God doth chastise vs with his roddes of tribulation, to make vs to know him: but in the meane time, he kepeth for vs a better fortune that wee looke not for. Moreouer he neuer forsaketh them which with a good heart do go vnto him, hauing their affiaunce in his great goodnesse and infinite mercie." Alerane hearing the

wise talke of his wife, could not forbear weeping, and sighing answered her in this maner: "Ah, lady, in beautie and wisdom incomparable, it is not the present fortune that causeth my minde to wander and straye from the siege of constancie, knowing well the qualities and number of fortune's snares, and how ielous she is of humaine ioye and felicitie. I am not ignorant that she layeth her ambushes, and doeth beset the endeouours, soner of personages that bee noble and of highe parentage, than of those whose heartes be base and vnnoble, and their victories not able to attain any iote of honour and fame. But, good God, (saide he, embracing his deare beloued spouse) it is for you, madame, that I endure tormente, hauing made you to abandon the pompe of your estate, and bereued from you a king to be your husband, causing you thus to feele an horrible and newe kinde of punishmente, hunger and famine (I meane) in the middes of the desertes and wilde places, and therewithall haue ioyned you in companie with an infortunate felowshippe, who in steade of comfort and solace, ministreth teares and sighes. O God, most high and puissant, howe profounde and darke are thy iudgements, and howe righteous is thy iustice. I acknowledge mine offence to be the cause of thyne anger, and the originall of our trespasse, and that this paine chaunceth to vs for our sinnes, which haue so wickedly betraied the best prince of the world, and forsaken the companie of him, at whose bountifull handes I haue receiued better entertainment and greater honour, than I deserued. Ah, emperour Otho, that thou art so well reuenged now, with cowardly fraude and deceit committed against thee by Alerane of Saxone, taking away her from thee, which was the staffe and future staye of thy reuerend age." And as he was perseuering in this talke, Adelasia (seing him in that contemplation) plucked him by the arme, saying: "Sir, it is time to consider our own affaires: we haue trauailed I can not tell howe farre without rest, me thinke (our fortune being no better) that we ought to remaine in some place attending for the grace and mercy of God, who (I hope) wil not forsake vs." They were then in Liguria in the desarts, betweene Ast and Sauonne, a countrie in that time well peopled, and furnished with huge and darke forestes, garnished with many trees, great and highe. By the

aduisse then of Adelasia, the Saxon prince forced by necessitie (the maistresse of all artes) retired into those forestes where he practised the occupation of a collier, and some said that nature taught him the order howe to cutte his woode, to make readie his pittes, and to knowe the season and tyme when his coales were burned enough. Great paines he sustained about his businesse, and went himself to sell his coales, which he bare vpon his shoulders, to the next market townes, tyll he had gayned so mutche as bought him an asse, wherewith he dayly traualled to vtter his coales, and other deuises which neede had forced him to learne. In this time Adelasia was deliuered of a goodly child, whom they named William. And afterwards, by succession of time, she bare sixe sonnes more. For they dwelt almost xviii. or xx. yeares in that poore and miserable life, and had dressed vp a litle lodging within a caue, that was faire and brode, wherein verie trimly and well they had bestowed themselues. When the eldest of their sonnes was growen to the stature of a pretie stripling, the father sent him sometime to Saunonne, and sometime to Ast, to sell their litle marchandise, for reliefe of their houshold. But the boy, whose bloud could not conceale and hide the nobilitie of his birth, hauing one day sold certaine burdens and loades of woode and coale: bought with that money a faire yong hauke, which he caried vnto his father. The good man gently rebuked his sonne, and said, that suche game belonged not to men of their degree, and that they had muche a do to liue, without employing their money vppon such trifles. Long time after, William being arriued to the age of xvi yeares, went to Saunonne, to sell certaine ware by his father's commaundement, and with the money he bought a very fayre sword, which when his father saw, with teares in his eyes, he went aside and said to himselfe: " Ah vnfortunate ladde, that thy hard lucke should do thee this great wrong: truely neither the pouertie of thy parentes, nor the place of thy bringinge vp, can deface in thee the secrete shining brightnes of thine auncestors vertue, nor the prediction of thy courage and manhode in time to come, if God giue the grace to aduaunce thee, to the seruice of some noble prince." Notwithstanding for that time he ceased not sharpely to rebuke and threaten his sonne, in such wyse as the yong man hauing a

hart greater than his force, determined secretly to depart from his parentes. Now fortune chaunced so wel and apt for his purpose, as then and at the very same time, the Hongarians were entred Italye to spoile and robbe the countrie, against whom the emperour marched in greate expedicion, with an huge and goodly armie, of purpose to force them to leaue his lande in peace. William hauinge knowledge hereof, proceeded towarde the emperour's campe, where hee shewed in deede greate hope (being of so smal yeares) of his future valiaunce and prowess, by the deedes of armes that hee did, during that warre. Which ended and the enemy put to flighte, the emperour wente into Prouance, to put in order his affaires in his realme of Arles, which then was subiecte to the empire. Afterwards he retired into Italy with deliberation to seiorne at Sauonne, for a certaine time, which displeased William nothing at all, because he should remaine harde by his parentes, who were very carefull for his well doing, vtterly ignoraunt where he was become. And notwithstandinge a hope (what I knowe not) made them expect of their sonne som good fortune in time to come, who was now grown great and of goodly perfection, one of the most valiaunt souldiours that were in the wages and seruice of his maiestie. Which very brauely he declared in a combate, that he fought man to man with an Almaine souldiour, that was hardy, big made, and feared of all men, whom neuerthelesse he overcame in the presence of the emperor his graundfather. Who, I know not by what natural inclination, daily fixed his eye vpon that yong champion, and began to beare him more good will than anye other in his courte, which was an occasion, that an auncient gentleman, seruing in the princes courte, stedfastly beholding the face, behaiour and countenance of William, seemed to see a picture of the emperour when he was of his age, which was more exactlye viewed by diuers other, that were broughte vp in their youth with Otho. Wherof being aduertised, he caused the yong man to be called forth, of whom he demaunded the names of his parentes, and the place where hee was borne. William that was no lesse courteous, humble and welmanered, than wise, valiant and hardie, kneeled before the emperour with a stoute countenance, resemblinge the nobilitie of his auncestours, answered: " Most sacred and re-

nowmed emperour, I haue nothinge whereof to render thanckes to fortune, but for the honour that your maiestie hath done vnto me, to receiue mee into your noble seruice. For the fortune and condition of my parentes, be so base, that I blushe for shame to declare them vnto you. Howbeit being your humble seruaunte, and hauing receiued fauour of your maiestie, not commonly emploied, your commaundement to tell you what I am, I will accomplish as well for my bounden dutie, wherewith I am tied to your maiestie, and to satisfie that which it pleaseth you to commaund me. Be it knowen therefore vnto your maiestie, that I am the sonne of two poore Almaines, who flying their owne countrie, withdrew themselves into the desarts of Sauonne, where (to beguile their hard fortune) they make coales, and sel them, to sustaine and relieue their miserable life: In which exercise I spent all my childhod, although it were to my great sorowe. For my hart thought (Sir) that a state so vile, was vnworthy of my coragious minde, which dailye aspired to greater thinges, and leauing my father and mother, I am come to your seruice, to learne chivalry and vse of armes, and (mine obedience saued to your maiestie) to finde a way to illustrate the base and obscure education, wherein my parentes haue brought me vp." The emperour seinge the courteous behauiour of the yonge man, by this wise aunswere, remembring the similitude of his face, which almoste resembled them both, suspected that he was the sonne of Alerane and his doughter Adelasia, whoe for feare to be knowen, made themselves citizens of those desertes, albeit that William had told him other names, and not the proper appellations of his father and mother. For which cause his hart began to throbbe, and felte a desire to see his doughter, and to cherishe her with like affection, as thoughe he had neuer conceiued offence and displeasure. He caused then to be called vnto him a gentleman, the nere kinsmanne of Alerane, to whom he said with merie countenance and ioyful cheere: " You do know as I thincke, the wrong and displeasure that your cosin Alerane hath done me, by the rape and robberie committed vpon the person of my doughter: you are not ignoraunt also of the reproch wherewith he hath defiled all your house, committed a felonie so abhominable in my courte, and againste mine owne person, which am his so-

ueraigne lorde. Notwithstanding, sith it is the force of loue, that made me forget him till this time, rather than desire of displeasure, I am very desirous to see him, and to accepte him for my sonne in lawe, and good kinsman, verie willing to aduaunce him to that estate in my house, which his degree and bloud do deserue. I tell you not this without speciall purpose. For this yong souldiour, which this daye so valiantly and with such dexteritie vanquished hys aduersary, by the consente of all men, which haue knowen me from my youth, doth represente so well my figure and lineamentes of face, which I had when I was of his age, as I am perswaded, and do stedfastly beleue, that he is my newew, the sonne of your cosin Alerane and my doughter Adelasia. And therefore I will haue you to goe with this yonge man, into the place where hee shall bring you, and to see them that be his parents, because I purpose to do them good, if they be other than those whom I take them. But if they be those two that I so greatly desire to see, doe mee so much pleasure as I may satisfie my hart with that contentation, swearing vnto you by the crowne of my empire, that I will do no worse to them, nor otherwise vse them, than mine own proper person." The gentleman hearing the louing and gentle tearmes of the emperour, saide vnto him: " Ah, sir, I render humble thankes vnto your maiestie, for the pitie that you haue, vpon our dishonored race and ligneage of Saxone, dedecorated and blemished throughe Alerane's trespassse against you. I pray to God to recompence it (we being vnable) and to giue you the ioye that you desire, and to mee the grace that I may do some agreeable seruice both in this and in all other things. I am readie (Sir) not onely to go seeke my cosin (if it be he that you thincke it is) to carie vnto him those beneficiall newes which your maiestie hath promised by word, but rather to render him into your hands, that you may take reuengement vpon him for the iniurie that he hath done to the whole empire." " No, no," said the emperour, " the desired time of reuenge is paste, and my mallice against Alerane hath vomited his gall. If in time paste I haue thristed to pursue the ruine and ouerthrowe of those two offenders, nowe I goe about to forsee and seeke their aduauncement and quiet, considering the longe penaunce they haue taken for their fault, and

the fruite that I see before mine eyes, which is such that it maye by the smell and fragrant odour thereof, supporte the weakenesse and debilitie of my olde yeares, and constraineth mee (by the vertue therof) to haue pittie vpon his parents, which (through their owne ouerthrowe) haue almost vtterly consumed me." Those words ended the good prince gaue euident testimonie of desire to see his onely doughter, by the liuely colour that rose in his face, and by certaine teares running downe along his hoare and frostie beard. Then he caused William to come before him, and commaunded him to conduct the gentleman to that part of the forest, where his father dwelled. Whereunto the yonge man readily and with all his harte obeyed. Thus the lord Gunforde (for so was Alerane's cosin called) accompanied with his litle cosin, and manye other gentlemen, went toward the place, wher the colliar princes remained. And when they were neere the craggie caue, the lodging of Alerane, the whole companie lighted of their horse, and espied him busie about the lading of his coales to sende to Ast. For the arriuall of the emperour to Sauonne, staied Alerane from going thither himselfe, by reason his conscience still grudged for his fault committed against him. Alerane seing this goodly companie, was abashed, as though hornes had sodenly started out of his head, and yet the sighte of his sonne richly furnished, and in the company of Gunfort his cosin, did more astonne him. For he suspected incontinentlye that hee was discouered, and that the emperour had sente for him to be reuenged of the faulte so long time paste committed. And as he had imagined diuers thinges vpon his harde fortune within his fancie, his sonne came to embrace him vpon his knees, and to kisse his hands, with an honest and humble reuerence, saying to Gunfort: "Sir, this is he of whom I told the emperour, and of him I toke my being: This is my father." All this while the good father embraced his sonne very hard, and weeping for extreme ioy, said vnto him: "Alas, my sonne, if thy comming be so happie vnto mee as it is ioyfull, if thy newes be good and prosperous, which thou bringest: thou doest reuiue thy father half deade, and from lamentable dispaire thou doest replenishe and fill him with suche hope, as one day shall be the staie of his age, and the recouery of his greatest losses."

The sonne not able to abide the discourse of his parents affaires, could not comprehend any thing at that pitiful meting : but stode stil so astonned, as though he had bin fallen from the clouds. Now during this time, that the father and the sonne thus welcomed one an other : Gunfort toke heede to al the countenance and gestures of Alerane. There was no part of the collier's bodie that he forgat to view : and yet remembring the voyce of his cosin, and seing a wound that he had in his face, was sure that it was hee. And then with his armes stretched forth he came to clepe Alerane about the necke, whom he made to loke redde with his warme teares, saying : " Ah : Alerane, the present torment now, but in time past, the pleasaunt rest, of oure race. What eclipse hath so longe obscured the shining sunne of thy valiaunt prowesse ? why haste thou concealed so longe time, thy place of retire from him, which desired so much thine aduancement ? Hast thou the harte to see the teares of thy cosin Gunfort running downe from his eies vppon thy necke, and his armes embracing thee with such loue and amitie, as he cannot receiue the like, except he be something moued by thee, in seing thy louing entertainment ? Wilt thou denie that, which I knowe, by a certaine instinct and naturall agreement, which is, that thou art Alerane the sonne of the duke of Saxone, and so renowned throughout all Germany ? Doest thou pretende (throughe thine owne misfortune so rooted in thy harte by liuinge in these wildernesses) to depriue thy sonne of the honor, which the heauens and his good fortune haue prepared for him ? Ah cruel and pitillesse father, to suffer thy progenie to be buried in the tombe of obliuion, with eternall reproche. O vnkinde kinsman toward thy kindred, of whom thou makest so small accompte, that wilt not vouchsafe to speake to thy cosin Gunfort, that is com hither for thy comfort, and the aduancement of thy familie." Alerane sore ashamed, as well for the remembrance of his auncient fault, as to see himselfe in so poore estate before the emperour's gallants, answered Gunfort, saying : " My lord and cosin, I beseech you to beleue, that want of desire to make my complaint vnto you, and lacke of curtesie to entertaine you, haue not made me to forget my dutie towards you, being as well my neare kinsman, as such one to whom I haue done wrong and very great in-

iurie, by offending the emperour. But you do knowe of what puissance the prickes of conscience bee, and with what worme she gnaweth the hart of them, which feelee themselues culpable of crime. I am (as you saide) the present missehap of our house, for the opinion that the emperour hath conceiued of my folly, and shal be the rest (if you wil do me so much pleasure to rid me out of this miserable life) both of you and of the minde of a father iustly displeased against his doughter, and the quiet of a prince offended with his subiecte: for I sweare vnto you by my fayth, that I neuer soe much desired life, as I nowe do couet death, for that I am assured, that I being deade, my poore companion and welbeloued wife, shall liue at her ease, enioyinge the presence and good grace of her father." "What meane you so to saye," answered Gunfort, "the emperour is so well pleased and appeased, as he hath sworne vnto mee to receiue you as his sonne in law, and my lady your wife as his deare beloued doughter, whom I pray you to cause to come before vs, or to signifie vnto vs where shee is, that I may doe reuerence vnto her as to my princesse and soueraigne ladie." William was all amased, and almost besides himselfe, hearinge this discourse, and thought hee was either in a dreame or els inchaunted, till that Alerane called his wife by her proper name, who was so appalled to heare the word of Adelasia, that her hart was sodainly attached with terror and feare, when she saw so great a company about her husband: and then her sonne came to doe his dutie, not as to his mother onely, but as to the doughter of an emperour, and the wife of a prince of Saxon. She againe embraced and kissed him, althoughe shee was surprised with feare and shame, and so moued with that sodaine sighte, as shee had much a doe to keepe herselfe from fainting and falling downe betweene the armes of her sonne, and thought that she had passed the place where Gunfort was, who going towarde her, after his reuerence and duetie done, made her vnderstand the charge hee had, and the good will of the emperour, which determind to receiue her againe with so good order and entertainment as might be deuised. Which earnest words made them to resolute vpon the proufe of fortune, and to credite the promises that Gunfort made them in the emperour's behalfe.

Thus they forsoke the caue, their coales and fornaces, to reenter their former delightes and pleasures. That nighte they lodged at a village not farre from the foreste, where they tarried certaine dayes, to make apparell for these straunge princes, and so wel as they could to adorne and furnishe Adelasia, (who being of the age almost of xxxiv. or xxxv. yeares, yet manifested some part of the perfection of that deuine beautie, and modest grauitie, which once made her marueilous and singuler aboue all them that liued in her dayes.) In the time that this iolye company had furnished and prepared themselues in readinesse, Gunfort sente a gentleman of that troupe toward the emperour, to aduertise him of the successe of their iourney. Wherof he was exceeding ioyful, and attended for the comming of his children, with purpose to entertaine them in louing and honorable wise. When all thinges were in readinesse and the traine of Adelasia in good order, according to the worthines of the house whereof she came, they rode toward Sauonne, which iourney seemed to them but a sport, for the pleasure mixte with compassion that eche man conceiued, in the discourse that Alerane made vpon his misfortunes and chaunces, as well in his iourneis, as of his abode and continuaunce in the desarts. Which William calling to remembraunce, praised God, and yelded him thanckes for that it had pleased him to inspire into his minde, the forsaking of his parentes, considering that the same onely fault, was the cause of their restitution, and of his aduauncement and glorie, being the sonne of such a father, and the neuue of so great a monarche. The fame of whose name made all men quake and tremble, and who then had commaunded all the troupe of the gentlemen of his court, to go and seeke the forlorne louers, so long time lost and vnknownen. To be short, their entrie into Sauonne, was so royal and triumphant, as if the emperor himself would haue receiued the honour of such estate, and pompe. Which he commaunded to be done as well for the ioy that he had recouered the thing, which he accompted lost, as to declare and acknowledge to euery wight, that vertue cannot make herselfe better knownen: than at that time, when the actions and deedes of great personages be semblable in raritie and excellencie to their nobilitie. For a prince is of greater dignitie and admiration, than he commonly

sheweth himselfe, which can neuer enter into the heade of the popular sort, who waie the affections of other with the balance of their owne rude and beastly fansies. As the Greeke poet Euripides in his tragedie of Medea, doth say:

*Ill luck and chaunce thou must of force endure,
Fortune's fickle stay needs thou must sustaine:
To grudge therat it booteth not at all,
Before it come the witty wise be sure:
By wisdom's lore, and counsell not in vaine,
To shun and eke auoyde. The whirling ball,
Of fortune's threates, the sage may well rebound
By good foresight, before it light on ground.*

The emperour then hauing forgotten, or wisely dissembling that which he could not amende, met his doughter and sonne in lawe at the palace gate, with so pleasaunt cheere and ioyfull countenance, as the like long time before he did not vse. Where Alerane and Adelasia being light of from their horse, came to kisse his handes (and both vpon their knees) began to frame an oration for excuse of their fault, and to pray pardon of his maiestie. The good prince rauished with ioy, and satisfied with repentaunce, stopped their mouthes with sweete kisses and hard embracings. "O happie ill time (said he) and sorowful ioy, which now bringeth to me a pleasure more great than euer was my heauy displeasure. From whence commeth this my pleasaunt ioye? O wel deuised flight, by the which I gaine that (by preseruinge my losse once made and committed) which I neuer had: if I may so say, considering the ornament of my house, and quietnesse of my life." And saying so, hee kissed and embraced his litle newewes, and was loth that Adelasia should make rehersall of other talke but of mirthe and pleasure. "For (said he) it sufficeth me that I haue ouerpassed and spent the greatest part of my life in heauinesse, vtterly vnwilling now to renewe olde sores and wounds." Thus the mariage begon, vnknownen and againste the emperour's will, was consummate and celebrated with great pompe and magnificence, by his owne commaundement, in the citie of Sauonne, where he made sir William knight, with his

owne hand. Many goodly factes at the tourney and tilte were done and atchieued, whereat William almost euery day bare away the prise and victorie, to the great pleasure of his father and contentacion of his graundfather, who then made him marques of Monferrat. To the seconde sonne of Alerane, he gaue the marquisat of Sauonne, with all the appurtenances and iurisdictions adioyning, of whom be descended the marqueses of Caretto. The third he made marques of Saluce, the race of whom is to this daye of good fame and nobilitie. Of the fourth sonne sprange out the original of the house of Cera. The fifte was marques of Incise, whose name and progeny liueth to this daye. The sixt sonne did gouerne Pouzon. The seuenth was established senior of Bosco, vnder the name and title of marques. And Alerane was made and constituted ouerseer of the goods and dominions of his children, and the emperour's lieutenaunt of his possessions which he had in Liguria. Thus the emperoure by moderatinge his passion vanquished himselfe, and gaue example to the posteritie to pursue the offence before it doe take roote: but when the thinge cannot be corrected, to vse modestie and mercie which maketh kinges to liue in peace, and their empire in assuraunce. Hauinge taken order with all his affayres in Italye, hee tooke leaue of his doughter and children, and retired into Almaine. And Alerane liued honourably amonges his people, was beloued of his father in lawe, and in good reputacion and fame, arriued to old yeares, still remembring that aduersitie oughte not to bring vs to dispaire, nor prosperitie to insolencie or ill behauiour, and contempt of thinges that seeme small and base, sithe there is nothing vnder the heauens that is stable and sure. For he that of late was great and made all men to stoupe before him, is become altogether such a one as though he had neuer beene, and the poore humble man aduaunced to that estate, from whence the firste did fall and was deposed, makeinge lawes sometimes for him, vnder whom he liued a subiect. And behold of what force the prouidence of God is, and what poise his balance doth containe, and how blame worthy they be that referre the effectes of that deuine counsel to the inconstant and mutable reuolucion of fortune that is blinde and vncertaine.

THE FORTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

The Duchesse of Sauoie, being the kinge of England's sister, was in the Duke her husbandes absence, vniustlye accused of adulterie, by a noble man, his Lieutenaunte: and shoulde haue beene put to death, if by the prowesse and valiaunt combate of Don Iohn di Mendoza, (a gentleman of Spaine) she had not beene deliuered. With a discourse of maruelous accidentes, touchinge the same, to the singuler praise and commendation of chaste and honest Ladies.

LOVE commonly is counted the greatest passion amongs all the most greuous, that ordinarily do assault the sprites of men, which after it hath once taken hold of anye gentle subiecte, followeth the nature of the corrupt humour, in those that haue a feauer, which taking his beginning at the harte, disperseth it selfe incurablye, through all the other sensible partes of the bodie: whereof this present historie giueth vs amplie to vnderstand, being no lesse maruelous than true. Those that haue read the aunciente histories and chronicles of Spaine, haue sene in diuers places the occasion of the cruell ennimitie which raigned by the space of XL. yeares, betweene the houses of Mendoza and Tolledo, families not onely righte noble and aunciente, but also most aboundante in riches, subiectes and seignories of all the whole realme. It happened one day that their armies being redie to ioyne in battaile, the lord Iohn of Mendoza chief of his armie, a man much commended by al histories, had a widow to his sister, a very deuoute lady, who after she vnderstode the heauie newes of that battaile, falling downe vppon her knees, praied God incessantly, that it would please him to reconcile the two families together, and to make an ende of so manye mischiefes. And as she vnderstode that they were in the chieftest of the conflicte, and that there were a greate number slaine on both partes, she made a vow to God, that if her brother returned victorious from that enterprise, she would make a voyage to Rome on foote. The ouerthrowe fell (after much bloudshead) vpon them of Tolledo. Mendoza brought away the victorie, with the lesse losse of his people. Wherof Isabell advertised, declared vnto her brother the vow that she had made.

Which seemed very straung vnto him, specially how she durst enterprise so longe a voyage on foote, and thoughte to turne her purpose, howbeit she was so importunate vpon him, as in the ende hee gaue her leaue, with charge that she should go wel accompanied and by small iourneis, for respect of her health. The ladie Isabell being departed from Spaine, hauing trauersed the mountaines Pirenees, passed by Fraunce, went ouer the Alpes, and came to Thurin, where the duke of Sauoye had then for wyfe, a sister of the kinge of Englande, whose was bruted to be the fairest creature of the weste partes of the world. For this cause the lady Isabel desired greatly in passing by to see her, to know whether truth did aunswere the great renowne of her beautie. Wherein she had fortune so fauourable, that entring into Thurin, she found the duchesse vpon her coche, goinge abroad to take the ayre of the fields: which the lady Isabell vnderstandinge, stayde to behold her, being by fortune at that present at the doore of her coche. And then with great admiration, considering the wonderfull beautie of that princesse, iudging her the chieftest of beautie of al those that she had euer seene, she spake somewhat loude in the Spanish tongue, to those of her companie, in this maner: "If God woulde haue permitted that my brother and this princesse might haue married together, euery man might well haue said, that there had bin mette the moste excellent couple for perfection of beautie, that were to be found in all Europa." And her wordes in deede were true: for the lord Mendoza was euen one of the fairest knightes that in his time was to be found in all Spaine. The duchesse whose vnderstoode the Spanishe tongue very well, passing forth, behelde all that companie: and fayninge as though shee had not vnderstande those woordes, thoughte that shee surely was some greate lady. Wherefore when shee was a litle paste her, she saide to one of her pages: "Marke whether that ladye and her companie go to their lodging, and say vnto her, that I desire her, (at my returne) to come and see mee at my castell." Which the page did. So the duchesse walking a long the riuer of Poo, mused vpon the words spoken by the Spanishe ladye, which made her not longe to tarie there, but toke the waye backe againe to her castel, where being arriued, she founde the lady Isabell,

who at the duchesse request, attended her with her company: and after dutiful reuerence, the duchesse with like gratulacion, receiued her very curteouslie, taking her a part, and demaunding her of what prouince of Spaine shee was, of what house, and what fortune had brought her into that place. And then the lady Isabell made her to vnderstand, from the beginnunge, the occasion of her longe voyage, and of what house she was: the duchesse vnderstanding her nobilitie, excused her selfe, for that shee had not done her that honour which shee deserved, imputinge the faulte vpon the ignoraunce of her estate. And after diuers other curteous communications, the duchesse pressed her to know whereunto the wordes tended that she had spoken of her, and of the beautie of her brother. The Spanishe lady somewhat abashed, saide vnto her: "Madame, if I had knowen so much of your skill in our tongue, as now I do, I would haue beene better aduised before I had soe exalted the beautye of my brother, whose praise had beene more commendable in the mouth of another: yet thus much I dare affirme, (without affection be it spoken,) as they that know him can report, that hee is one of the comliest gentlemen that Spaine hath breddé these twenty yeares. But of that which I haue saide touching your beautie, if I haue offended, muche a doe shall I haue to get the same pardoned, because I cannot repente mee, nor say otherwise, except I should speake contrary to truth. And that durste I enterprise to be verified by yourselfe, if it were possible that nature for one quarter of one houre onelye had transported into some other that which with right great wonder she sheweth to be in you." Wherunto the duchesse to the ende shee woulde seeme to excuse her prayse, answered with a litle bashfulnes, which beautified much her liuely colour, saying: "Madame if you continue in these termes, you will constrain me to thincke, that by chaunging of place you haue also chaunged your iudgemente: for I am one of the leaste to be commended for beautie of all this lande, or els I will beleeeue that you haue the beautie and valour of my lorde your brother soe printed in your minde, as all that whiche presenteth it selfe vnto you, hauinge anye apparaunce of beautie, you measure by the perfection of his." And at that instant the ladie Isabell, whose

thoughte that the duchesse had taken in euill parte the comparison that she had made betweene her brother and her, somewhat in choler and heate, said vnto her: "Madame, you shall pardon mee for that I haue so much forgotten my selfe, to presume to compare your beautie to his: whereof if he be to be commended, yet I maye well be blamed, being his sister, to publishe the same in an vnknown place: notwithstanding, I am wel assured, that when you shall speake, euén with his enemies, that yet besides his beautie, they will well assure him to be one of the gentlest and best conditioned gentlemen that liueth." The duchesse seeing her in these alterations, and so affected to the praise of her brother, toke great pleasure in her speach, and willingly woulde haue had her to passe further, had it not bin for feare to offende her, and to put her in a choler. And to thintent to turne her from that matter, she commaunded the table to be couered for supper, where she caused her to be serued honourably of all the most delicate and most exquisite meates that were possible to be gotten. Supper done, and the tables vncouered, after they had a little talked together, and that it was time to withdrawe themselves, the duchesse the more to honor her, would that she should lodge in her chamber with her, where the pilgrime (weariéd with the way) toke very good rest. But the duchesse pricked with the strange talke of the lady Isabell, hauing a hammer working in her head, could not sleepe. And had so wel the beauty of the vnknown knight graued in the bottom of her hart, as thinking to close her eyes, she thought that he flew continuallye before her like a certaine fansie or shadowe. In sorte, that to know further what he was, she would gladly haue made greater inquirie. Then sodainlye after a little shame and feare intermingled with a certaine womanhoode longe obserued by her, and therewithall the fidelitie which shee bare to the duke her husbände, presentinge it selfe before her, shee buried altogether her first counsell which died and tooke ende, euen so sone almoste as it was borne. And so tossed with an infinite number of diuers thoughtes passed the night, vntill the daye beginning to lighten the world with his burning lampe, constrained her to ryse. And then the lady Isabel, ready to departe, went to take leaue of the duchesse, who willingly

would haue wished that she had neuer sene her, for the newe flame that she felt at her harte. Neuerthelesse, dissembling her euill, not able to holde her any longer, made her to promise by othe, at her retourne from her voyage, to repasse by Thurin, and after she had made her a very liberall offer of her goodes, taking her leaue, she left her to the tuicion of God. Certaine dayes after the departing of the Spanish lady, the duchesse thinking to quenche this new fier, the same began further to flame, and the more that hope failed her, the more did desire encrease in her. And after an infinite number of sundrie cogitacions, loue got the victorie. And she resolued with her selfe in the ende, whatsoeuer might come thereof, to communicate her cause to one of her beloued damsels called Emilia, and to haue her aduise, in whom she wonted to repose her trust in all her secrete affaires, and causing her to be called for secretly, she said vnto her: "Emilia, I beleue that if thou hast taken any good heede to my auncient maner of behauour, euer since I departed from England, thou haste knowne me to be the very ramper and refuge of all afflicted persons. But now my destenies be turned contrarie. For I haue nowe more neede of counsel than any other liuing creature, and hauing no person about me worthy to be priuie of my misfortune, but thou, my first and last refuge is to thee alone: of whom I hope to receiue consolation in a matter whiche toucheth me no lesse than my life and honour." And then the duchesse declared vnto her priuily, how since the departing of the lady Isabell she had had no reste in her minde, and howe she was enamoured of a knight whome she neuer sawe, whose beautie and good grace had touched her so nere, as being altogether vnable any longer to resiste her mishap, she knew not to whom to haue recourse, but to the fidelitie of her counsell: adding thereunto for conclusion, that she loued him not dishonestly, or for hope she had to satisfie any lasciuious appetite, but onely to haue a sight of him: whiche (as shee thought) would bring vnto her such contentation, as ther by her grief should take ende. Emilia who euer loued her maistresse as she did her owne heart, had great compassion vpon her, when she vnderstode the light foundation of her straunge loue: neuerthelesse desiring to please her euen to the last point of her life,

she said vnto her: "Madame if it wil please you to recreate your selfe from these your sorrowes, and to respite me onely twoo dayes, I hope to provide by some good meanes that you shal shortly see him who vnderuedly doth worke you all this euill." The duchesse nourished with this hope, desired her effectually to thinke vpon it: promising vnto her, that if her woordes came to good effect, she would make her such recompence as she her self should confesse she had not done pleasure to an ingrate or vnthankfull woman. Emilia which had the brute to be one of the moste subtile and sharpe witted dames of all Thurin, slept not during the time of her prescription. But after she had searched an infinite number of meanes to come to that which she desired, there was one that semed moste expedient for that purpose, and of least perill aboue other. And her time of delaye expired, shee went to madame the duchesse, and sayd: "Madame, God knoweth howe many troubles my minde hath sustayned, and how much I haue striued with mine own conscience to satisfie your commaundement, neuerthelesse, after I had debated thinges so substantially as was possible, I coulde deuise nothing more worthy your content, than that whiche I wyll nowe declare vnto you, if it wyll please you to heare mee. Whiche to be short is, that for the execution of this our enterpryse, it behoueth you to fayne your selfe to be sicke, and to suffer your selfe to be trayned into suche maladies as there shall rather appeare in you token of death, than hope of lyfe. And being brought into such extremitie, you shall make a vowe (your health recouered) to go within a certayne time to Saint Iames on pilgrimage, which thing you may easely obtayne of the duke your husbände. And then may you make your voyage liberally with the ladye Isabell, who will passe this waye vpon her retourne, without discouering your affection vnto her, and wyll not fayle by reknowledging the curtesie that you haue vsed towardes her in these partes, to conduct you by her brother's house, wher you may see him at your ease, that maketh you to suffer this great torment. And I will aduertise you furthermore of one thing, which till this time I haue kept close, whiche is: that for as much as we two together cannot without great difficultie accomlishe our businesse, it hath seemed good vnto me to know of you, if

you would that a third persone shalbe called hereunto, who is so much at my commaundement as I dare comit my trust vnto him. It is maister Fraunces Appian the Millanor, your phisitian, who (to say the very truth vnto you) hath bene so affectioned to me, this yeare or two, as he hath not ceassed by al meanes possible, to wyne me (but to honest loue) for he pretendeth to marry me. And because that hetherto I haue made small accompt of him, and haue not vsed any fauour towards him, nor hitherto any good entertainment, I assure my self seing the great amitie that he beareth me, that if I did but fauorably behold him fve or sixe times with pleasaunt loekes, adding therunto a few kisses, he would hazard a thousand liues for my sake if he had them, to content me. And for as much as I know him to be a diligent man, learned, and of great reputation, and one that may stande vs to great stead in this busines, I thought good not to conceale or kepe from your knowledge my aduise herein." The duchesse vnderstanding all this pretie discourse, so apt for her affections (rauished with great ioye) embraced hard Emilia, and saide vnto her: " Emilia my deare friend, if thou diddest knowe in what wise I doe esteeme thee, and what I meane in time to come to bestowe vpon thee, I am well assured, albeit thou hast hitherto sufficiently shewed thy good will, yet thou wilt hereafter doe me greater pleasure promising thee, by the faithe of a prince, that if our enterprise doe well succede, I will not vse thee as a seruaunt, but as my kinswoman and the best beloued friend I haue. For I hold my selfe so satisfied with that thou hast sayd vnto me, as if fortune be on our side, I see no maner of impediment that may let our enterprise. Goe thy way then, and entertaine thy phisitian, as thou thinkest best, for it is very expedient that he be a partie, and for the rest let me alone: for neuer was there any lazard that better coulde dissemble his impotencye, than I knowe how to counterfait to be sicke." The duchesse being departed from Emilia, began to plaine her selfe bitterly, faining sometime to fele a certain paine in her stomack, sometime to haue a disease in her head, in such sort, as after diuers womanly plaintes (propre to those that feelee themselues sicke) she was in the end constrained to laye her self downe, and knew so well howe to

dissemble her sicknesse, as (after she had certaine dayes kept her bedde) there was much doubt of her health. And during this time Emilia had layed so many amorous baytes to feede her phisitian, that he which knewe very well the moste happy remedies for the body, could not now finde out any that was able to heale the maladie of his owne minde. Emilia hauing noseled maister Appian with amorous toyes, began to make him vnderstande the originall of the duchesse sicknesse, the effectes of her passion, the order that she had vsed during the furious course of the same: adding thereunto for conclusion, that if he would keepe the matter secrete, and ayde them with his counsell, she would by and by promise hym mariage by woordes, for the present tyme, and that from thenceforth she would neuer denie him any fauour or priuitie. That onely reserued which no man can honestly demaunde, till the mariage be solempnized in the face of the church. In witnesse wherof she kissed him with great affection. The phisitian more eased there withall, than if he had sene his Hippocrates or Galen, raysed againe from death, promised rather to lose his life than she should want his helpe. And for the better beginning of this enterprise, they wente presentlye to visite the duchesse: in whom they found her pulse so to beate, the tongue so charged, the stomacke so weakened by continuall suffocation of the matrice, that the pacient was in verie great perill of death. Whereunto every man did easely geue credite for the reputation and great experience of the phisitian: and maister Appian hauing commaunded all the chambre to be voyded, made the duchesse to vnderstande in fewe wordes, how it behoued her to gouerne her selfe. And the better to cloke her cause, he brought her at that instant a litle perfume, by receiuing the sauour wherof she should often times fal into certaine litle soundinges, and by vsing the perfume it would diminishe her colour for a time, and make her looke as though she had kepte her bed halfe a yeare before: neuerthelesse it should doe her no other displeasure, and that in three or foure dayes, with certaine other drugges, hee would restore her colour so freshe as euer it was. Whiche counsell the duchesse liked best of any thing in the world. And they three together played their partes so wel, as the common brute throughout all

the citie was, that the duchesse was in great daunger of death. The duke being aduertised of these thinges, caused al the phisicians of Thurin to assemble, to prouide for the health of the duchesse: who being come together, with the duke into her bedde chamber, a litle after she had receiued maister Appian's perfumes: and seing her to sowne diuers times before them, were in great dispaire of her health. And after they had somewhat debated the matter with maister Appian, not knowing wherupon to resolute, they said vnto the duke, that it behoued him to prouide for her soule, for that they saw in her the ordinarie tokens and messangers of death. The poore duke being sorowfull beyond measure, for that he loued the duchesse entierly, sent for the suffragane of the bishop of Thurin, a man of very holy life, to thintent he might geue her ghostly counsell. To whom she confessed her self with a voyce so feeble, that it seemed to be more than halfe dead. Her talke was not long, but yet she made him beleue that nature failed her, and that by litle and litle she drewe towardes her ende: desiring him to haue her and her poore soule in remembraunce when he made his orisons and praiers. The suffragan being gone, the duke and others, with a great number of gentlemen and ladies, went into the chamber. But she began then to enter into so great rauiing, as euery body was afeard of her. And after that she had tossed her self in her bed like a senselesse creature, her speach fayled her. Wherat those present, stricken with no smal wonder, thinking the soule would straight wayes haue departed the body, some of them cried vpon her, Madame remember Iesus, som other S. Barbara. But wilie Emilia more priuie of her counsell than the rest, taking her tenderly by the arme, cried vpon her with a loude voice: "Madame call vpon S. Iames, who hath so often succoured you in youre aduersities." And with that the duchesse awaked as it wer out of a heauy sleepe, and rowling her eyes to and fro, with a straunge trembling of all her members, began to pronounce with an interrupted voyce: "O glorious apostle, in whome from my tender youth, I haue euer had my stedfast trust and hope, be now mine intercessor in this cruel assault of death, to Iesus Christ. And I make a vowe nowe vnto thee, that if I may recouer health, I will my self in person, go honor thy sacred body,

in the proper place where it reposeth." And hauing ended her fayned prayer, she counterfaieted a sleepe, and so continued the space of twoo or three houres, whiche caused all the companie to withdrawe themselues, excepte the poore duke, who would not depart from her vntil she waked, and in the meane time ceased not to praye to God for the health of his loyall spouse. After shee had so well plaied this pageaunt by the space of an houre or twoo, faining then to awake, she began to stretche forth her armes and legges with suche force, as whosoener had heard the noyse, would easely haue iudged that she had bene deliuered from some great torment. And beholding the duke her husband, with a pitifull eye (who had leaned his head nere vnto her's in the bed) she cast her stretched armes negligently vpon his neck, and kissing him sayd: "Now may I safely kisse you my lorde, that within these three houres was in such pitifull plight, as I thought my self for euer deprivied of that benefit. Thankes be geuen to God and that good sainct to whom I made my vow I am presently so wel eased, as if I fele myself no worse, I will yet deteine you (husband) a while from an other mariage." But the poore duke altogether rauished with ioy, hauing his white beard all tempered with teares, knew not what answere to make, but behelde her with such admiration, as he seemed to be besides himself. And in the meane time certain which wer at the dore, hearing them speake, entred the chamber, who finding the duchesse somewhat better then she was, published her recouerie incontinently throw al the citie, wherof the citizens being aduertised (because they loued her dearly) made processions and other thankesgeuing to God, as in cases like are accustomed. Within a while after, the duchesse began by litle and litle to taste her meates, and to vse suche diet as shee recouered her former health. Except the newe plague which pynched her tender harte for the lorde Mendozza, whiche she could not cure, but by the presence of him that bare the oyntment boxe for that sore. And so long she continued in the amorous thoughtes, till the lady Isabell retourned from her pilgrimage, who came to the castell according to her promise. And after friendly gretinges one of an other, the duchesse made her to vnderstande how since her departure she had neuer almost

commen out of her bed, for that she had bene afflicted with a moste grievous sicknesse. Neuerthelesse by the helpe of God, and the intercession of good S. Iames (to whom she had vowed her selfe) she had recouered health. And if she could obtaine leaue of the duke her husband, she would thinke her self happy to make a voyage thither in her companie. Which the Spanishe lady persnaded by all meanes possible, shewing vnto her many commodities, she should finde in Spaine, and the honorable company of gentlemen and ladies, who at her arriual there (if it would please her to doe them so muche honor as to visite them in passing by) would leaue nothing vndone for the best manner of entertainment that possibly might be deuised. And by this meane the ladye Isabell thought to pricke her forward, who was in dede but to quicke of the spurre already, and thinking euery houre vii. determined one morning thereof to moue the duke her husbände, to whom she sayd: "My lorde, I beleue that you doe sufficiently well remember my trouble paste, and the extreme martyrdome that I suffred in my late sicknesse, and namely of the vowe whiche I made for recouery of my health. Nowe finding my selfe whole and strong, my desire is that with your licence I might accomlishe my voyage, specially with so good opportunitie: for the noble woman of Spayne of whome I haue heretofore told you, is returned, and it should be a great ease to vs both to goe in companie together. And for so much as it is a matter of necessitie, and that earely or late, I must aduenture to paye my vowed debte, it is best both for my commoditie and also for my honour, to goe in her companie." Whereunto the good duke did willingly accorde: who neuer had any manner of suspicion that sutch a treason was lodged in the harte of so great a princesse. And hauing giuen order for all things requisite for her departing, she tooke a certaine number of gentlemen and damsels, amongst which, maister Appian and Emilia were not forgotten, and being all apparelled in pilgrimes weedes, by long trauaile and weary iourneis, after they had passed the cold Alpes, they came into the countie of Rossilion, and entered into Spayne: and then the duchesse feling her selfe to approche the place where her hart of long tyme had taken hold, de-

sired the lady Isabell and her company earnestly, not to make it knowen to any persone what she was. And so traueiling by small iourneyes, and deuising of diuerse matters, they arriued within two litle dayes iourney to the place where the lorde of Mendoza kept his ordinarie housholde. For which cause the Spanishe lady entreated the duchesse not to be offended, if she sent some one of her men before to geue aduertisement of their comming, which the duchesse graunted. And the messenger finding the lord of Mendoza readie to receiue them, and hauing done him to vnderstand of the coming of the duchesse, of the firste talke betwene her and his syster, of the great entertainment that she had geuen them, of the singuler beautie with the which she was adorned: he was not so grosse but that he knewe by and by, that the duchesse at those yeares, had not bene so liberall of her labour, to make such a voiage one foote, without some other respect: and dissembling what he thought, caused thirty or fortie of his gentlemen incontinently to make them ready. To whome making as though hee would goe hunte the hare, he went to meete the duchesse: and hauing discovered them a farre of in a fielde, the lady Isabell did forthwith knowe them. Who aduertised the duchesse that he which ridde vppon the whyte ienet of Spayne, was the lorde of Mendoza her brother, and that the other were his seruauntes. The prince then after he had made his horse to vaute three or foure times aloft in the ayre, with an excellent grace and marueilous dexteritie lighted from his horse, and kissing her hand, sayd vnto her: "Madame, I beleue that if the wandering knightes of olde tyme, who haue eternized their memorie, by an infinite nombre of renowmed victories, had had so muche good lucke, as many tymes in their aduentures to meete with such pilgrimes as you be, they woulde willinglye haue abandoned the launce and murrion, to take the staffe and scrippe." The duchesse then beyng comparable with anye ladye of her tyme, for her education and comely talke, assayled with ioye, feare, and shame, that no lacke of dutie might be founde in her, sayde vnto hym: "And in deede my lorde like as if the knightes of whom you speake, had tasted of some good hap (as you terme it) by meting with such pilgrimes: so also we hope that the saint to whome we be

vowed, in the honor of whom we haue enterprised this perillous voyage, will receiue vs in good parte: otherwyse our payne were altogether loste, and our iourney euil imployed." And after they had geuen this first amorous atteint, the lord of Mendoza taking her by the arme, conducted her vnto his castell, deuising of pleasure matters. And he was greatlye astonned, to see so rare a beautie, as appeared in the princesse: whiche neither the wearinesse of the waye, nor the parching beames of the sunne, coulde in any wyse so appaire, but that there rested ynough, to drawe vnto her the very hartes of the moste colde and frosen men of the world. And albeit the lorde of Mendoza tooke great pleasure and admiration in beholding her, yet was it nothing in respect of the duchesse: who after she had aduised and well marked the beautie, excellency, and other good giftes of grace, in the lorde of Mendoza, she confessed that al that which she had heard of his sister, was but a dreame in comparison of the proufe, which discovered it selfe vpon the first viewe: seeming vnto her by good iudgement, that all the beauties of the worlde were but paintinges, in respect of the perfection of that whiche shee sawe with her eyes. Wherin she was not deceiued, albeit that her feruent loue might haue bewitched her senses. For all the histories in Latine, Spanishe, and Italien, the which make mention of Mendoza, geue vnto him the firste place in beautie of all the princes and lordes that were in his tyme. The poore duchesse, after she had manifested by outwarde gestures, and countenaunces, to the lord of Mendoza, that which was in the inward part of her harte, without receiuing the full satisfaction of his sight, whiche she desired, determined (hauing sojourned three dayes in his castell) to departe the nexte morning (vnwares to the knight), to performe her voyage. And so soone as the light of the daye began to appeare, she went to the chamber of the lady Isabell, whom she thanked affectuously, aswell for her good companye, as for the great courtesie and humanitie, that she had receiued in her house. And hauing taken leaue of her, departed with her traine. The knight Mendoza, about an houre or two after her departure, aduertised thereof, was greatly troubled, what the matter might be that she was gone without taking leaue of him. And after that he had a

little thought therupon, he easely perceiued, that all the fault thereof was in him selfe: and that this great princesse had abandoned her countrie, of purpose by all iudgement to visite him, and that he had shewed himself very slacke for her satisfaction, in that he had not offred her his seruice: wherat being iustly greued, she did not vouchsafe to geue him a farewell. And so accusing himselfe, he determined to followe after her, accompanied onely with two pages. And beyng on horsebacke, it was not long before hee espied her in the hyghe waye to Saint Iames, where lighting, hee walked twoo myles with her, reasonyng the matter without intermission: desiring her amonges other thynges, to let hym vnderstand what displeasure shee had conceiued in his house, that caused her so spedy and secret a departure: adding thereunto, that if her pleasure were, he would accompanie her to the place whether she was vowed, and would also reconduct her in his owne persone to Thurin, in so honourable sorte, as she should finde cause to be contented. Then passing further, with sighes sayd vnto her: "Madame, fortune had done me a great benefite, if when my sister made her vowe to goe to Rome, I had lost the battaile against mine enemies, and that her vowe had bene without effect. For it might haue bene that I should haue remained quiet by the losse of some of my people. But alas, I fele now, since your comming into this countrie, a battaile so cruel, and assault so furious in my harte, as not being able any longer to resiste it, I finde my selfe vanquished, and caught captiue, in such sort as I know not to whom to complain, but to you, which is the motion of all my disquietnesse: and yet, which griueth me most, you dissemble as though you did not vnderstand it. And to bring me to my last end, you are departed this day out of my house, not daining to see me, or to appease me with one farewell, which hath so further inflamed my passion, as I die a thousand times a day. Beseching you for the time to come, to entreate me more fauourably, or you shall see me, in that state, wherein you would be loth to see your enemy: which is, most cruel death." And in dede, he shewed sufficiently, how great the grief was that pressed him, and how well the passion that he felt, was agreable to the wordes which he spake: for in pronouncing his wordes he sighed so in his tale, and

changed his colour so often, and had his face so besprent with teares, as it semed his soule attached with superfluous sorrowe, would at that very instant haue abandoned his bodye. Which the princesse perceiuinge, touching at the quicke the very spring of all his euill, sayd vnto him: "Seignior Mendoza, I know not what you wold that I should do more for you, nor for what occasion you do pretende, that I should be the cause of your death: for if the occasion thereof should happen through my default, my life by strengthe or abilitie, could not endure one houre after, for the sorrowe I should conceiue therof. Thinke me to be yours, and be not offended, I besech you, if openly I doe no longer talke with you: for I would not to winne al the goodes in the world, that any of this traine which doth accompany me, should perceiue any one sparke of the great kindled fire, wherein my hart burneth day and night for you, being assured that if you had felt one houre of my payne, in place to accuse me of crueltie, your self complaining, wold pitie the grieve whiche I haue sustained for your long absence: for without the continual presence of your persone, representing it selfe in the eyes of mine vnderstanding, with a firme hope once to haue seen you: it had bene impossible for me, to resist the long and hard assaulte, wherwith loue hath euery houre assailed me. But one thing I must nedes confesse vnto you, that by reason of the cold welcome which you made me in the beginning, I thought it proceded of some euill opinion conceiued of me or peraduenture that you had thought me ouer liberall of mine honour, to haue left the countrie where I commaunde, to render my self subiect to your good grace, which caused me without leaue to depart your house. But now that I do know by your countenance and teares, the contrarie, I acknowledge my fault, and desire you to forget it. With full promise that vpon my retourne from my voiage of S. Iames, I will make you amendes, in the very same place, wher I committed the fault: and remaining your prisoner for a certaine time, I wil not depart from you, vntill I have satisfied, by sufficient penance the greatnes of my trespas. In the meane time you shal content your self with my good will: and without passing any further retorne againe home to your castell, for feare least some suspicious persone in my company should con-

ceiue that in me, which all the dayes of my life I neuer gaue occasion so much as once to thinke." To whome the lorde of Mendoza obeied, more to content her than otherwise, for hee had the beauties and good behaiours of the princesse, so imprinted in the moste pleasaunt place of his harte, as he would haue desired neuer to haue departed her companie. But like as they determined iocundly, to imploy and satisfie their desire, at her retorne from her voyage, euen so fortune in the meane while did beset the same, and so fully brake the threde of their enterprises, as the issue had not so good successe, as was their prefixed hope. Now leaue we the duchesse to perfourme her voyage, and the lord of Mendoza to entertain his amorous passions, and let vs digresse to the duke, who about x. or xii. dayes after the duchesse his wife was departed, began to fele her absence, which not being able to susteine for the great loue he bare vnto her, and specially knowing the great fault that he had committed (being the sister of a king and wife of such a prince) so to let her go like an vnfeathered shaft, in so long a voyage: determined with him selfe (for feare least if any misfortune happening vnto her, the same should touch his honour) to call together his counsel, and to prouide some remedie. The counsel assembled, and the cause proponed, euerie of them told the duke that he had ouer lightly consented to the will of the duchesse, and that if she should chaunce to incurre any inconuenience, al men would impute it to his reproch wherof they would haue aduertised him at the beginning, sauing for feare they had to displease him: adding for conclusion, that it was most expedient the duke should put himselfe on the sea to goe seeke her in Galisia. Which he did, and imbarcked him self with a great companie of gentlemen, to whome the winde was so fauourable, as he ariued at S. Iames before her: and hauing made enquirie for her, vnderstode she was not come. Neuerthesse he was aduertised by certaine pilgrims, that it could not be long before she would be there, for that they had left her not paste three or foure dayes iourney from thence, traueiling with her trayne, by small iourneis: wherof the duke was excedding glad, and sent certaine of his gentlemen to mete her vpon the way, as she came, who rode not farre before

they met the duchesse with her companie, and did her to vnderstand of the duke's arriual, and of the cause of his comming from Thurin. Which tidings was not very ioyfull to her, and by her will would haue wished that he had not taken so much paynes: neuerthelesse, preferring honor before affection, she made the more haste to see him, and at her arriual seemed to bee glad of his comming, and to lament the payne that he had taken by committing himselfe in so many daungers for her sake. Afterwardes they entred into the churche with great deuotion, where when the duchesse had made certaine particuler praiers, shee began to perceiue that God had withstood her lasciuious wil, and pitying the good duke her husband, would not permit him to be deceiued in suche disloyall sort, repentantly bewayling her forepassed faulte. And feling herself pressed euen at the very soule with a certaine remorse of conscience, she was so victorious ouer her affections, as she determined wholly to forget Mendoza and his beautie: praying God neuerthelesse that it had pleased him to graunt her the grace so well to dispose her matters, that her affections had not exceded the bondes of honor: determining from thenceforth, not onely to put Mendoza in vtter obliuion, but also for euer clerely to cut of his amorous practise, and therefore would not so much as bid him once farewell, nor yet to let him in any wise vnderstand those newes. And so settled in this deliberation, solicited her husband very instantly to departe, whiche he did, and all thinges prepared to the sea, they toke againe their course to Thurin, and had the wynde so prosperous, as from thence in fewe dayes after, they arriued at Marsellis: and wearye of the seas, he caused horses to be prepared to ryde from thence to Thurin by land, wher he and his wife liued together in right great ioy and amitie. The lorde of Mendoza greatly payned with the long absence of the duchesse, sent a gentleman of purpose to Galisia, to know the cause of her long tarying. Who brought certain newes that the duke was comen in persone to fetch his wife, and that he had caried her awaye with him by sea: wherewithal he was marueilously out of pacience, determining neuerthelesse one daye when his affaires were in good order, to go visite her at Thurin. During the time that these thinges

remained in this estate, as well of the one side, as of the other: the Almaines prepared a great army, and entred into Fraunce, where they wasted and burned al the countrey as they passed. The king being aduertised hereof, sent for the duke of Sauoie, to goe mete them with the men of armes of Fraunce. But before his departure from Thurin, he lefte for his lieutenant generall, the earle of Pancalier, by the aduise and counsell of whome he intended that all the affaires of the duchie should be ruled and gouerned in his absence, and that he should in so ample wyse be honoured and obeyed, as his owne persone. This earle of Pancalier was a nobleman, verie prudent in his doinges, and knewe right well howe to gouerne the common wealth, who seing that hee had the whole countrie at his commaundement, and hym selfe many tymes in presence of the duchesse, viewing her so fayre and comelie, could not so well rule his affections, but that by litle and litle he fell into loue with her, in such wyse as hee forgat hym selfe, makyng nō conscience to offer his seruice vnto her. But the princesse who was resoluēd to lyue a good woman, abhorred all his lasciuious orations, requiring hym to bee better aduysed another tyme, before he presumed to vtter sutch talke, excepte to sutch that were his equals. Telling hym that a man ought not to bee so vnshamefast to offer his seruice to anye great ladie, or to make other sute vnto her, before hee hadde fyrste knowen by her gesture or woordes, some lykelyhoode of loue: which he could not deeme in her, for so much as she neither to him or to any other had euer, (til that day in all her life) shewed such fauour, as other suspicion could be conceiued, but that which was conuenable and meete for her honour. Which when the countie of Pancalier vnderstoode, he toke his leaue of her, ashamed of that he had done. But he folowing the custome of louers, not thinking himselfe cast of for the first refuse, eftsones renewed his requestes: and framing a louing stile, besought her to haue pitie vppon him, and to respect the greatnesse of his passion: and that he could not prolonge his life without the fauour of her good grace, who onely was the very remedie of his euill. The duchesse pestred with such like talke, saide vnto him: "Sir Countie, me thinke you ought to haue satisfied your selfe with my first deniall, without further

continuance in the pursuing of your rashe enterprise. Haue you forgotten the place that you keepe, and the honour whereunto my lorde the duke my husband hath exalted you? Is this nowe the loyall reward that you render vnto him for creating you his lieutenant ouer all his landes and seigniories, to demaund the preheminence of his bedde? Assure your selfe for final warning, that if euer hereafter you shal againe fall into like error, I sweare vnto you by the faith of a princesse, that I will make you to be chastised in suche sort, as al semblable traytors and disloyal seruants shal take example." The earle seing himselfe refused, and thus rebuked, and in doubt that the princesse woulde make her husbande to vnderstande his enterprise vpon his retourne, chaunging his greate loue into hatred more then mortall, determined whatsoeuer should come thereof, to inuente all meanes possible, vtterly to destroye the duchesse. And after that he fansied diuers thinges in minde, he deuised (by the instinct of the deuil) to cause one of his nephewes, being of the age of xviii. or twentie yeares, which was his heire apparant, for that he had no children, and was one of the fayrest and best condicioned gentlemen of all Thurin, to sort that deuilish attempt to purpose. And finding opportunitie, one daye hee saide to the yonge man (that depended wholly vpon him) these words. "Nephew, thou knowest that all the hope of living thou hast in this world resteth in me alone, of whom I make so good accompte as of my childe. And for that it pleased God to giue me no children, I haue constituted and ordeined thee my sole and onely heyre with ful hope that from henceforth thou wilt dutifully acknowledge thy selfe most bounde vnto mee, and therefore obedient in all thinges which I shal commaunde thee, specially in that which may be most for thine aduauncement. The duke as thou knowest, is absent, olde, and crooked, and at all houres in the mercy of death throughe the daungers of the warres. Nowe if he should chaunce to die, my desire is to mary thee with some great lady: yea and if it were possible with the duchesse her selfe, which God knoweth what profite it would bringe both to thee and thy frendes, and in my iudgement an easie matter to compassse, if thou wilt dispose thy selfe after my counsell, or at leaste wise, if thou canst not come to the title of husband, thou maiest

not faile to be receiued as her frend. Thou art a comly gentleman, and in good fauour with the duchesse, as I haue oftentimes perceiued by her communication, albeit that holdinge fast the bridle of her honor, shee hath been afraid hetherto to open herselfe vnto thee. Spare not my goods, make thy selfe braue and gallant from henceforth whatsoeuer it coste, and be dilligente to please her in all that thou maiest, and time shall make thee know that which thy tender yeares hath hitherto hidden from thee." The poore yonge man giuinge faith to the vnfaithfull inuentions of his vncke (whom hee counted as his father) began oft to frequent the presence of the duchesse, and shamefastlye to sollicite her by lookes and other offices of humanitie, as nature had taught him, continuing that order the space of a moneth. Which by the duchesse wel viewed and marked, she was diligent for her part to accept the honest and affectionate seruice which the yong man daile did vnto her, and shewed vnto him likewise a certaine more curteous fauour than to the rest of the pages, as wel for the birth and beautie wherewithal nature had enriched him, as for that she saw him enclined to do her better seruice than the rest, not thinking of any dishonest appetite in the yong man, nor the malice of his vncke, who conceiued none other felicitie but in reuenge of the duchesse, his ennemie, and not able to beare the cruel mallice rooted in his harte, determined to play double or quit. And callinge his nephew before him he said vnto him: "My childe, I do perceiue and see that thou art one of the most happiest gentlemen of al Europe, if thou knewest how to folow thine owne good luck. For the duchesse not onely is amorous of thee, but also consumeth for the earnest loue shee beareth thee. But as thou knowest women be shamefast and woulde be sued vnto in secrete, and do delight to be deceiued of men, to thend it might seeme how with deceit or force they were constrained to yeld to that which of their own minds they would willingly offer, were it not for a litle shamefastnes that doth withdrawe them. And thereof assure thy selfe, for I haue oftentimes experimented the same, to my great good lucke. Wherefore credite my counsel, and follow mine aduise. And thou thy selfe shalt confesse vnto mee, before to morrow at this time, that thou art the happiest man of the world. I will, then, that this night when thou seest conuenient time, thou shalt

conueye thy selfe secretlye into the chamber of the duchesse, and there hide thy selfe vnder her bedde, for feare of being espied : where thou shalt remaine vntil an houre after midnight, when all men be in the depth of their sleepe. And when thou perceiuest euery man at rest, thou shalte closely rise, and approching the duchesse bed, thou shalt tell what thou art, and I am sure for the earnest loue she beareth thee, and for the long absence of her husband, she wil curteouslie receiue thee betwene her armes, and feast thee with such delights as amorous folke doe embrace their louers." The simple yong man giuing faith to the words of his vncle that was honoured as a king (thinking perhaps that it proceeded by the perswasion of the duchesse) followed his commaundement, and obeied whollie his traiterous and abhominable hest. Who (oportunitie founde) accomplished from pointe to point, that which his cruel vncle had commaunded. And a litle before midnight, fearing least his treason shoulde be discovered, toke with him three counsellors, and certaine other of the garde of the castell. Whereunto as lieutenaunt to the duke, he might both enter and issue at al times when he list, and not opening the cause of his intent, went straight to the portall of the duchesse chamber, and knockinge at the dore, said that the duke was come. Which being opened, hee entred in with a number of lightes, accompanied with the garde, hauinge a rapier readye drawn in his hande, like a furious man besides himselfe, began to looke rounde about, and vnder the bedde of the duchesse : from whence he caused his owne proper nephew to be drawne. To whom, without geuing him leasure to speake, for feare lest his malice should be discovered, he saide : " O detestable villaine thou shalt die." And therewithall he thruste the rapier into him, to the hard hiltes, and doubling another blowe to make him faile of his speache, hee pearced his throte, so fiercely, as the poore innocente after he had a little staggered, fell downe deade to the grounde. When he had put vp his rapier, he turned towards the counsellors, and saide vnto them : " My frends, this is not the first time that I haue espied the lasciuious and dishonest loue betweene this my lecherous nephew and the duchesse, whom I haue caused to die to honourably in respect of his desert, for by the very rigor of the law, he deserued to haue bin burnt quick, or els to be torne in peeces with foure horses. But my ladie

the duchesse I meane not to punishe, or to prouide chastisement for her: For you be not ignoraunt, that the auncient custome of Lombardie and Sauoye requireth that euery woman taken in adulterie, shal be burned aliue, if within a yeare and a day she finde not a champion to fight the combate for her innocencie. But for the bounden duetie that I beare to my lord the duke, and for respect of the estate which he hath committed to my charge, I will to-morrow dispatch a poaste, to make him vnderstande the whole accident as it is come to passe. And the duchesse shall remaine in this chamber, with certaine of her maids, vnder sure keeping and safegarde." All this time the duchesse who had both iudgemente and spirite so good as any princesse that raigned in her time, suspected by and by the treason of the earle. And with a pitifull eye beholding the dead body of her page, fetching a deepe sighe, cried out: "Oh, innocent soule: which sometime gauest life to this bodye that nowe is but earth, thou art nowe in place where thou seest clearelye the iniquitie of the murderer, that latelye did put thee to death." And hauing made an ende of this exclamation with her armes a crosse, shee remained as in a sowne with out mouing either hande or foote. And after she had continued a while in that state, shee desired the counsellors to cause the bodye to be buried, and to restore it to the earth whereof it had the first creation. "For (quoth she) it hath not deserued to be tied to the gibet, and to be foode for birds of the ayre." Which they graunted not without a certaine greuous suspicion betweene her and the page. For so muche as she excused not herselfe, but the innocencie of him, without speaking any worde of her owne particular iustification. This pitifull aduenture was out of hande published through all the citie, with so great sorrow and murmure of the people, as it seemed the enemies had sacked the towne. For there was not one, from the very least to the greateste of al, but did both loue and reuerence the duchesse, in such sort as it seemed vnto them, that this misfortune was fallen vpon euery one of their children. The earle of Panca-lier did nothing all that day, but dispatch the poastes. And hauing caused all the whole matter to be registred as it was seen to be done, he commaunded the counsellors, and them of the garde, to subscribe his letters. And all the matter being put in order he

sent away two currors with diligence, the one into Englande to aduertise the king her brother, and the other to the duke: who being arriued, ech man in his place, presented their charges. Whereunto both the brother and the husband gaue full credite without any manner of difficultie: perswaded principally thereunto by the death of the nephew: who (as it was very likely) had not been put to death by his owne vnkle, and of whom hee was also the very heire, without his most greuous fault, praysinge greatly the fidelitie of the earle, that had not pardoned his owne proper bloud, to conserue his duty and honour to his soueraigne lorde. And it was concluded betweene them, by deliberate aduise and counsaile, as well of those of the king of England, as by a great number of learned men of Fraunce, whom the French kinge made to assemble for that respect in fauour of the duke, that the custome should be so inuiolably kepte, as if the duchesse were the most simple damsell of all the countrie: to the ende that in time to come, greate lordes and ladyes which be as it were lampes to giue lighte to others, might take example. And that from thenceforth they should not suffer their vertues to be obscured by the clouds of such execrable vices. The king of England to gratifie the earle of Pancalier: who (in his iudgement) had shewed himselfe right noble in this act, sent him an excellent harnesse, with a sword of the self same trampe by the currou, with letters of aunswere written with his owne hand, how he vnderstode the maner of his proceedings. And the messenger vsed such diligence, as within few daies he arriued at Thurin. Shortly after that the king of England had sent backe the currou, the duke of Sauoie retorned his, whom he staid so much the longer, because the matter touched him most neere: for he would that the matter should be debated by most graue and deliberate counsell. And when he had resolued what to do, he wrote to the counsellors and other magistrates of Thurin, aboue al things to haue respecte that the custome should be inuiolably obserued, and that they should not in any case fauour the adultery of his wife, vpon paine of death. Then in particuler, hee wrote his letters to the earle, whereby he did greatly allow his fidelitie, for the which he hoped to make him suche recompence, as both he and his should taste therof during their liues. The currou of the duke arriued,

and the matter proponed in counsell, it was iudged, that (followinge the auncient custome) a pillar of marble should be placed in the fieldes neere Thurin : which is betweene the bridge of the riuier Poo and the citie, wherupon should be written the accusation of the earle of Pancalier against the duchesse, which the duchesse vnderstanding (hauing none other companie but Emilia, and a yong damsell) dispoiled herselfe of her silken garmentes, and did put on mourninge weede, martired with an infinite number of sondrie tormentes, seing herselfe abandoned of al worldly succour, made her complaints to God : beseeching him with teares to be protector of her innocencie. Emilia who vnderstode by her that shee was vniustlie accused, and seing the imminent perill that was prepared for her, determined by her accustomed prudence to provide therfore. And after she had a litle comforted her she saide vnto her : " Madame, the case so requireth that now you must not consume time in teares and other womanish plaints, which can nothinge diminishe your euill. It seemes most expediente vnto mee, that you fortifie your selfe againste your ennemye, and finde some meane to sende maister Appian in poaste to the duke of Mendoza, one of the best renowned in prowesse of all the knightes in Spaine, whose beinge aduertised of your misfortune, wyll prouide so well for your affaires, (that your honour beinge recouered) your life shall remaine assured. Wherefore if you will followe mine aduise, you shall write him an earnest letter (as you know right wel how to indite) which Appian shal present on your behalfe. For if you follow not this counsel, I know none els (as the world goeth now) that will hazarde his life vnder the condicion of so straunge a lotte as yours is, specially hauing respect to the renownme and magnanimitie of the earle, who as you know, is in reputation to be one of the most valiaunt men and most happy in armes that is in all Sauoie or Lombardie." " My deare frende (quoth the duchesse) doe what thou wilt : for I am so resolved and confirmed in my sorowe, as I haue no care either of death or life, no more than if I had neuer been borne. For neither in the one nor in the other, can I forsee anye remedie for mine honour alreadie lost." " Madame (quoth Emilia) let vs for this time leaue the care of honour in the hands of God, who knoweth

th howe to keepe it and restore it, as shall seeme good vnto
n. And let vs giue order for our parte that there be no want
diligence, for feare of being ouertaken." And hauing made
ende of her tale, shee gaue her incke and paper, sayinge vnto
r: "Now madame I shall see at this pinche, if your harte will
ue you at a neede or no." The duchesse withdrew her selfe a
t, and after she had longe discoursed in her minde of that
ich was paste betweene the knight and her, she wrote vnto
a as followeth: "My lord Mendoza, I do not write these
ters vnto you, vppon any hope to be deliuered by your meane
m the pounaunt pricke of fierce death which doth now besiege
, knowing death alwayes to be the true port and sure refuge of
afflicted persons. For since that God willeth it, nature per-
teth it, and my heauie fortune consenteth to it, I will receiue
with righte good will, knowinge that the graue is none other
a strong rampier and impregnable castel, wherein we close our
ies against the assaults of life, and the furious stormes of for-
e. It is farre better (as appeareth manifestly by me) with eyes
t to waite in graue, than longer to experimete life (the eyes
nge open) liuing with so many troubles vpon earth. But glad-
woulde I bringe to remembraunce, and set before your eyes
v sometime I abandoned the place which was no lesse deare
o me than mine owne country where I was borne, and deli-
elye nourished in honor and delightes, to extende my selfe into
infinite number of perills, contrarye to the duetie of those that
of mine estate, losinge the name of a princesse to take the
e of a caytife pilgrim, for the onely feruent and vnmeasured
e which I bare you, before I did euer see you, or by anye
nes bounde thereunto by any your preceding benefites. The
embraunce whereof (as I thinke) ought now to deliuer such an
le enterprise, to the port of your conscience, that breaking
vaile of your tender hart, you shoulde therefore take pitie and
passion of my straunge and cruell fortune. Which is not
y reduced to the mercy of a most dolorous prison, and resteth
e power of a bloudie and mercilesse tyrant: but (which is
e) in the continuall hazarde of a shamefull death. Which I
ot much lament hauing long desired to accelerate the same

with mine owne hands, to finde rest in an other worlde: were it not that by death I shoulde leaue an eternall blot to my good name, and a perpetuall heritage of infamie to my house and kindred. Wherefore if it so be, that frendship loketh for no rewarde, or that frendship cannot be paid but by the tribute of an other, make me now to taste the auncient fruite of frendship. And if pitie be the sole and onely keye of Paradise, displaye it now on the behalfe of her, who (forsaken of al humaine succour) attendeth but the fatall houre to bee throwen into the fier as a poore innocent lambe in sacrifice. And for that the bearer shal make you vnderstand the rest by mouth (whom it may please you to credite as mine owne selfe) I will make an ende of my heauie letter. Beseeching God to giue a good life vnto you, and to mee an honorable death." The letter closed and sealed vp with the seale of the duchesse, shee commaunded Emilia to deliuer it to Appian, and to require him to vse diligence, not ceasing to ride day and night vntil he come to the place where they left the knight Mendoza, giuinge charge to make him vnderstande (at length) her innocencie and false accusation. Appian being dispatched, was so affected to please his maistresse, and so desirous to see her deliuered of her imprisonment, as hee ceased not to trauaile day and night, till he came within the frontiers of Spaine. And after that he had ridden yet two or three dayes iourney, approaching nere the place wher he thought to find the knight Mendoza, he began to inquire of the host of the inne where he laye that night, as well of his good health, as of his other affayres, whoe made him aunswere, that it wente euen so euill with him at that present, as with the poorest gentleman of al Spaine: although that he were in deede a very great lorde. "For (quoth hee) within these few monethes past, his ennemies of Tolledo, whom he hath diuers times vanquished, haue so wel allied themselues together out of al partes of Spaine, that they haue brought a great armie to the field. And fortune of the warre hath been so fauourable vnto them, that they discomfited Mendoza and all his armie. Who hath retired himselfe, with those few of his people that hee could saue aliue, into a litle towne of his, where yet to this present he is besieged. And so it is (as euery man sayth) that he

doth his endeouour maruellouslie well, in such sort as his ennemies cannot enter the towne." Master Appian then demaunded of him, if the towne besieged were farre of. And he answered, that it was about vii. or viii. poastes. Then without making any longer inquirie, he toke a guide that accompanied him euen almoste to the campe. And when he sawe the towne a farre of, he sent the guide backe againe, and went the same daye to offer his seruice to a certaine captaine of lighte horsemen, who receiued him into wages, and then he bought armour to serue his purpose. And maister Appian besides his learning was a wise and politticke man, and determined so sone as any skirmishe did begin to be foremost, and in deede he vsed the matter so well, as hee suffred himselfe to be taken prisoner and to be caried into the towne. And being within, he desired those that had taken him, to conduct him to the lorde of Mendoza their chieftaine: whoe knew him by and by, for that in the voyage which the duchesse made into Spaine, he saw him euer more neere her then any other of her gentlemen. And after that the lord of Mendoza had demaunded of him by what meanes he entred the towne, vpon his aunswere, he perceyued that hee was a man of good experience, and well affected to the seruice of his maistres, that durst hazard his life in such wise to obey her desire. Incontinently maister Appian deliuered vnto him the duchesse letter: which when he had read, he retired into his chamber with maister Appian, hauing his face all bedewed with teares: and because that the letter did import credite, he prayed maister Appian to declare his charge. Who said vnto him, "My lady the duchesse which is at this day the most afflicted princesse vnder the coape of Heauen, commendeth herselfe vnto your honour, and doth humbly beseech you not to be offended for that at her last being in Galisia, shee departed without accomplishing her promise made vnto you: prayinge you to impute the fault vpon the importunitie of the duke her husband: whom being constrained to obey, she could not satisfie the good will that she bare vnto you. Then he began to declare in order howe the earle of Pancalier fell in loue with her, and not beinge able to obtaine his desire, caused his nephew to hide him vnder her bedde: and how hee had slaine him with his owne handes. Finallye, the

imprisonmente of the duchesse, and the iudgemente giuen againste her. Wherat the lord of Mendoza was greatly astonned: and when hee had heard the whole discourse, hee began to conceiue some euill opinion of the duchesse: thinkinge it to be incredible, that the earle of Pancalier woulde so forget himselfe, as to murder his owne proper nephewe and adopted sonne, to be reuenged of a seely woman. Neuerthelesse, he dissembled that which he thoughte, in the presence of maister Appian, and said vnto him: "Appian my frende, if mine aduerse fortune did not speake sufficiently for me, I could tel thee here a long tale of my miseries: but thou seest into what extremitie I am presently reduced, in sorte that I am vtterlye vnable to succour thy maistresse, I my selfe stil attending the houre of death: and all the pleasure which presently I can doe for thee, is to set thee at libertie from the perill prepared for vs." And without longer talke, hee caused a hot skirmishe to be giuen to his enemies, to set Appian at large: who being issued forth, made certaine of his men to conduct him to place of suretie. Appian seinge no way for Mendoza to abandon his citie for peril of death prepared for him and his, thoughte his excuse reasonable. And to attempt some other fortune, he vsed such diligence, as he in short time was retourned to Thurin, wher hauing communicated the whole matter to Emilia, she went straight to the duchesse, to whom she said: "Madame, God giue you the grace to be so constant in your aduersities, as you haue an occasion to be miscontented with the heauy newes that Appian hath brought you." And then she began to recompt vnto her the misfortune of Mendoza, the thraldome wherunto his enemies had brought him, and for conclusion, that there was no hope of helpe to be expected at his handes. Which when the duchesse vnderstoode she cryed out: "Oh, poore vnhappy woman, amongste all the most desolate and sorowfull: thou mayst well now say that the lighte of thy life from henceforth beginneth to extinguishe and growe to an ende: seing the succour of him, vpon whom depended thine assuraunce, is denied thee. Ah, ingrate knight: now knowe I righte well (but it is to late) that of the extreme loue which I did beare thee, sprong the first roote of all mine euil, which came not by any accident of fortune, but from celestiall dispensation

and deuine prouidence of my God: who now doth permit that mine hipocrisie and counterfaite deuotion shall receiue condigne chastisemente for my sinne." And then Emilia, seing her so confounded in teares, said vnto her: "Madame, it doth euil become a greate and wise princesse, (as you hitherto haue euer been reputed) to tormente her selfe, sith that you know howe all the afflictions which we receiue from heauen, be but proues of our fidelitie: or as your selfe confesseth by your complaintes, to bee iust punishment for our sinnes. Nowe then be it the one or the other, you ought to be fortified against the hard assault of your sorow: and to remit the whole to the mercie of God, who of his aboundant grace, will deliuer you of your trouble, as he hath done many others when they thought themselues forsaken of all helpe, by causinge certaine dropps of his pitie to raine down vpon them." "Alas, deare hart," (quoth the duchesse,) "how easie a matter it is for one that that is hole to comforte her that is sicke: but if thou feltest my grieve thou wouldest helpe me to complaine: so greuous a matter it is vnto mee, with life to loose mine honour. And I must confesse vnto thee, that I sustaine a very cruel assault both againste death and life, and I cannot either with the one or with the other, haue peace or truce in my selfe. Ne yet do know how to dissemble my sorrowe, but that in the ende the same will be discovered by the fumes of myne ardente sighes, which thinking to constraîne or retaine, I do nothinge els but burie my selfe within mine owne bodye: assuringe thee, that greater is one droppe of bloude that swelteth the harte within, then all the teares that maye be wept in the whole life without. Wherefore I pray thee leaue mee a litle to complaine my dolor, before I go to the place from whence I shal neuer retorne." Emilia, that willingly would haue sacrificed herselfe to redeeme the princesse from perill, not beinge able anye longer to endure the hard attempte wherewith pitie constrayned her hart, was forced to goe forth and to withdraw herselfe into another chamber, where she began to lament after so straunge maner, as it seemed that it had been shee that was destened to death. Whiles these ladies continued thus in their sorowes, the knight Mendoza toke no rest by day or night, ne ceased continually to thincke vpon the distresse of the

duchesse. And after that he had well considered the same, hee accused himselfe for fayling her at that greate neede, saying: " Now do I well knowe that I am for euer hereafter vtterly vnworthy to beare armes, or to haue the honourable title of knight, sith the same order was giuen me, wyth charge to succour afflicted persons, specially ladies, whose force onely consisteth in teares. And yet neuerthelesse, I (like a caytife) haue so shamefully neglected my dutye towards the chiefe parson of the worlde, to whom I am greatly bounden, as I die a thousand times that day wherein I thincke vpon the same. It behoueth mee then from henceforth to establishe new lawes to my deliberation, and that I breake the gate of mine auncient rigor: louing much better to die in honour, poore, and disinherited, than to liue puissant, unhappie, and a cowarde. Wherefore let fortune worke her wil: sithens the duchesse did forsake her countrie, to come to see me in her prosperitie, I may no lesse do now, but visite her in her aduersitie." Pressed and solicited inwardlye with this newe desire, determined whatsoeuer happened, to go to her rescue, and hauinge giuen order to all that was necessary for the defence of the citie: putting his confidence in the fidelitie of those that were within, caused all his captaynes to be called before him: whom hee did to vnderstande, how he was determined to go seeke succour, to leuie the siege of his enemies. Duringe which time he constituted his nere kinsman, his liefetenaunte generall, and the nexte morning before the daye appeared hee gaue a great alarme to his ennemies, wherein hee escaped vnknownen. Being mounted vppon a ienet of Spaine and out of daunger, he toke post horse, and made such expedition as hee arriued at Lions, where he prouided the beste armour that he could get for money, and two excellent good horses, whereof the one was a courser of Naples. And hauing gotten a certaine vnknownen page, toke his waye to Thurin, where beinge arriued, hee lodged in the suburbs, demaunding of his host if there dwelt anye Spaniards in the towne, whoe made aunswere, that hee knewe but one, which was a good olde religious father, that for the space of twentie yeares was neuer out of Thurin, a man of vertuous life, and welbeloued of all the citizens, and had the charge of a certaine conuente. Neuerthelesse his lodginge



was aparte from his brethren, to solace himselfe, and to auoide the incommoditie of his age. The knight hauinge learned of his hoste the place wher this good father dwelled, went with diligence betimes in the morning, to see him, and said vnto him in the Spanish tongue: "Father, God saue you: I am a Spaniarde comen hither into this country for certaine mine affaires, towardes whom you mighte doe a charitable deede, if it woulde please you to suffer mee to remayne with you foure or fve dayes onelye, crauinge nothinge els but lodginge: for my seruaunte shall prouide for other necessities." Whiche the good father willinglye graunted, muche maruelling at his goodlye personage. And whiles the seruaunte was gone to the towne to bye victualls, the good father demaunded of him, of what countrye in Spaine hee was, whiche the knight francklye confessed. And the fatherlye man then hauinge his face all be sprete with teares, sayde: "Praysed be the name of GOD, that he hath giuen mee the grace before I dye, to see so great a lord in my poore house, of whom I am both the subiecte and neighbour." And then he began to tell him howe for deuotion he had forsaken his natue countrey and had bestowed himselfe there, the better to withdrawe him from worldly vanitie. Neuerthelesse he said: that he knew his father, his mother, and his graundfather. Desiringe him to vse his house at commaundement, where he should be obeyed as if he were in his owne: and then the lord of Mendozza said vnto him, that he was departed from Spaine of purpose to see Fraunce, and there to make his abode for a time. And that passing by Lions one aduertised him of the infortunate chaunce of the duchesse, whom if he thought to be innocent of the crime wherof she was accused, he would defend her to the sheading of the last drop of his bloude. Neuerthelesse he would not hazard his life or soule to defend her, if he knew her to be guiltie. Which words the good man greatly allowed, saying vnto him: "My lord, touchinge her innocencie, I beleue there is at this day no man liuing, but herselfe and the earle, her accuser, that can iudge. But one thinge I can well assure you, that wee heere, do deeme her to be one of the best princesses, that euer raigned in this countrie, specially for that a yeare paste she went on foote to S. Iames, with suche deuotion and hu-

militie, as there was no man but pitied to see her so mortified for her soules healthe. And to combate with the earle of Pancalier, you seeme vnto me very yong: for besides the continual exercise that he hath alwayes had in armes, he is withal esteemed to be one of the strongest, readiest, and most redoubted knights of all Lombardie: the victorie notwithstanding is in the hand of God, who can giue it to whom he pleaseth: which hee made manifest in the yong infante Dauid, against the monstrous gigante Golias." To whom the knighte aunswered: " Father, I haue deuised a waye how to prouide against the scruple of my conscience, touchinge the doubt conceyued by mee, whether the combat that I shall take in hand against the earle of Pancalier, be iust or not, which is, that I vnder colour of confession, might vnderstand of the duchesse, the trouth of the matter. And therefore if you thinke good I may cause my head and beard to be shauen, and apparelling my selfe in such habite as you do weare, we two may easely (as I thinke) with the leaue of her keepers, go into the duchesse chamber, to exhort her to pacience: for about this time of the yeare, the day is expired." Wherunto the good father without any great difficultie, consented, aswell for respect of his good zeale, as for his reuerent dutie to the nobilitie of the stock whereof he came. And so all thinges prouided, they wente together towards the castel of the duchesse. And he that had seen the knight Mendoza in his fryer's apparell, would vnethes haue discerned him, to be so great a lorde as he was: for besides his dissembled gestures and countenaunces, wherwith he knew right wel how to behaue himselfe, he was so leane and poore, aswell for the care of the battell he lost, and ouerthrowe of his people, as for the mishap of the duchesse, and the peril of his life at hand, by reason of the combate betweene the earle and him, as he resembled rather a holy S. Hierome, mortified in some desert, then a lord, so noble and valiaunt as he was. Arriued at the castell, the olde father addressed himself to the garde and sayd: " Maisters, because the time for the death of the miserable duchesse doth approche, we be come hither to geue her such spirituall comforte, as wherwith God hath inspired vs, hoping that hee will this daye geue vs the grace to induce her to die patiently, to the intent that by losse of the body, her soule may be

saued." Wherunto they accorded willingly, and caused the chamber to be opened vnto them. They within the chamber went forth incontinently, thinking that the gouernour had caused the good fathers to come to heare the last confession of the poore duchesse, who was so sorowefull and pensife as she was forced to kepe her bed: which came very well to passe, for the knight Mendoza, comming neare vnto her bedde, with his face towardes her, so counterfayted hym selfe as he coulde not in any manner of wyse be knowen. And the good olde father fryer taried in a corner of the chamber a farre of, that he might heare none of their talke: and as the lorde of Mendoza leaned vpon her bedsyde, he sayde vnto her in the Italian tongue, which was so familiar to him as the Spanishe: "Madame, the peace of our Lorde be with you." Wherunto the lady aunswered: "Father why speake you of peace, sithe I am in continuall warre, deprived of al contentation, and doe but attende the last end of my calamitie, whiche is a moste cruell and shamefull death, without desert." And then the lorde of Mendoza, who had consumed the moste parte of his youthe in good letters, saide vnto her: "I beleue madame you be not ignoraunt howe miseries and tribulations, fall not by accident or fortune, but by the prouidence or dispensation of God, before whome one litle sparowe onely is not forgotten, as the prophete Amos doth manifeste vnto vs when he sayth: 'there is none euil in the citie that I haue not sent thither:' whiche is also apparaunt in Iob, whome the deuil could not afflict before he had first obtayned licence of God. And it is necessarye for you to knowe, that tribulations and affliction bee tokens of the fore chosen and elected people of God, and the true markes of our saluation: so that if you consider the order of all the scriptures, from the beginning of the worlde vntyll this tyme, you shall fynde that they whome God hath alwayes best loued and cherished, he hath commaunded to drinke of the cup of his passion, and to be more afflicted than others: examples whereof be common in the scriptures. As when Abell was afflicted by Caine his brother, Isaac by his brother Ismaell, Ioseph by his brethren, Dauid by Absolon his sonne, the children of Israel (the electe people of God) by Pharaο: whiche thinges beinge pro-

foundlye considered by Sainct Paule, he sayde: 'If we had not an other hope in Iesus Christe, than in the lyfe present, we might well say that we were the most miserable of al others. And yet moreouer, saith he, it is litle or nothing that we endure, in respect of that which Iesus Christe hath suffered.' Who (although he framed the whole worke of the worlde) was called the carpenter's sonne, for preaching he was sclaundered, he was caried vp to a mountaine to be thrown down, he was called glotton, dronkard, louer of publicanes and sinners, Samaritane, seducer, diuell: saying, that in the name of Belzebub he did cast out diuels. But let vs consider, madame, a litle further, what thinges were done vnto him, hee was naked to clothe vs, prisoner and bounde to vnbinde vs from the chain of the diuell, made a sacrifice to cleanse vs of all our inward filth, we doe see that he suffred his side to be opened, to close vp hell from vs, we see his handes whiche in so comely order made both heauen and earth for the loue of vs, pearced with pricking nailes, his head crowned with three sharped thornes to crowne vs with heauenly glorie. Let vs way that by his dolour came our ioye, our health grew of his infirmitie, of his death was deriued our life: and should we be ashamed to haue our head touched with a fewe thornes of trouble? Strengthen your self then (madame) in the name of God, and make you ready to receiue death in the name of him that was not ashamed to indure it for you. Is his strong hande any thing weakened? Is it not in him to ouerthrow the furie of your enemie, and so to humble your aduersarie that he shall neuer be able to be relieued? How many poore afflicted persones haue there bene seene to be abandoned of all succour, whom he hath behelde with his pitiful eye, and restored to greater ease and contentation, then euer they were in before? learne then from henceforth, to comforte your selfe in God, and say as the great doctor holy Ignatius sayd in his epistle to the Romaines: 'I desire that the fier, the gallowes, the beastes, and all the tormentes of the diuil might exercise their crueltie vpon me, so as I may haue fruition of my Lorde God.'" And after that the knight had made an ende of his consolation, the duchesse was so rapte in contentation, as it seemed her soule had already tasted of the celestially delighes, and would flie euen vp

into heauen. And then feeling her selfe lightened like one that had escaped some furious tempest of the seas, she began to confesse her self vnto him from point to point, without omitting any thing of that whiche she thought might greue her conscience. And when she came to the accusation of the earle, she prayed God not to pardon her sinnes, if she had committed in deede or thought, any thing contrarie to the dutie of mariage, except it were one dishonest affection that she had borne to a knight of Spaine, whom vnder pretence of a fained deuotion, she had visited in Spayne, not committing any thing sauing good will whiche shee bare vnto him. "Which maketh me thinke (quod she) that God being moued against myne hipocrisie, hath permitted this false accusation to be raysed against me by the earle of Pancalier, whiche I will paciently suffer, sithe his will is so." Her confession finished, she plucked of a riche diamonde from her finger, saying: "Good father, albeit I haue heretofore bene a riche princesse, as you knowe, yet nowe myne ennemies haue taken awaye all my goodes from me (this diamond except) which my brother the kyng of Englande gaue me, when I was married to the duke of Sauoie. And because I can not otherwise doe you good, I geue it vnto you, praying you to remember me in your prayers, and to kepe it for my sake: for it is of a greater price then you thinke, and may serue one daie to supply the necessitie of your conuent." The confession ended and the diamond receiued, the twoo friers retourned home to their conuent. And so sone as they were arriued there, the lorde of Mendoza sayde vnto hym: "Father, nowe doe I knowe certainly, that this poore woman is innocent, wherefore I am resolved to defende her so long as life doth last. And I feele my selfe so touched and pressed in mynde, as I thinke it long till I be at the combat. Wherefore I praye you if it chaunce that fortune be contrary vnto me, after my death, make it to be openly knowen what I am, and chiefly that the duchesse may vnderstande it, for speciall purpose. And if it fortune that I escape with life (which can not be but by the death of the earle) be secrete vnto me in these thinges which I haue declared vnder the vayle of confession." The good father promised so to doe. And

hauing passed all that day and night in praiers and supplications, he armed himselfe, and made ready his courser. And when the dawning of the daye began to appeare, he went in his armour to the gates of the citie, and calling one of the garde, he sayd vnto him: " Good fellowe, I pray thee bidde the counte of Pancalier to prepare him selfe, to mainteine the false accusation, which he hath falsely forged against the duchesse of Sauoie. And further tell him, that there is a knight here, that will make him to denie his horrible vilany before hee parte the field, and will in the presence of al the people cut out that periured tounge, which durst commit such treason against an innocent princesse." This matter was in a moment published throughout all the citie, in such sorte, as you might haue sene the churches full of men and women, praying to God for the redemption of their maistresse. During the time that the garde had done his ambassage, the lord of Mendozza went towardes the piller where the accusation was written, attending when the accuser should come forth. The earle of Pancalier aduertised hereof, began incontinently to feelee a certaine remorse of conscience, which inwardly gript hym so nere, as he endured a torment lyke to very death. And being vnable to discharge himself therof, would willingly haue wished that he had neuer attempted the dishonour of the lady. Neuerthelesse that he might not seeme slacke in that he had begonne, he sent woorde to the knight, that he should write his name vppon the piller, to whome Mendozza made aunswere, that he might not know his name, but the combat he would make him feelee before the daye went downe. The earle of Pancalier made difficultie of the combat, if firste he knewe not the name of hym with whom he should haue to doe. The matter well aduised, it was clearely resolved by the iudges, that the statutes made no mention of the name, and therefore he was not bounde thereunto, but that the statute did expreslye fauour the defendant, geuing vnto him the election of the armour, and semblable it was requisite that the persone accused should be brought forth in the presence of the twoo champions. Which thinges vnderstanded by the earle, albeit that he trusted not his quarell, yet making a vertue of necessitie, and not vnlearned in the order of such conflict, forthwith armed hymselfe, and came

into the place ordayned for the campe, where he founde his enemy armed in a black armour, in token of mourning. Immediately after they sent for the duchesse, who ignoraunt of the matter, wondered much when she vnderstode that there was a knight in the field all armed in black, seming to be a noble man, that promised some great matter by his dexteritie and bolde countenance, and would also mainteine against the earle of Pancalier his accusation to be false. The poore duchesse then not being able to imagine what he should be, greatly troubled in mind, and comming forth of the castel was conducted in a litter couered with black cloth, accompanied with more then two hundred ladies and damsels, in semblable attire vnto the place where the iudges, the people and the two knightes were, who did but attend her comming. And after they had wayted her going vp to a litle stage ordained for that purpose, the deputies for the assurance of the campe, demaunded of her these wordes, saying: "Madame, for that you be accused of adulterie by the earle of Pancalier here present, and the custome requireth that you present a knight within the yeare and daye, by force of armes to trye your right: are you determined to accepte him that is here present, and to repose your selfe vpon him, both for your fault and innocencie?" The duchesse aunswered: that shee committed all her right into the mercie of God, who knew the inwarde thoughtes of her harte, and to the manhode of the knight, albeit she thought that she had neuer seen him. And when she had ended those wordes, she fell downe vpon her knees, then lifting vp her eyes all blubbered with teares towardes heauen, she prayed: "O Lorde God, which art the very veritie it self, and knowest the bytternesse that I fele in my harte, to see my self falsely accused, shew forth now the treasure of thy grace vpon me wretched princesse: and as thou diddest deliuer Susanna from her trouble, and Iudith from Holofernes, deliuer me from the hande of a tiraunt: who like a lion hungrie for my bloud, deuoureth both myne honour and life." And hauing made an ende of her prayer, shee remained vnmoueable as if shee had bene in a traunce. And now the knight Mendoza, offended to see the earle to praunce his horse vp and downe the campe, making him to vault and leape, with a

countenance very furious sayd vnto him : " Traytour counte, because I am certayne that the accusation which thou hast forged against this princesse, is inuented by the greatest villany of the world, I do maintaine here before al the people, that thou hast falsely accused her, and that thou liest in thy throte, in all that thou hast contriued against her, and that thou haste deserued to bee put into a sacke, to bee caste into the riuer for the murder that thou haste committed vppon thy nephewe, the innocent bloud of whom doth nowe crie for vengeance to be taken for thy synne before God." And scarce had he made an ende of his woordes, but the earle aunswered him with a marueilous audacitie : " Infamous villain, which hidest thy name for feare lest thy vices should be knowen, thou arte nowe fouly deceiued by thinking to warrant her, who hath offended against the duke her husbände, by her whoredome and adulterie : and for that thou hast parled so proudly, and wilt not be knowen, I can not otherwyse thinke but that thou art some one of her ruffians : and therefore I doe mainteine, that thou thy selfe doest lie, and that thou deseruest to be burnt in the same fire with her, or els to be drawen with foure horses by the crosse pathes of this towne, to serue for an example in the worlds to come, not onely for all lasciuious ladies and damsels, but also for such abhominable whoremongers, as be lyke thy selfe." Incontinently after, the harraulde of armes began to make the accustomed crie, and the knightes to put their launces in their restes : they let run their horses with such violence, as ioyning together their shieldes, their bodies and heads, they brake their staues, euen to their gauntlets, so roughly, as they fel both down to the ground without losing, neuerthelesse, the raines of the bridles. But the heate of the harte, and desire to vanquishe, made them readily to get vp againe, and hauing cast away the troncheons of their staues, layd handes on their swordes, and there began so straunge and cruell a sturre betwene them, as they which were the beholders were affrighted to see them able to endure so much : for they were so fleshed one vppon another, and did so thicke bestowe their strokes without breathing, as the lookers on confessed neuer to haue seene any combat in Piemonte betwene twoo single

persons, so furious nor better followed then that of the earle and of the knight Mendoza. But the Spanishe knight encouraged with the iustice of his quarell, and the rewarde of his fight, seemed to redouble his force: for euen when euery man thought that power must needes fayle him, it was the houre wherin he did best behaue himselfe. In such sort, as his enemy not being able any longer to sustein his puissaunt strokes, being wounded in diuers partes of his bodye, did nowe no more but defende himselfe, and beare of the blowes which were bestowed vpon hym without intermission: whiche the Spanishe knight perceiuing, desirous to make an ende of the combat, made so full a blowe with all his force vpon the top of his helmet, as he wounded his head very sore. Wherewithall the harte of the earle began very muche to faint, and staggering here and there like a dronken man or troubled in his senses, was constraind to fall downe from his horse: and then the lorde of Mendoza dismounting himself, and takyng holde vpon the corps of his shield, plucked it so rudely to him, as he ouerturned him on his other syde. Then with the pomell of his sworde he did so swetely bumbast him, as he made his helmet to flye of his head: and setting his foote vpon his throte, made as though with the point of his swearde he woulde haue killed hym, saying: "Counte, the houre is now come that thou must goe make an accompt with God of thine vntrouth and treason which thou hast committed against the duchesse." "Ah, sir knight (quoth the earle) haue pitie vpon me, and kil me not I beseche thee, before I haue a litle bethought me of my conscience." "Villaine (quoth the Spaniard) if I had any hope of thine amendement, I would willingly geue thee delay of life: but being a traytour as thou art, thou wilt neuer cease to afflicté innocentes. Neuerthelesse if thou wilt acknowledge thy fault publikely, and require pardon of the duchesse, I wil willingly leaue thee to the mercy of the duke, although that if I did obserue the rigour of the lawe, I should cause the presently to receiue the payne prepared for the duchesse." To whom he obeied for safegarde of his life, and kneeling on his knees before the duchesse in the presence of al the people, made a long discourse of his loue towards her, of the repulse that

she gaue him, and that for reuenge, he ayded him selfe with his nephewe, thinking to ouerthrowe her chastitie. Finally, howe he had slayne his nephewe, to induce the duke to iudge her to be culpable of the adulterie. And then touning his face towarde the duchesse, sayde vnto her: " Madame it behoueth me to confesse that the losse of this one life is to litle to paye the tribute of the curelesse faulte that I haue committed against you. Yet sithe it is so, I beseeche you by preferring pitie and mercy before the rigor of your iustice, you will permit that I may liue yet certayn dayes to make a view of my life past, and to prouide for the scruple of my conscience." Then new ioye approached to garnishe the spirite of the duchesse, and both the soule and the harte began to shewe theim selues ioyful, in such wyse, as she was a long tyme without power to speake, and did nothing els but ioyne her handes and lifte vp her eyes to heauen, saying: " O Lorde God, praysed be thy holy name, for that thou hast caused the bright beames of thy diuinitie, to shyne vpon the darkenesse of my sorrowfull life, enforcing so well the mynde of this traytour the murderer of mine honour by the prickes of thy rigorous iustice, openly to acknowledge before all men, the iniurie that he hath done me." And without speaking any more wordes, she torned her face for feare lest she should make him any other aunswere. Then all the people began to laude and magnifie God, and to sing psalmes for ioye of the deliuerance of their duchesse, who was brought backe and reconducted into the citie, with so great triumphe, as if she had made a seconde entrie. Whilest these things were adoining, the deputies for the suretie of the campe caused the wounded earle to be borne to pryson. The knight Mendozza stole secretly awaye, and after that he had in the next village dressed certaine small woundes that he had receiued in the combat, he toke his way into Spain. In the meane time, the duchesse caused him to be sought for in euery place, but it was not possible to know any more newes of him, than if he had ben neuer seene. Whereat being grieved beyond measure, shee made her mone to Emilia, to know wherefore he should so absent himself from her. " Madame (quoth Emilia,) he is sure some French knight, or els it may be some

kinsman of your own, that is come out of England into these partes for certayne other affaires: and fearing least he should bee staied here, will not be knowen, reseruing the manifestation of himself till an other tyme more apte for his purpose." " Let him bee what he may bee (sayde the duchesse) for so long as my soule shall remayne within this bodye, I wyll doe hym homage during life: for the whiche I am so duelye bounde debtour vnto him, as neuer subiecte was to his soueraigne lorde." In this tyme whylest these matters went thus at Thurin, the duke of Sauoie, the lieutenant generall for the king against the Almaines, encountering with his enemies in a skirmishe, by fortune was slayne: whereof the king of England being aduertised, and specially of the deliuerie of his syster, desirous to haue her about hym, sente for her to marrie her agayne, and to leaue vnto her the entier gouvernement of his housholde: and to gratifie her at her firste arriual, he gaue the rule of his daughter vnto her, whiche was of the age of sixtene or seuentene yeares, with whome by certayne meanes there was a mariage practized for the prince of Spayne. Let vs now leaue the duchesse to liue in honor with her brother, and retorne we to the lorde of Mendoza, who being arriued nere vnto his citie, vnderstode incontinently that they which had besieged it had leuied their campe. For that they of the towne had so well done their endeuour as not onely their enemies were not able to enter, but also they had in a certain skirmishe taken the lord Ladolpho their chieftaine prisoner, who was yet to that present detained: because meanes were made for peace to be concluded on al sides: neuerthelesse they durst doe nothing without hym: whereat the lorde of Mendoza beyng replenyshed with greate ioye to see his affaires prosper so well in all partes, entred the citie: and the articles of the peace communicated vnto him, hee founde them verie profitable for him: and being concluded and approued by him he began to solace himselfe in his owne house, without taking care for any thing saue onely from thenceforth to thinke by what meane he might goe to see the duchesse, and recount vnto her the issue of his affaires. But fortune prepared him a more readie occasion than he thought of: for the kyng of Spaine being aduertised of certaine talkes that had bene

bruted of the mariage of his sonne with the daughter of the king of Englande, determined with speede to send a great companie of noble men thither, to demaunde his daughter in mariage: of the which the lorde of Mendoza, as wel for his nobilitie, as for the knowledge he had in languages and other good disciplines, was elected chiefe, with speciall commission to accorde the mariage in case it should so please the kyng. The ambassadours vsed suche expedition, that they arriued at London, where the kinge for that presente made his abode: who aduertised of their comming, gaue commaundement to the princesse his daughter, and to the duchesse his sister, to prepare them selues to receyue a great companie of lordes of Spayne, whiche that daye would come to his courte to treat of the aforesayde mariage. And God knoweth if the ladies spared oughte of that, whiche they thought might augmente their beautie. The king also for his part, to doe them more honour, went to meete them in persone, and at their arriual, gaue them a moste friendly welcome: but sodaynly as they presented them selues to doe their reuerence to the ladies, the duchesse who incontinently knew the lord of Mendoza, began so to deteste him as she was not able to rule her selfe, but (with a sodayne mutation of colour) she abandoned the companie: the lorde of Mendoza knowyng the originall of her griefe, lefte not his dutie yndone towards the princesse and other ladyes whyche accompanied her, dissembling to haue taken no regarde to the absence of the duchesse. And Emilia, who had followed her mistresse into the chambre, fearynge leaste there were some sodaine mischaunce happened, demaunded of her, wherfore she was retired from a company so honourable: and sayd that she did great wrong to her owne estimation: to whom the duchesse (with extreme choler) made aunswere: "Why Emilia, thinkest thou that I haue the harte to suffer my hand to be kised by that moste trayterous and moste cowardly knight of the world, who made no conscience to abandone me in the greatest necessitie of my life? where as I, contrary to the dutie of all the lawes of honour, and contrary to my sexe, did so muche abase my selfe as to visite hym in Spayne. Naye rather my dayes shall cease their course than myne affection shall euer reuiue in him: he shall neuer receiue any other

fauour of me, but as of his most cruell and mortall enemy." And then Emilia smiling, sayd vnto her: " In good earnest, madame, I thought that the sharpenesse of your imprisonment, with the other tormentes paste, whiche you indured, might haue put all these matters quite in obliuion, and woulde so haue mortified you, that you had wholly lost all desire of reuenge: but so farre as I can perceiue, I am deceiued of myne accompte, seying that sodaynly so soone as you behelde the knight Mendoza, you began to flie, as if your ghostly enemy had come before you, in his moste hideous and horrible forme." Yet coulde not Emilia perswade her, to shewe her selfe abroad before dynner, tyll the king sent for her, with woorde that if she came not, he would himselfe fetch her. And then a little shamefast colour began to renew her alablaster cheekes, whiche rendred her so ruddye and fayre, as the Spanyards confessed neuer to haue seene in any parte of the worlde, where they had bene, one so fayre and beautifull a wydow. The tables couered for dynner, the king tooke his place, and for their more honourable entertaynement, caused them to be set at his owne table: and made the lorde of Mendoza to be placed right ouer against the duchesse his sister: who was so inflamed and moued with choler, as shee duste not lifte vp her eyes for feare least vpon the sodayne she should bee perceyued: whiche eyes sparkeling sometymes with greate yre, resembled properlye twoo starres of the night, that shoote forth their brightnesse vpon the earth, when all thinges be in silence. And all this tyme the lorde of Mendoza conceyued suche pleasure at these pretie toyes, as he would not haue chaunged his ioy for the best citie in all Englande: and as the duchesse in this order did firmly fixe her eyes, shee sawe by fortune a ryche diamonde that Mendoza ware vpon his finger, wherupon hauing oftentimes caste her eyes, she sodaynly knew that it was the very same that shee had geuen to the good father that confessed her at Thurin, the daye before shee was leadde to the piller, and began then to imagine with her selfe, how it might be that he could come by the same: and not knowing what to saye, immediatly after shee had dyned and the tables taken vp, she caused maister Appian her phisitian to be called vnto her: whome she desyred to know

of the lord of Mendoza, by what meanes he came by the diamonde that he ware vpon his finger: whiche Appian did. And after he had talked with the knight of certaine common matters, he sayde vnto hym: " My lorde, you haue a very fayre diamonde there, whiche as I thinke I haue sene before this tyme, wherefore sir I praye you tel me where you had it." To whome the lorde of Mendoza answered in laughing wise: " Maister Appian, where I had the ring, is to secret for you to know, but tell my lady the duchesse, that the knowledge thereof onely appertayneth vnto her." Whiche aunswere Appian declared to the duchesse: and albeit that she tooke no great pleasure in the aunswere, yet neuerthelesse very desyrous to vnderstande the truth, she repayred to the knight which the same time walked alone in a gallerie, who after he had kyssed her handes, began to discourse of his fortunes past, declaring vnto her, that he repented of the refusall that he made to maister Appian for her succour, and howe within a while after he rode to Thurin: adding the deuise whereby hee had heard her confession, and howe the diamonde came into his handes, putting her in remembraunce from worde to worde, of all his talke with her, during the tyme that he was in frier's weede, then finally his victorie against the earle, his secrete flyght, and all the whole as before hath bene declared. Whereat the duchesse no lesse abashed than rapt with ioy and admiration, fel downe in a swoune betwene his armes, holding her mouth so faste closed against his, that it seemed she would drawe the soule out of his bodye, to ioyne and vnite with her's: and after she had remayned a while in this traunce, shee cried out: " O poore harte so long tyme plagued, whiche hast for the space of a yeare nowe passed, bene tossed with so many tempestes and diuers assaultes of fortune: receiue at this present the medicine apt for thy health, sithens thou enioyest him betwene thine armes, that by the pryce of his blood, valiant force and extreme trauailes, hath raysed thee from death to life: let fortune from henceforth doe her will in that she is able to deuise against me: and yet wyll I, for this onely benefite, confesse my selfe this daye to be eternally bounde vnto her." " Madame (quod the knight) I praye you let vs not renewe the memorie of our former griefes: wherein, if by any meane I

haue done you good, I was but the organe or instrumente thereof: for God, who is the righter of all wrong, did neuer suffer iustice without his due acquitall, howe long so euer he taried. So (you not beyng in any wyse culpable) if I had neuer enterprysed the combate whereunto I was bounde, our Lorde God would haue rayseed some other to achieue the same." " Well then my lord, (quoth the duchesse) sithens it pleaseth you not, that I renewe my dolours past, which haue taken ende by your meane, I shall humbly beseeche you to excuse mee, if this daye I haue not geuen you that honour and good entertainment whiche you deserued: assuring you that before you shall departe this countrey, I wyll make you amendes according vnto your owne discretion."

" Madame, (quod the knyght) for all the wronges that euer you did vnto me, (if they may be called wronges) the curtesie, fauour and gentlenesse which alreadie I haue receiued, doth at one instant requite and recompence. Neuerthelesse if it may please you to receyue me for your seconde husbände, sithe it hath pleased God to call your first out of this lyfe into an other: that is and shal bee the fulnesse of all the felicitie that I looke for in this worlde."

" My lorde Mendoza, (sayd the duchesse) the recompence whiche you demaunde of me, is very little in respect of the amendes and satisfaction whiche I oughte to make you. But of one thing I can well assure you, that if I had the whole world at my commaundement, and that I were the greatest princesse of the earth, in all kinde of beauties and giftes of grace, I would willingly submitte my self vnto you, in consideration of your worthinesse, and benefits bestowed vpon me with so willing a minde, as presently I do yelde vnto your request: and I must nedes confesse, that I am now greatly bounde to fortune, that hath deliuered me into your handes, from whome I hope neuer to be seuered so long as my soule shall reste within my body: being predestinated as I beleue to no other ende but to serue and obey you." And as they thought to make a longer discourse of their talke, Emilia told them that the king was in counsell, and that the other lordes of Spaine attended his comming: who with his company being come before the king, and hauing done their reuerence vnto him, he began to declare his charge, and how they were of purpose

sente to his maiestie in the behalfe of the king of Spaine, to demaunde the lady his doughter in mariage, for his sonne the prince of Spain: which he had chosen aswel to haue his alliaunce (a matter by him only desired) as for the beautie and good grace, for the which she was specially recommended. And if so bee, he had willed to haue chosen his matche els where, that there was not at that day any prince in al Europa, that woulde not willingly haue accorded vnto him. To whom the king aunswered: "My frendes, I feele my selfe so much honored, for that it hath pleased the king to send vnto me, as if he had not preuented me, I had thought to haue sent vnto him for the same purpose. And albeit that herein he hath vanquished me in ciuilitie and courtesie, yet I will not faile if I can to surmount him in amitie. For he hath bound me during life, in such wise as he, and my lord his sonne, may boldly vaunt themselues to haue a king of England and a realme from henceforth at their commaundement." The mariage concluded, the duchesse diligentlie made sute to talke with the king alone, to communicate vnto him the agreement betweene the lord of Mendozza and her. And perceiuing that the king was gone into his chamber, she went vnto him, and being alone with him, hauing her face al bedewed with teares, kneeling, she said vnto him: "My lord, when I consider my miseries paste, and the cruell assaultes that I haue receiued of fortune, being not onely committed to the mercy of a moste cruell prison, but (which is more) at the very last point of a shamefull death, I am so afflicted, that the onely remembraunce of those miseries terrifieth me, and causeth a certaine extreme bitterness to rise in my hart. And when on the other side, I thinke of the great goodnesse that Almighty God hath shewed vnto me, by stretching forth his mighty hand to deliuer me out of that perill, chieflie to make mee triumphe ouer the death of mine enemy: I feele such comforte of minde as all the delightes of the world be but griefes, in respect of the ioye, pleasure and contentacion that I receiue: wherein nothing offendeth me so much as hitherto that I haue not acknowledged the benefit receiued of him, who was elected of God to be my deliuerer: neuerthelesse sir, by your onely word, you may both satisfie him, and content mee, yea and (as it were) prolong the

dayes of my life." The king, who loued his sister no lesse than his daughter, seing her pitifull complainte and teares, and to speake with such affection, toke her vppe, and holdinge her by the arme, said vnto her: " Deare sister and frende, if I haue not to this present satisfied him that was the cause of your deliuerance, I cannot be accused of ingratitude, for that hitherto I haue not knownen him, ne yet your selfe doth knowe what he is, (as you haue oftentimes tolde me:) but of one thing you maye be assured, and I sweare vnto you at this present, by my scepter, that so sone as I shall vnderstande what he is, I will vse him in such wise, as he shall thincke himselfe satisfied and contented, though it did coste me the one halfe of my kingdome: for the pleasure which he hath done vnto you bindeth not you alone, but mee also, to be partaker of that band, both our honours being ioyntly bound therunto." " Alas, my lord, (said the duchesse) it is the knighte Mendoza, chiefe of this ambassade, to whom, if it please you to giue your consent that we two might marrie, all auncient bands and debtes shal remain extinct, and so by a smal reward you shal restore life to two persons, almost dead, for the excessiue loue which one beareth the other." And therewithal she began to declare to the king, thoriginal and processe of the whole discourse. First, the voyage of the sister of Mendoza into Piemont: her owne peregrination to S. Iames, the honest amitie betweene her and Mendoza, the message of maister Appian to Mendoza, his refusall of that request, his retorne after to Thurin, her confession, the diamonde knowen againe, finally, how all the whole had passed betweene them: the counterfaite deuocion to Saint Iames onelye reserued, which, for her honour's sake, shee woulde not tell him. The kinge vnderstanding this straunge discourse, was so rapte with ioye and appalled with gladnesse, as hee could not for a longe time make any aunswere. When his passion was moderated, hee said to his sister: " But be you well assured, that hee will receiue you for his wyfe." " Yea, my lord, (quoth shee) I ought well to be assured of it, since he himselfe hath made the requeste." " And truly, (quoth the kinge) God forbidde that I should be the cause to breake so holy an accorde: for if the lorde of Mendoza were inferiour in qualitie, nobility, and goods, than hee is: yet

hath he so much done both for you and mee, as we may not honestlie refuse him. Howe much more then be wee bounde to him: being a greate lorde as hee is, issued of noble and famous families of Spaine, riche in goodes, and hauinge hazarded his life for the conseruation of your honour: and therewithall seeketh mine alliaunce. Goe your wayes, (dere sister and frend) goe your wayes, make much of him, and entreate him as you thincke beste. And when I haue walked two or three tornes here, I will come vnto him, to communicate more amplie of these matters." Scarce had the duchesse leysure to aduertise the lorde of Mendoza of that which was concluded betweene the kinge and her, but he came downe into the hall, where the moste parte of the Spanishe gentlemen walked, and with a very ioyfull countenance wente to the knight. To whom hee saide: " My lorde Mendoza, I praye you to embrace mee: for so farre as I see, I haue a better intereste in you than I thought." And the lorde of Mendoza thinking to embrace him, his knee vppon the grounde, was immediatly desired to stande vp. Whom the kinge cleeping aboute the necke, saide vnto him so loude as euerye man mighte heare: " Sir knighte, by the God of Heauen, since that I might commaunde in the realme of Englande, I haue not entertayned gentleman nor prince, to whom I haue bin more endedebted than to you: nor neuer was there any dearer vnto mee than you, for the greate gratitude and kindnesse, wherwith you haue bound me, and wherby I shal not from henceforth be satisfied, vntil I haue in some thinge acknowledged the bonde wherein I am bounde vnto you." When hee had spoken those woordes, hee began to declare from point to point, in the presence of all the assemblie, the contentes of the whole before declared historie. Whereat there was none in all the company, but was greatly astonned at the prudence of Mendoza, by so well dissembling, and accomplishing so great enterprises, without makinge them manifest. And the king of Englande commaunded that the mariage of him and his sister shoulde be published throughe out his realme, that all his nobilitie might be assembled. And for his greater honour, the kinge did from thenceforth constitute him his high constable of England, and reposed himselfe in him, as vppon a firme piller, for the ad-

ministration of the wayghtiest affaires of his realme. The mariage
solempnized and consummate with the duchesse, hee retourn-
ed into Spaine, to accompanye the prince into England,
whose mariage was celebrated at London, with the
king of England's daughter, in such pompe
and solempnitie, as semblable princes be
commonlie accustomed to do in
such like cases.

THE FORTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

A King of Englande loued the daughter of one of his noble men, which was Countesse of Salesburie, who after great sute to atchieue that he could not winne, for the entire loue hee bare her, and her greate constancie, hee made her his queene and wife.

THIS historie ensuinge, describing the perfect figure of womanhode, the naturall qualitie of loue incensinge the hartes indifferentlye of all nature's children, the liuely image of a good conditioned prince, the zealous loue of parentes and the glorious reward that chastitie conduceth to her imbracers, I deeme worthie to be annexed to the former Nouell, wherein as you haue hearde, bee containd the straunge aduentures of a fayre and innocente duchesse: whose life tried like gould in the fornace, glittereth at this daye like a brighte starry planet, shining in the firmament with moste splendent brightnesse aboue all the rest, to the eternall prayse of feminine kinde. And as a noble man of Spaine, by heate of loue's rage, pursued the louinge trace of a king of England's sister: euen so a renowned and most victorious prince (as the auctour of them both affirmeth) thorow the furie of that passion, which (as Apuleus sayth) in the firste heate is but small, but aboundinge by increase, doth set all men on fier, maketh earnest sute by discourse of wordes to a lady herselfe, a countesse, and earle's doughter, a beautifull and faire wighte, a creature incomparable, the wife of a noble man his owne subiect: who seing her constante forte to be impregnable, after pleasaunte sute and milde requeste, attempteth by vndermining to inuade, and when with siege prolix, hee perceiueth no ingenious deuise can atchieue that long and painfull worke, he threateth mighte and maine, dire and cruell assaultes, to winne and gette the same: and laste of all surrendred into his hands, and the prisoner cryinge for mercie, he mercifully is contented to mitigate his conceyued rigour, and pitifully to release the lady, whom for her womanlye stoutnesse and coragious constancie hee imbraceth and entertayneth for his owne. This greate and worthy king, by the

first viewe of a delicate ladie, thorowe the sappe of loue soaked into his noble harte, was transported into manye passions, and rapte with infinite pangues, which afterwards bredde him great disquietnes. This worthie prince (I say) who before that time like an Alexander, was able to conquere and gaine whole kingdomes, and made all Fraunce to quake for feare, at whose approch the gates of every citie did flie open, and fame of him prouoked ech Frenchman's knee to bowe, whose helmet was made of man-hods trampe, and mace well steeled with stoute attemptes, was by the weakest staye of dame Nature's frame, a woman (shaped with no visage sterne or vglie loke) affrighted and appalled: whose harte was armed with no lethal sword or deadly launce, but with a curat of honour and weapon of womanhode, and for all his glorious conquests, she durst by singuler combat to giue refusall to his face: which singuler perseueration in defence of her chastitie inexpugnable, esclaritheth to the whole flocke of womankind the brighte beames of wisdom, vertue and honestie. No prayers, intreatie, suplication, teares, sobbes, sighes, or other like humaine actions, poured forth of a princesse hart, could withdraw her from the bounds of honestie. No promise, present, practise, deuise, sute, freinde, parent, letter, or counsellour, could make her to stray oute of the limites of vertue. No threate, menace, rigour, feare, punishmente, exile, terror, or other crueltie, could diuert her from the siege of constancie. In her youthly time till her mariage day, shee delighted in virginitie: from her mariage day during her widow state, she reioysed in chastity: the one she conserued like a hardie Cloelia, the other she kept like a constant Panthea. This notable historie therfore I haue purposed to make common, aswel for encouragement of ladies to imbrace constancie, as to imbolden them in the refusall of dishonest sutes, for which if they do not acquire semblable honour, as this lady did, yet they shall not be frustrate of the due reward incidente to honour, which is fame and immortall prayse. Gentlemen may learne by the successe of this discourse, what tormentes be in loue, what trauailes in pursute, what passions like ague fittes, what disconueniences, what loste labour, what plaints, what

griefes: what vnnatural attemptes be forced. Many other notorious examples be containd in the same, to the greate comforte and pleasure as I trust, of the wel aduised reader: and although the auctour of the same, perchaunce hath not rightlye touched the proper names of the aucthours of this tragedie, by perfecte appellations: as Edward the third for his eldest sonne Edward the prince of Wales (who as I read in Fabian) married the countesse of Salesburie, which before was countesse of Kent, and wife vnto sir Thomas Holland: and whose name, (as Polidore sayth) was Iane, daughter to Edmond earle of Kent, of whom the same prince Edward begat Edward that died in his childish yeres, and Richard that afterwards was king of England the second of that name, and for that shee was kin to him, was deuorced: whose sayde father married Philip, doughter to the earle of Henault, and had by her vii. sonnes: and Ælips for the name of the sayde countesse, beinge none suche amonges our vulgare termes, but Frosard remembreth her name to be Alice, which in deede is common amonges vs: and the castell of Salesburie, where there is none by that name, vppon the frontiers of Scotlande, albeit the same Frosard doth make mention of a castell of the earle of Salesburie's, giuen vnto him by Edward the third when he was sir William Montague and married the saide lady Alice for his seruice and prowesse against the Scottes: and Rosamburghe for Roxboroughe: and that the said Edward when hee saw that hee could not by loue and other perswasions attaine the countesse but by force, married the same countesse, which is altogether vntrue, for that Polydore and other aucthous do remember but one wife that hee had, which was the sayde vertuous queene Philip, with other like defaults: yet the grace of the historie for all those errors is not diminished. Whereof I thoughte good to giue this aduertisemente: and waying with my selfe that by the publishing hereof no dishonour can dedoune to the illustre race of our noble kinges and princes, ne yet to the blemishinge of the fame of that noble king, eternized for his victories and vertues in the auncient annales, chronicles and monuments, forren and domesticall, (because all nature's children be thral and subiecte to the infirmities of their first parentes,) I do

with submission humbly referre the same to the iudgement and correction of them, to whom it shall appertain: which being considered, the nouell doth begin in this forme and order.

THERE was a kinge of Englande named Edward, which had to his first wyfe the doughter of the counte of Henault, of whom hee had children, the eldest whereof was called also Edward, the renowned prince of Wales, who besides Poitiers subdued the French men, toke Iohn the French king prisoner, and sent him into England. This Edward father of the prince of Wales, was not onely a capitall ennemie of the Frenchmen, but also had continual warres with the Scottes his neighbours, and seing himself so disquieted on euery side, ordayned for his lieutenaunt vpon the frontiers of Scotland, one of his captaynes, named William, lord Montague: to whom because he had fortified Roxborough, and addressed many enterprises against the enemies, he gaue the earldome of Sarisburie, and married him honourably with one of the fairest ladies of England. Certaine dayes after, kinge Edward sent him into Flaunders, in the companie of the earle of Suffolke, where fortune was so contrarie, as they were both taken prisoners, by the Frenchmen, and sente to the Loure at Paris. The Scottes hearing tell of their discomfiture, and how the marches were destitute of a gouernour, they speedely sente thether an armie, with intent to take the countesse prisoner, to rase her castle, and to make bootie of the riches that was there. But the earle of Sarisburie before his departure, had giuen so good order, that their successe was not such as they hoped: for they wer so liuely repelled by them that wer within, as not able to endure their furie, in steede of making their approches, they were constrayned to go further of. And hauinge intelligence by certaine spies, that the king of England was departed from London, with a great armie, to come to succour the countesse, perceyuinge that a farre of, they were able to do litle good, they were faine shortly to retire home again to their shame. King Edward departed from London, trauiayling by great iourneyes with his armye towardes Sarisburie, was aduertized, that the Scottes were discamped, and fled againe into Scotland. Albeit they had so spoyled the castle in manye places, as the markes gaue sufficiente witnesse, what their intent

and meaning was. And although the king had thoughte to retourne backe againe vpon their retire, yet being aduertised of the great battrie, and of the hotte assault they had giuen to the castell, he went forth to visit the place. The countesse whose name was Ælips, vnderstanding of the kinges comming, causing all things to bee in so good readinesse, as the shortnesse of the time could serue, furnished her selfe so well as shee could with a certaine number of gentlewomen and souldiours that remained, to issue forth to meete the king, who besides her natural beautie, for the which she was recommended aboue all the ladies of her prouince, was enriched with the furniture of vertue and curtesie, which made her so incomparable, that at one instant, shee rauished the hartes of all the princes and lordes that did behold her, in such wise, as there was no talke in all the armie but of her graces and vertue, and specially of her excellent and surpassing beauty. The king hauing made reuerence vnto her, after hee had well viewed all her gestures and countenances, thoughte that hee had neuer seen a more goodlier creature. Then rapte with an incredible admiration he said vnto her: "Madame countesse, I do beleue, that if in this attire and furniture wherein you now be, accompanied with so rare and excellent beautie, ye had bene placed vpon one of the rampiers of your castell, you had made more breaches with the lokes and beames of your sparkling eyes, in the hartes of your ennemys, than they had bene able to haue done in your castel, with their thundring ordinaunce." The countesse somewhat shamefast and abashed, to heare herselfe so greatly praysed of a prince so greate, began to blushe and taint with roseall colour, the whitenesse of her alablaster face. Then lifting vp her bashfull eyes, somewhat towards the king, she said vnto him: "My soueraigne lord, your grace may speake your pleasure, but I am well assured, that if you had seen the number of shotte, which by the space of xii. houres were bestowed so thicke as hayle, vpon euery part of the fort, you might haue iudged what good wil the Scots did beare vnto mee and my people. And for my selfe I am assured, that if I had made proufe of that which you saye, and submitted my selfe to their mercie, my bodye nowe had been dissolued into duste." The king astonned wyth so sage and wise aunswere, chaunging

his minde, went towarde the castell: where after interteignement and accustomed welcome, he began by litle and litle, to feele himselfe attached wyth a newe fier. Which the more he laboured to resist, the more it inflamed: and feelinge this new mutacion in himselfe, there came into his minde, an infinite number of matters, balancing betweene hope and feare, somtimes determining to yeld vnto his passions, and somtimes thinking clerely to cut them of, for feare least by committinge himselfe to his affections, the vrgent affayres of the warres, wherewith hee was inuolued, should haue ill successe. But in the ende vanquished wyth loue, hee purposed to proue the hart of the countesse, and the better to attayne the same he toke her by the hande, and prayed her to shewe him the commodities of the fortresse. Which shee did so well, and with so good grace intertaine them all the whyle wyth infinite talke of diuers matters, that the litle grifts of loue which were scarcely planted, began to growe so farre as the rootes remayned fast grounded in the depthe of his harte. And the kyng not able any longer to endure such a charge in his minde, pressed with grieve, deuised by what meanes he might enioye her, which was the cause of his disquiet. But the countesse seing him so pensife, without any apparaunt occasion, sayde vnto him: "Sir, I doe not a litle maruell, to see you reduced into these alterations: for (me thinke) your grace is maruelously chaunged within these two or thre houres, that your highnes vouchsaued to enter into this castel for my succour and reliefe in so good time, as al the dayes of my life, both I and mine be greatly bound vnto you, as to him which is not onely content liberally to haue bestowed vpon vs the goods which we possesse, but also by his generositie, doth conserue and defend vs from the incursions of the enemie. Wherein your grace doth deserue double prayse, for a deede so charitable: but I cannot tell nor yet devise, what should bee the cause that your highnesse is so pensife and sorowful, sith without great losse on your parte, your enemies vnderstandinge of your stoute approche, be retired, which ought, as I suppose, to driue awaye the melancholie from your stomacke, and to reuoke your former ioy, for so much as victorie acquired withoute effusion of bloud, is alwayes most noble and acceptable before God." The king hearing

this angel's voyce, so amiably pronouncing these words, thinking that of her owne accord shee came to make him mery, determined to let her vnderstand his grieve, vpon so conueniente occasion offred. Then with a trembling voice he said vnto her: "Ah madame, how farre be my thoughtes farre differente from those which you do thincke me to haue: I feele my hart so opprest with care, as it is impossible to tell you what it is, howbeit the same hath not beene of long continuaunce, being attached therewithall, since my comminge hither, which troubleth me so sore, as I cannot tell whereupon well to determine." The countesse seing the king thus moued, not knowing the cause whye, was vncertaine what aunswere to make. Which the king perceyuing, said vnto her, fetching a deepe sighe from the bottome of his stomacke: "And what say you madame thereunto, can you giue mee no remedie?" The countesse, which neuer thoughte that any such discourtesie could take place in the kinge's hart, taking things in good part, said vnto him: "Syr, I know not what remedie to giue you, if first you do not discouer vnto me the grieve. But if it trouble you, that the Scottishe kinge hath spoyled your countrie, the losse is not soe greate, as therewith a prince so mightie as you be, neede to be offended: sithens by the grace of God, the vengeaunce lieth in your handes, and you may in time chasten him, as at other times you haue done." Whereunto the kinge seinge her simplicitie, aunswared: "Madame, the beginninge of my grieve ryseth not of that, but my wounde resteth in the inwarde parte of my harte, which pricketh mee so soore, as if I desire from henceforth to prolonge my life, I muste open the same vnto you, reseruing the cause thereof so secrete, as none but you and I must be partakers. I must now then confesse vnto you, that in comminge to your castell, and castinge downe my head to behold your celestially face, and the rest of the graces, wherewith the heauens haue prodigally endued you, I haue felt (vnhappy man as I am) such a sodaine alteration, in al the most sensible partes of my body, as knowing my forces diminished, I cannot tel to whom to make complaint of my libertie lost (which of long time I haue so happily preserued) but onely to you, that like a faithfull keeper and onely treasurer of my hart, you may by some shining beame of pitie bring againe to

his former mirth and ioye, that which you desire in me: and by the contrarie, you may procure to me a life more painefull and greivous, than a thousand deathes together." When he had ended these woordes, hee helde his peace, to let her speake, attendinge none other thing by her aunswere, but the last decree either of death or life. But the countesse with a grauitie conformable to her honestie and honour, without other mouing, said vnto him: " If any other besides your grace had been so forgetful of himselfe to enter in these termes, or to vse such talke vnto me, I knowe what should be mine aunswere, and so it might be, that he shoulde haue occasion not to be well contented, but knowing this your attempt to proceede rather from the pleasantnes of your hart, than for other affection, I wil beleue from henceforth, and perswade my selfe, that a prince so renowned and gentle as you be, doth not thincke, and much lesse meane, to attempt any thing against mine honour, which is a thousand times dearer vnto mee than life. And I am perswaded, that you do not so litle esteeme my father and my husband, who is for your seruice prisoner in the hands of the Frenchmen, our mortal enemies, as in their absence to procure vnto them such defamation and slaunder. And by making this request, your grace doth swarue from the bounds of honestie very farre, and you do greate iniury to your fame, if men should know what termes you do vse vnto me. In like maner, I purpose not to violate the faith, which I haue giuen to my husband, but I intend to keepe the same vnspotted, so long as my soule shalbe caried in the chariot of this mortall body. And if I should so far forget my self, as willingly to commit a thing so dishonest, your grace oughte for the loyal seruice of my father and husband toward you, sharpely to rebuke me, and to punish me according to my desert. For this cause (most dradde soueraigne lord) you which are accustomed to vanquishe and subdue other, bee nowe a conquerour ouer your selfe, and throughly bridle that concupiscence (if there be any) vnder the raynes of reason, that being quenched and ouercome, they may no more reuiue in you, and hauing liuely resisted the first assaultes, the victorie is but easie, which shalbe a thousande times more glorious and gainefull for you, than if you had conquered a kingdome." The countesse

had scarce made an ende of her tale, but one came to tell them that the tables were couered for dinner: the king well fedde with loue, dined for that time very soberly, and not able to eate but vpon amorous dishes, did caste his lokes inconstantly here and there, and still his eyes threw the last loke vpon that part of the table, where the countesse sate, meaninge thereby to extinguish the boiling flames, which incessantly did burne him, howbeit by thinking to coole them, he further plunged himselfe therein. And wandering thus in diuers cogitacions, the wise aunswere that the countesse made, like a vaunt currou, was continually in his remembrance, and was well assured of her inuincible chastitie. By reason whereof, seing that so hard an enterprise required a longer abode, and that a hart so chaste, could not so quicklye be remoued from purpose, carefull on the other side to giue order to the waightie affayres of his realme, disquieted also on euery side, through the turmoile of warres, determined to depart the next day in the morning, reseruing till another time more conuenient the pursute of his loue. Hauing taken order for his departure, in the morning he wente to seeke the countesse, and taking his leaue of her, praied her to thinke better of the talke made vnto her the day before, but aboue al, he besought her to haue pitie vpon him. Wherunto the countesse aunswered, that not onely shee praied God incessantly to giue him victory ouer his outward enemies, but also grace to tame the carnal passion, which did so torment him. Certaine dayes after that king Edward was arriued at London, which was the place of his ordinarie abode, the countesse of Sarisburie was aduertised, that the earle her husband, being out of pryson, consumed with griefe and sicknes, died by the way homewards. And because they had no children, the earledome retourned to the kinge, which first gaue the same vnto him. And after she had lamented the death of her husband the space of manye dayes, shee returned to her father's house, which was earle of Warwike. And for so much as he was one of the kinge's priue counsel, and the most part of the affayres of the realme passed by his aduise and counsell, he continued at London, that hee might be more neare vnto the kinge's person. The king aduertised of the comming of the countesse, thoughte that fortune had opened a way to bring his

enterprise to desired effect, specially for that the death of her husband, and the witness of his earnest good will, would make her more tractable. The king seeing all thing (as he thought) to succeed after his desire, began to renew his first affections, seeking by all means to practise the good will of the countesse, who then was of the age of xxvi. yeares. Afterwards he ordeyned many triumphes at the tilt and torney, maskes, momeries, feastes, banquettes, and other like pastimes, whereat ladies accustomed doe assemble, who made much of them all, and secretly talked wyth them. Notwithstanding he could not so well disguise and counterfaite his passions, but that hee still shewed himselfe to beare beste good will to the countesse. Thus the king could not vse such discretion in loue, but that from his secret fier, some euident flames did issue oute: but the countesse which was a wise and curteous ladye, did easely perceiue, how the king by chaunging the place, had not altered his affection, and that hee still prosecuted his talke begon at Sarisburie. She despising all his amorous countenaunces, continued her firme and chaste minde: and if it chaunced that sometimes the king made more of her than discretion required, sodainly might haue been discried a certaine paleness in her face, which declared the litle pleasure that shee toke in his toyes, with a certaine rigor appearinge, that yelded to the king an assured testimonie that he laboured in vaine. Neuertheless, she, to cut of all means of the kinges pursute, kept still her father's house, shewing herselfe in no place where the king might see her. The king offended, seeing himselfe deprived and banished her presence, whom he esteemed as the comfort of his life, made his secretarie priue to the whole matter, whose fidelity he had well proued in matters dangerous, with mind to pursue her by other way, if it chaunced that she persisted in her wonted rigor and refusal. Howbeit before he proceded any further, sithe he could not secretly talke with her, he purposed to send her a letter, the tenor whereof insueth:

“MADAME, if you please by good aduise to consider the beginning of my loue, the continuance of the same, and then the last issue wherunto it tendeth, I am assured that laying your hand on your hart, you wil accuse your selfe, not only of your curst and froward

stomacke hitherto appearing, but also of that newe ingratitude, which you shewe vnto me at this houre, whoe not contented to bathe and plondge mee into the missehappe of my paines paste, but by a newe onset, to abandon your selfe from my presence, as from the sighte of your mortall ennemie: wherein I finde that heauen and all his influences, doe crie out for myne ouerthrowe, whereunto I doe agree, since my life taking no vigor and increase, being onely sustained by the fauour of your diuine graces, can not be maintained one onely minute of a daye, without the liberall helpe of your sweetnesse and vertue: beseching you, that if the hartie prayers of any mortal tormented man, may euer haue force and power to moue you to pitie, it may please you miraculously to deliuer from henceforth this my poore miserable afflicted mynde, either from death or martyrdome:

He that is more yours than his owne,
Edward, the desolate king of England."

The letter written with his own hande, and sealed with his seale, he commaunded the secretarie to go to the countesse, at her father's house, and secretly to deliuer the same. The countesse hauing red and perused it, sayd to the secretarie: "My frende, you shall tell the kyng, that I doe besech him most humbly, to sende me no more letters or messages touching the matters whereof he hath written: for I am in such wise resolued in the aunswere, which I made him in my castle, as I wyll persiste immutable, to the ende of my life." The secretarie retorninge the aunswere of the countesse, the king rapte with an impacient and extreme choler, desired eftsones to giue another attempt: and consuming by litle and litle in this amorous fier, began to sort out of the limits of reason. And almoste out of his wittes, demaunded of his secretarie: "Do you thinke it expedient that I make request to her father, whose counsell I want in other thinges?" To whome the secretarie boldly aunswered, that he thought it vnreasonable to seeke ayde at a father's handes to corrupt the doughter: faithfully telling to the king, the reproche and infamie that would followe thereof, as well for the olde seruice, that her father hadde done to his auncestours, as for his great prowesse in armes for which he was so greatly commended. But loue, the mortall enimie of all

good counsell, so blinded the eyes of the kyng, that without anye further deliberation, he commaunded the secretarie to go seke the father, to demaunde his counsell for matters of importance: whiche the earle vnderstanding, obeyed incontinently, where the king alone in a chamber lying vpon a bed, after hee had commaunded him to shut the dore and to sit downe by hym, sayde these wordes: " My lorde, I haue caused you to come hither for a certaine occasion, whiche toucheth me so nighe, as the losse or preservation of my life. For neuer through any assault of fortune (the sharpenesse wherof I haue often felt) haue I bene vanquished with so great disquiet, as nowe. For I am so vexed with my passions, as being ouercome by them, I haue none other refuge, but to a most vnhappy death that euer man can suffer, if presently I be not holpen. Knowe ye therefore, that I deeme him onely to be happy that by reason can rule his wyttēs, not suffering hym selfe to be caried into vayne desires: in whiche pointe wee do differ from beastes, who being lead onely by naturall order, doe indifferently runne headlong, whether their appetite doth guide them: but we with the measure of reason, ought to moderate our doinges with suchie prouidence, as without straying we may choose the right waye of equitie and iustice: and if at any time, the weake fleshe doth faint and giue ouer, we haue none to blame but our selues: who deceiued by the fading shadow and false apparaunce of things, fal into the ditche by our selues prepared. And that which I do alleage, is proued, not without manifest reason, wherof I nowe doe fele experience, hauing let slip the raynes of the bridle to farre ouer my disordinate affections, beyng drawen from the right hande, and traiterously deceiued. And neuerthesse I can not tell howe to retire to take the right waye, or howe to retourne my back from that which doth me hurt. Wherefore nowe (vnfortunate and miserable that I am) I acknowledge my selfe to be like vnto him, that followeth his game in the thicket of a woode, rushing through thicke and thynne at all aduentures, not knowing howe to finde the waye he entred in, but rather the more he desireth to followe the trace, the more in the ende he is wrapped in the bushes. So it is my lorde, that I can not and may not for all my foresayd allegations, so colour my fault, or purge myne error, but that

I must confesse and acknowledge it to be in me: but I speake to this ende, that seeking a farre of the originall of my grieffe, you would helpe me to complayne, and thereby to take pitie vpon me. For to tell you the truthe, I am so intricated in the labarinthe of my vnbrideled will, as the more I doe aspire to the better (alas) the worsse I am. Haue not I good cause to complaine my lorde, that after so manye famous victories achiened by sea and lande, wherewith I haue renowned the memorie of my name in all places, am now bound and daunted with an appetite so outrageous, as I can not helpe my selfe, whereby myne owne life, or rather death, is consumed in suche anguishe and mortall paine, as I am become the very mansion of all mischiefes, and onely receptacle of all miseries? What sufficient excuse for my fault may I henceforth alleage, that in the end will not display it to be both vnprofitable and voyde of reason? But what shall be the buckeler of my shame, if not my youthly age, whiche pricketh me forewarde to loue like a sharpe nedle, the force whereof I haue so ofte repelled, as nowe being vanquished, I haue no place for rest, but in thy mercy, who in my father's dayes diddest liberally spende thy blood, in manye notable enterprises in his seruice, whiche afterwarde thou haste so well continued, that in many daungerous affaires, I haue diuers times proued the fidelitie of thy counsell, whereby I haue brought to passe thinges of great importaunce, and therein hitherto neuer founde thee slacke and vnfaythfull. Whiche when I remember doe prouoke me to be bolde to declare vnto you mine entent, whiche by your onely worde you may procure, the fruite whereof being gotten, you shall winne the heart of a king, to be vsed as you liste for euer. And the more the thing shal seeme harde, difficult or painefull, the greater shall your merite be, and the more firmly shall he be bounde, whiche doth receiue it. Consider then my lorde, howe profitable it is, to haue a king at your commaundement. You haue also foure sonnes, whom you can not honourably aduaunce with out my fauour: swearing vnto you by my regall scepter, that if you comfort me in these my troubles, I will endue the three yongest with so large possessions, as they shall haue no cause to be offended with their eldest brother.

Remember likewise, what rewardes I haue bestowed vpon them that serue me. And if you haue knowen how liberall I haue bene towards other, thinke then I praye you, how bountiffully you bynde me towards you, vpon whome my life and death dependeth." The king ending his sorowfull complainte, stopped by sobbes and sighes, helde his peace. And the earle who tenderly loued his prince, hearing this pitifull discourse, (the faithfull witnesse of his inward passion) and not able to coniecture the occasion, was maruellously troubled in him selfe, and without longer aduise, ouercome with pitie, he made a liberall and very sodayne offer to the king of his life, his children, and of all that he was able to doe. " Commaunde, my soueraigne lorde (quod he with weeping teares) what it shall please you to haue me doe, if it be, euen to bestowe my life for your sake. For by the faith and fealtie that I do owe to God and to your grace, I sweare, that many dayes and yeares paste, I haue bound my selfe inuiolably, and all mine abilitie without exception, so long as this tongue is able to sturre, and breath shall remaine within this bodye, faithfully and truely to serue your maiestie, not onely for that duetie bindeth me, but if it were for your sake, to transgresse and excede the bondes of mine honour." But the good olde earle, whiche neuer thought that a request so vniust and dishonest would haue proceeded out of the mouth of a king, with franke and open harte made that liberall offer. The king then hauing sounded the depth of the earle's affection, chaunging colour, his eyes fixed on the ground, sayde vnto him: " Your doughter the countesse of Sarisburie, (my lorde) is the onely medicine of my trauayles, whome I doe loue better than mine owne life, and do feele my selfe so inflamed with her heauenly beautie, as without her grace and fauour I am not able hereafter to liue: for this consideration, sith you desire to doe me seruice, and to preserue my life, I pray you to deale with her, that she with compassion may looke vpon me. Crauing this request at your handes, not without extreme shame, considering as well your honorable state, as your auncient merites imploied vpon me and my progenitours: but according to your modestie and accustomed goodnesse, impute the faulte vpon amorous loue,

which in such wise hath alienated my libertie, and confounded my heart, that now ranging out of the boundes of honour and reason, I feele my selfe tormented and vexed in mynde. Whereby I am prouoked to make this request, and not able to expel the mortall poyson out of my hart, which hath diminished my force, intoxicated my sense, and hath depriued my minde from all good counsell, as I can not tell what to doe but to seeke to you for helpe, hauing no kinde of rest but when I see her, when I speake of her, or thinke vpon her. And I am at this present reduced into so pitiful plight as being not able to wyne her by intreaties, offers, presentes, sutes, ambassages and letters, my onely and last refuge and assured port of all my miseries, resteth in you, either by death to ende my life, or by force to obtayne my desire." The earle hearing the vnciuile and beastly demaunde of his soueraigne lorde, blushing for shame, and throughly astonned, filled also with a certaine honest and vertuous disdayne, was not able to dissolue his tongue to render a worthy aunswere to the afflicted prince. Finally, like one awaked from his dead sleepe, he said vnto him: " Sir, my wittes fayle, my vertue reuolteth, my tongue is mute, at the wordes that proceede from you, whereby I fele my selfe brought into two so straunge and perillous pointes, as passing either by one or other, I must nedes fall into very great daunger. But to resolue vpon that which is most expedient, hauing geuen vnto you my faithe in pledge, to succour and helpe you euen to the abandoning of honor and life, I will not be contrarie to my woordes. And touching my daughter, for whom you make request, I will reueale vnto her the effecte of your demaunde: yet of one thing I must tell you, sir, power I haue to entreate her, but none at all to force her. Inough it is that she vnderstand of me, what hart and affection you beare vnto her. But I doe maruell, yea and complaine of you, pardon me (most drad soueraigne) and suffer me without offence to discharge my grief before your presence, rather than to your shame and mine eternal infamie, it should be manifested and published abroad by other. I say, that I maruell, sir, what occasion moued you to commit such reproch in my stock and bloud, and by an act so shamefull and lasciuious, to dishonor

the same: whiche neuer disdained to serue both you and yours, to the vttermost of their powers. Alas, vnhappy father that I am, is this the guerdon and recompence that I and my children shall expect for our trusty and faithfull seruice? Oh sir, for God's sake, if you liste not to be liberall of your owne, seke not to dishonour vs, and to inflict vpon our race such notable infamie. But who can loke for worse at the handes of his mortall and cruell enemie? It is you, euen you it is (most noble prince) that doth ravishe my daughter's honor, dispoyle me of my contentation, ye take from my children hardinesse to shewe their faces, and from all our whole house, the auncient fame and glorie. It is you that doth obscure the clearenesse of my bloud, with an attempt so dishonest and detestable, as the memorie thereof shall neuer be forgotten. It is you that doth constraine me to be the infamous minister of the totall destruction of my progenie, and to be a shamelesse Pandarus of my daughter's honor. Doe you thinke to helpe and succour me, when others shall attempt to obiection vnto my face this slaunder and reproche? but if your selfe doe hurt me, where shall I hereafter seke reliefe and succour. If the hande which ought to helpe me, be the very same that doth geue me the wounde, where shall the hope bee of my recouerie? For this cause, may it please your maiestie, whether iustlie I doe make my complainte, and whether you geue me cause to aduaunce my cries vp into the heauens, your selfe shall be the iudge: for, if like a iudge in deede you doe geue ouer your disordinate affection, I then appeale to the iudgement of your inuincible minde, of late accomplished with all curtesie and gentlenesse. On the other side, I doe lament your fortune, when I thinke vpon the reasons which you haue alleaged, and the greater cause I haue to plaine, because I haue knowen you from your youth, and haue alwayes deemed you at libertie and free from such passions, not thral or subiect to the flames of loue, but rather geuen to exercise of armes. And now seing you to become a prisoner of an affection vnworthy your estate, I can not tell what to thinke, the noueltie of this sodain chaunce semeth to be so straunge. Remember sir, that for a litle suspicion of adulterie, you caused Roger Mortimer to be put to death. And

(being skarce able to tell it without teares) you caused your owne mother miserable to die in pryson: and God knoweth howe simple your accusations were, and vpon howe light ground your suspicion was conceiued. Do not you knowe howe wounderfully you be molested with warres, and that your enemies trauell day and night to circumuent you, both by sea and lande? Is it nowe tyme then to geue your selfe to delightes, and to captiuate your mynde in the pleasures of ladies? Where is the auncient generositie and nobilitie of your blood? Wher is magnanimitie and valour, wherewith you haue astonned your ennemies, shewed your self amiable to your frendes, and wonderfull to your subiectes? Touching the last point, wherein you threaten, that if my doughter doe not agree to your desire, you will forcibly enioye her, I can neuer confesse that to be the fact of a valiaunt and true king, but of a vile, cowardly, cruell and libidinous tyraunt. I trust it be not the pleasure of God, that nowe at the age you be of, you wil begin to force gentlewomen that be your humble subiects, which if you do, this iland shall lose the name of a realme, and hereafter shalbe deemed none other, but a sanctuarie of theues and murderers. If then, (to conclude this my sorowefull and heauie complaint) you may, or can by your flatteries, promisses and presentes, allure my doughter to your vnbri-deled appetites, I shall haue occasion to bewayle her dishonestie, and to deeme her, as an incontinent daughter, degenerated from the vertues of her progenitors. But touching your owne persone, I haue nothing to saye, but that herein you doe followe the common sort of men, that be suters to ladies, willing to please their fansies. There resteth onely nowe for me to aunswere the fauour, whiche in time to come you promise to me and my children: I couet not after any thing reprochfull to me or them, or to any of our posteritie, that may make vs ashamed, knowing in what contempt and reputation they be, which being borne of base parentage, be arriued to goods and honour, by gratifying and obeying princes and kinges in their dishonest lustes and appetites. Remember sir, that within these fewe dayes, being in campe against the Scottes, you vpbrayded a certaine man (which shalbe namelesse) for being a minister of your father's loue, who

from the state of a barber, was aduanced to the degree of an earle, and how you sayd, that if in time to come he amended not his manners, you would sende him to the shop againe. And for my part, I am of opinion, that honest pouertie hath euer bene the auncient and greatest inheritaunce amonges the noble Romaines, which if it be condemned by the ignoraunt multitude, and if we therefore should geue place, making greater accompt and estimation of riches and treasures, then of vertue: I doe say for mine own part, that by the grace of God, I am abundantly prouided, for the maintenance of me and mine, not like an ambitious man or couetous, but as one satisfied with the good wil of fortune. I do most humbly then besech you (sir) for conclusion, to take in good parte, that which my dutie and honour do constraîne me to speake. And so by your grace's leaue, I will departe towarde my daughter, to let her vnderstande from point to point your maiestie's pleasure." And without tarying for other replie of the kyng, he went his waye discoursing diuers thinges in his minde, vpon that which had passed betwene the king and him. The reasons which the earle had made, so pearced the affections of the passionate prince, as vncertaine what to saye, he condemned himselfe, knowing verie well, that the earle not onely vpon right and iust cause, had pronounced those wordes: but also that he had done the office of a faithfull seruaunt and trustie counsellor, in suche sort, as feling his conscience touched at the quicke, he could not excuse himself from committing a dishonest charge to a father so commendable and vertuous in the behalfe of his daughter. Thus he determined to chaunge his opinion. Afterwardes when he had thrown forth many sighes, hee spake these wordes to himselfe. "O miserable man, cut of this amorous practise, howe arte thou defrauded of right sense to cast thy mynd vpon her, whom thou oughtest to vse with such reuerence as thou wouldest doe thine own proper sister, for the seruice which thou and thy progenitors haue receiued of the good earle her father? Open the eyes of thine vnderstanding and knowe thy selfe, geue place to reason, and reforme thy vnshamefull and disordinate appetites. Resist with al thy power this wanton will which doth enuiron thee.

Suffer not this tyrant loue to bewitch or deceiue thee." Sodainly after he had spoken those wordes, the beautie of the countesse representing it self before his eyes, made him to alter his minde again, and to reiect that which he before allowed, saying thus: " I feele in minde the cause of mine offence, and thereby doe acknowledge the wrong, but what shall I doe? si the I am not able any longer to withstande beautie, that cruell murderer, whiche doth force and maister mee so much? Let fortune then and loue doe what they list, the faire countesse shalbe myne, whatsoever come of it. Is it a notable vice in a kinge to loue his subiecte's daughter? Am I the first vpon whome such inconuenience hath come? This talke ended, he deluded himself, and thinking vpon the contrary, he accused himself again, and then from this he altered again to the other. And being in this perplexitie, he passed daye and night, with such anguish and dolor, as every man doubted his health: and floting thus betwene hope and dispaire, he resolued in thend to attend the father's answer. The earle then being gone out of the king's chambre, aggrauated with sorowfull thoughtes, full of rage and discontent, thought good to delay the matter till the next day, before he spake to his daughter: and then calling her vnto him, and causing her to sit against him, he reasoned the matter in such wise. " I am assured, deare daughter, that you will no lesse maruell than be astonned, to heare what I shal say vnto you, and so much the more, when you doe see, how farre my tale shall excede the order of reason. But for so much as of twoo euils the least is to be chosen, I doubt not, but like a sage and wise woman, which I haue alwayes knowen you to be, you will stay vpon that whiche I haue determined. Touching my self, sith it hath pleased God to geue me knowledge of good and il, hitherto I haue still preferred honour before life, bicause (after mine opinion) it is a lesse matter to die innocently, than to liue in dishonour and shame of the world. But you know what libertie he hath, which is vnder the power of another, being sometime constrained to make faire weather of thinges not onely cleane contrarie to his mynde, but also (which is worse) against his owne conscience, being oftentimes forced according to the qualitie

of the tyme, and pleasure of the state, to chaunge his maners, and to put on newe affections. Whereof I haue thought good to put you in remembraunce, because it toucheth the matter, whiche I purpose to tell you. Thus it is (deare daughter) that yesterday after dynner, the kyng sent for mee, and being come before him, with a very instant and pitiful prayer, he required me (his eyes full of teares) to doe a thing for hym that touched his life. I whiche (besides that I am his subiecte and seruaunt) haue alwayes borne a particuler affection to his father and him, without deliberation what the matter should be, betrothed to him my faith to obey his request, if it coste me the price of mine honour and life. He assuring himselfe of my liberall promise, after many wordes ioyned with an infinite number of sighes, discovering vnto me the secrete of his harte, told me, that the torment which he indured, proceded no where els but of the feruent loue that he bare vnto you. But, O immortall God, what man of any discretion would haue thought that a king could be so impudent and vnshamefast, as to committe to a father a charge so dishonest towards his own daughter?" The earle hauing recited in order the historie past betwene hym and the kyng, sayde thus vnto her: "Consider you, swete daughter, myne vnaduised and simple promisse, and the vnbrideled mynde of an amorous kyng, to whome I made aunswere, that intreate you thereunto I was able, but force you I coulde not. For this cause (deare daughter) I doe praye you at this instant to obeye the kynges pleasure, and thereby to make a present by your father of your honest chastitie, so dearely estemed and regarded by you, specially, that the thing may so secretly be done as the fault be not bruted in the eares of other. Neuerthelesse, the choyse resteth in you, and the key of your honour is in your own hands, and that which I haue sayde vnto you, is but to kepe promise with the king." The countesse all the while that her father thus talked, chaunged her colour with a comly shamefastnesse, inflamed with a vertuous disdain, that he whiche had behold her then, would haue thought her rather some celestial goddesse than a humaine creature: and after long silence, with an humble grauitie she began thus to make her aunswere: "Your wordes haue so confounded me, and

brought me into such admiration (my lorde and right honourable father) that if all the partes of my bodie were conuerted into tongues, they could not bee sufficient worthely to expresse the least part of my sorrowe and disquietnesse: and truely very iustly may I complayne of you, for the litle estimation you haue of me, which am deriued of your owne fleshe: and for the ransome of the fraile and transitorie life which you haue geuen me vpon earth, you wyll for recompence nowe defraude me of myne honour: whereby I doe perceiue that not onely al nature's lawes be cancelled and mortified in you, but which is worse, you doe excede therein the cruelties of beastes, who for all their brutishenesse be not so vnnatural to do wrong to their owne yong, or to offer their fruite to the mercie of an other, as you haue done yours to the pleasure of a kyng: for notwithstandinge the straight charge and auctoritie whiche you haue ouer mee, to commaunde me being your right humble and very obedient daughter, yet you oughte to thinke and remember, that you haue neuer seene in mee any acte, mocion, signe, or woorde, to incite you to moue sutche dishonest talk. And although the king many times, with infinite number of prayers, presentes, messages and other such allurementes of persuasion hath displayed and vttered all the art of his mynde to seduce and corrupt me, yet he was neuer able to receiue other aunswere of me, but that honor was a thousand times derer vnto me then life, which still I meant to kepe secret from your knowledge euen as I haue done from other of mine aliaunce, for feare least you should be induced to commit some trespas, or conspire against our king, foreseing the straunge accidentes whiche haue chaunced for like matters, to the ruine of many cities and prouinces. But, good God, my doubt is nothing to purpose, sithe that your selfe is the shamelesse post of an act so dishonest: and to conclude in fewe wordes, daily I had good hope, that the king seing me at a point still to conserue my chastitie inuiolable he would giue ouer to pursue me any longer, and would haue suffered me hereafter to liue in quiet with mine equals, but if so be he doe continue obstinate in his olde folly, I am determined rather to die, than to doe the thing that shall hurt me and pleasure him: and for feare that he take from me by force

that which of mine owne accord I will not graunt, following your counsell, of twoo euilles I will chose the least, thinking it more honourable to destroy and kill my selfe with mine own handes, then to suffer such blot or shame to obscure the glorie of my name, being desirous to committe nothing in secrete, that sometime hereafter being published, may make me ashamed and chaunge colour. And wher you say that you haue sworne and gaged your faith to the king, for the assuraunce of your promise, it was very ill done, before you did consider, what power fathers haue ouer their children, whiche is so well defined by the lawe of God, as they be not bound to their parentes in that which is against his deuine commaundementes: muche lesse may they bynde vs to things incestuous and dishonest, which specially and straightly be inioyned vs not to perfourme, if we therunto be required: and it had bene farre more decent, and excusable before God, if when you made that foolyshe promise to the kyng you had promised him, rather to strangle mee with youre owne handes, than to consent to let me fall into a faulte so abhominable: and to thend I may tell you the last determination, and conclusion of that whiche I am determined by good aduise and immutable counsell: thus it is. You shall tell the king, that I had rather lose my life after the moste cruell and shamefull maner that may be deuised, then to consent to a thing so dishonest, hauing long time fixed this saying in mind, '*That honest death doth honor and beautifie the forepassed life.*'" The father hearing the wise aunswere of his daughter, gaue her his blessing, in his hart praysing her godly minde, beseching God to helpe her and to kepe her vnder his protection, and to confirme her in that holy and vertuous determination. Then feling him greatly comforted, he repaired to the king, to whom he said: "Pleaseth your grace, to thintent I might obserue my promise, I sweare by the faith that I doe owe vnto God and you, that I haue done what I can with my daughter, disclosing vnto her your whole minde and pleasure, and exhorting her to satisfie your request, but for a resolute aunswere she saith, that rather she is contented to suffer most cruell death than to commit a thing so contrarie to her honour. You know (sir) what I sayd vnto you still, that I might entreate her,

but force her I could not: hauing then obeied your commaundement, and accomplished my promise, it may please you to geue me leaue to go home to one of my castels, from henceforth to recline my self to quietnesse, and to ease my decrepite and feeble age." Which the king willingly graunted. The same daye hee departed from the courte with his sonnes and went home to his countrie, leauing at London his wife and daughter and the reste of his housholde, thinking therby to discharge himself of those thinges with out the kinge's displeasure. The king on the other side was no soner aduertised of the earle's departure, and that he had left his daughter behinde him at London, but he knew the father's minde and purpose, and fell in suche dispaire of his loue, as he was like to haue runne out of his wittes for sorrowe. The nightes and dayes were all one to him, for hee could take no rest, he gaue ouer vse of armes and administration of iustice, hunting and hauking, wherin before that time he had great delight: and all his study was many times to passe and repasse before the gate of the countesse, to proue if he might attaine to haue some sight of her: and thinges were brought to so pitifull state, that within fewe dayes the citizens and other gentlemen began to perceiue the raging loue of their prince, euery of them with common voice blaming the crueltie of the countesse that was vnmarried, who the more she proued the king inflamed with her loue, the more squeymish she was of her beautie. The peres and noble men seing their king reduced to such extremitie, moued with pitie and compassion, began secretly to practise for him, some with threatninges, some with flatteries and persuasions: some went to the mother, declaring vnto her the eternall rest and quiet prepared for her and all her friendes, if she would persuaide her daughter to encline to the kinge's mind, and contrariwyse the daunger imminent ouer her head. But all these deuises were in vayne, for the countesse moued no more then a harde rocke beaten with diuerse tempestes: and at lengthe seing that euery man spake diuersly, as their affections ledde them, shee was so troubled and pensife in harte, as fearing to bee taken, and that the kyng vanquished with his strong passion, by succession of tyme would vse his force, and violentlye oppresse her, founde meanes to get a great sharpe knife, whiche

she caried about her secretly vnder her gowne, of purpose, that if she sawe perill to be defloured, shee might kill her selfe. The courtiers offended with the martyrdome of their master, and desyrous to gratifie and seeke meanes to doe hym pleasure, conspyred all agaynst the earle's familie, lettyng the kynge to vnderstande that it were most expedient, for that thinges were out of hope, to cause Ælips to be brought to his palace, that there he might vse her by force. Wherunto the king (being dronke in his own passion) did willingly agree: notwithstanding, before hee passed any further, for that hee faithfully loued the countesse, he determined to aduertise her mother of that whiche he intended to doe, and commaunded his secretarie to go seke her with diligence, and without concealing any thing from her knowledge, to instructe her of the whole. The secretarie finding the mother of the countesse, said vnto her: "Madame, the king hath willed me to say vnto you that he hath done what he can, and more then his estate requireth, to win the grace and loue of your daughter, but for that she hath despised his long sute, disdained his presence, and abhorred his griefes and complaintes, knowing not what to do any more, his last refuge is in force, doing you to vnderstande hereof, to the intent that you and shee may consider what is to be done in this behalf: for he hath determined whether you will or no, to fetch her out openly by force, to the great dishonour, slaunder and infamie of al your kinne. And where in time past, hee hath loued and fauoured the earle your husband, he meaneth shortly to make him vnderstand what is the effect of the iust indignation of such a prince as he is." The good lady hearing this sodaine and cruell message, was astonned in such wise, as she thought how she sawe her daughter already trained by the heares of her head, her garments haled and torne in pieces, with rufull and lamentable voyce crying out to him for mercy: for this cause with blubbering teares, trembling for feare, she fell down at the secretarie's feete, and straightlye imbracing his knees, sayde vnto hym: "Maister secretarie, my deare louing friend: beseche the king in my name to remember the payne and seruice done by our auncestours. Intreate hym not to dishonoure my house in the absence of the earle my husbände: and if you be not able by your perswasion

to molifie his hard hart, desire him for a while to take pacience, vntill I haue aduertised my daughter of his will and pleasure, whom I hope to perswade, that shee shall satisfie the kinge's request." When she had made this aunswere, the secretary declared the same to the kinge, who madde with anger and passionned with loue, was content, and neuerthelesse commaunded his gentlemen to be in readinesse to seeke the countesse. In the meane time the mother of faire Ælips went to her daughter's chamber, and after she had commaunded all her maids, which accompanied her, to withdraw themselues out of the chamber, shee began in few woordes to recite vnto her the message done vnto her by the secretary: finally with sobbinge sighes she said vnto her: "The dayes haue been (deare daughter) that I haue seene thee to keepe thy state amonges the chiefeste of all the ladies of this realme: and I haue counted my self most happie that euer I did beare the in my wombe, and haue thoughte, by meanes of thy beautie and vertue, one day to see thee become the ioye and comfort of all thy frendes: but now my cogitacions be turned cleane contrary, through thine vnluckie fate: nowe I thincke thee to be borne not onely for the vniuersall ruine of all oure familie, but also (which greeneeth me most) to be an occasion and instrument of my death, and desolation of all thy frendes: but if thou wilt somewhat moderate thy rygor all this heauines shortly may be tourned to ioy: for our king and soueraign lorde is not onely in loue with thee, but for the ardent affection and amitie that he beareth thee, is out of his wittes, and now doth conspire against vs, as though we were traytors and murderers of our prince: in whose handes (as thou knowest) doth rest the life, honor and goods both of thy selfe and of vs all: and what glory and triumphe shall be reported of thee to our posterity, when they shal know how by thy obstinate crueltie, thou haste procured the death of thine old father, the death of thy hooreheaded mother, and the destruction of thy valiaunt and coragious brethren, and dispoyled the rest of thy bloud of their possessions and abilitie? But what sorrowe and griefe will it be, to see them wander in the world like vagabounds banished from their liuings, and remaine in continuall pouertie, without place and refuge of their miserie? who in steede of bless-

ing or prayeing the houre of thy birth, will curse the in their minds a thousand times, as the cause of all their ouerthrow and ill fortune. Thinke and consider vpon the same (deare daughter) for in thee alone resteth the conseruacion of our liues, and hope of all our frendes." This lamentable discourse ended, the afflicted countesse not able anye longer to resiste that pangue, began to waxe so faint as wyth her armes a crosse she fell downe halfe deade vpon her doughter: who seinge her without mouinge and without any apparaunce of life, and all the partes of her bodye to waxe cold, shee quicklye layde her downe, and then with helpe and other thinges apt for sowninges, shee made her come to herselfe againe, and thinking wholly to recouer her, she earnestly promised to do what she would haue her, saying vnto her: "Do awaye your teares (madame) moderate your tormentes, reuoke your former ioye, and be of good cheere, for I am disposed to obey you. God defende that I should be the cause of the paine which I see you to suffer: nowe am I ready to goe with you to the kinge, where if it shall please you, wee two withoute other company will do our owne errande and attempt the beginning of our enterprise." The mother full of ioye, lifting vp her hands to the heauens, tenderly embraced her daughter, and manye times did kisse her, and after shee had commaunded her coche to be made readye, shee wente forth with her doughter, accompanied onelye with two gentlewomen to the kinge's palace. Being come thither, they sente worde to the secretary, that brought her the message, who conducted them to the kinge's chamber, and presenting them before him, sayde: "Syr, beholde the companye which you haue so long time desired: who are come to do your grace humble reuerence." The king greatly astonied, went forth to meete them, and with ioyful countinaunce saide: "Welcome, lady countesse, and your long desired company. But what good fortune hath broughte you hither nowe?" The countesse hauing made her obeysance, yet all frighted with feare, aunswered him: "Beholde here my lorde your fayre Ælips so long time wished for, who taking repentaunce for her former cruelty and rigor, is come to render herselfe at your commaundement." Then the king beholding the yong countesse trembling for feare, like a leafe shaken with the winde (with her

eyes fixed on the ground) approaching neer her, toke her by the hande, and kissing her, sayd: " Welcome, my life and soule." But she no more moued than a fierce lion enuironed with cruell beastes, stode still and helde her peace, her harte so constrained for sorrow and despite, as she was not able to aunswere a word. The kinge who thoughte that such passion proceeded of shame, commaunded the gentlewomen, that were in her company, to departe the chamber, sauing the mother which broughte her to the entrie of his chamber, who withdrawing herselfe backe, left her to the mercy of loue and the kinge. So sone as the king was entred the chamber he shutte the doore after him. Which Ælips perceyuinge, beganne to feele a furious combate betweene her honour and life, fearing to be defloured, and seing her abandoned of al humane succour, falling downe prostrate at his feete, she sayd vnto him: " Gracious and redoubted prince, sithe my heauy fortune hath broughte mee hither, like an innocente lambe to the sacrifice, and that my parents amazed through your furie, are become rauishers of mee against my will, and contrary to the duety of their honor, haue deliuered me into your handes, I humbly beseech your maiestie, if there remaine in your noble personage any sparke of vertue and princely affection, before you passe any further to satisfie your desire, to let me proue and vnderstande by effecte, if your loue be such, as oftentimes by letters and mouth you haue declared vnto me. The requeste which I will make vnto you shall be but easie, and yet shall satisfie mee more than all the contentacion of the world. Otherwise (sir) doe not thincke that so longe as my life doth continue, I am able to do that which can contente your desire. And if my sute shall seeme reasonable, and grounded vpon equitie, before I doe open and declare the same more at large, assure the performauce thereof vnto me by oth." The king hearing her prayer to be so reasonable, wherunto rather then to refuse it, he swore by his scepter, taking God to witnesse and all the heauenly powers for confirmation of that which he pretended to promise: saide vnto her: " Madame, the onely maistresse and keper of my louing harte, sith of your grace and curtesie you haue vouchsafed to come vnto my palace, to make request of my onely fauoure and good will,

which now I irreuocably do consent and graunt, swearing vnto you by that honourable sacramente of baptisme, whereby I was incorporated to the Church of God, and for the loue that I beare you (for greater assuraunce I cannot giue) I will not refuse any thing, that is in my power and abilitie, to the intent you may not be in doubt whether I do loue you, and intend hereafter to imploy my selfe to serue and pleasure you: for otherwyse I should falsifye my faith, and more feruently I cannot bind my selfe if I shoulde sweare by all the othes of the worlde." The fayre countesse sitting still vpon her knees, although the king many times prayed her to rise vp, reuerently toke the king by the hand, saying: " And I do kisse this royal hand for loyall testimonie of the fauour which your grace doth shew me." Then plucking out a sharpe knife, which was hidden vnder her kirtle, all bathed and washed in teares, reclining her pitifull eyes towards the king, that was appalled with that sight, she said vnto him: " Sir, the gift that I require, and wherfore your faith is bound, is this. I most humblie desire you, that rather then to dispoile me of mine honour, with the sword girded by your side, you do vouchsafe to ende my life, or to suffer me presently, with this sharpe pointed knife in my hand to thrust it to my hart, that mine innocent bloud, doing the funerall honour, may beare witness before God of my vndefiled chastity, as being vtterly resolued honourable to die. And that rather then to lose mine honoure, I maye murther my selfe before you wyth this blade and knife in present hand." The king burning with amorous heate, beholding this pitifull spectacle, and consideringe the inuincible constancie and chastitie of the countesse, vanquished by remorse of conscience, ioyned with like pitie, taking her by the hand, said: " Rise vp lady, and liue from henceforth assured: for I will not ne yet pretende all the dayes of my life, to commit any thing in you against your will." And plucking the knife out of her hand, exclaimed: " This knife hereafter shall bee the pursiuant before God and men of this thine inexpugnable chastitie, the force whereof wanton loue was not able to endure, rather yelding place to vertue, which being not alienated from me, hath made me at one instant victorious ouer my selfe, which by and by I will make you to vn-

derstande to your greate contentacion and greater maruel. For assurance wherof I desire none other thing of you, but a chaste kisse." Which receyued, hee opened the doore and caused the countesse to come in with the secretarie and the gentlewomen, and the same time hee called also the courtiers and piers of the realme, which were then in the base court of the palace, among whom was the archbishop of Yorke, a man of great reputacion and singuler learning, to whom with the knife in his hand he recited particularly the discourse of his loue: and after he toke the countesse by the hande, and sayd vnto her: "Madame, the houre is come that for recompence of your honest chastitye and vertue, I wil and consent to take you to wife, if you thincke good." The countesse hearinge those wordes began to recoloure her bleake and pale face with a vermilion teinte and roseal rudde, and accomplished with incredible delight and ioye, falling downe at his feete, said vnto him. "My lord, for asmuch as I neuer loked to be aduanced to so honourable state as fortune nowe doth offer, for merite of a benefit so high and great which you present vnto me, vouchsauing to abase your selfe to the espousal of so poore a lady, your maiesties pleasure being such, behold me ready at your commaundement." The king taking her vp from kneeling on the ground, commaunded the bishop to pronounce with highe voice the vsual words of matrimonie. Then drawing a riche diamond from his finger, hee gaue it to the countesse, and kissing her, saide: "Madame, you be queene of England, and presently I doe giue you thirty thousande angells by the yeare for your reuenew. And the duchie of Lancaster being by confiscation fallen into my hands, I giue also vnto you, to bestowe vppon your selfe and your frends." At which inrolled according to the maner of the countrie, the king (accomplishing the mariage) rewarded the countesse for the rigorous interestes of his so long loue, with suche hap and content as they may iudge which haue made assay of like pleasure, and recovered the fruite of so long pursute. And the more magnificently to solemnize the mariage, the kinge assembled all the nobilitie of Englande, and somoned them to be at London the first day of July then folowinge, to beautifie and assist the nupcialles and coronation of the queene. Then he sente for the

father and brethren of the queene, whom he embraced one after another, honouring the earle as his father, and his sonnes as his brethren, whereof the earle wonderfully reioysed, seinge the conceyued hope of his daughter's honour sorted to so happie effecte, as well to the perpetual fame of him and his, as to the euerlasting aduauncement of his house. At the appointed day the queene was broughte from her father's house apparelled with royall vestures, euen to the palace, and conducted with an infinite number of lords and ladies to the church, where when seruice was done, the kinge was married (again) openly, and the same celebrated, shee was conveyed vp into a publike place, and proclaimed queene of England, to the exceeding gratulacion and ioye incredible of all the subiectes.

AN ADUERTISEMENT

TO THE READER.

AFTER these tragicall Nouelles and dolorous Histories of Bandello, I haue thoughte good for thy recreacion, to refresh thy mind with some pleasaunt deuises and disportes: least thy spirites and sences should be apalled and astonned with the sondrie kindes of cruelties remembred in the vij. of the former nouelles. Which be so straunge and terrible as they be able to affright the stoutest. And yet considering that they be very good lessons for auoyding like inconueniences, and apt examples for continuacion of good and honest life, they are the better to be borne with, and may with lesse astonnishment be read and marked. They that follow, be mitigated and sweetened with pleasure, not altogether so sower as the former be. Prayinge thee moste hartely, paciently to beare with those that shall occure, either in these that folow, or in the other that are past before.

THE FORTY-SEUENTH NOUELL.

A gentleman called Galgano, long time made sute to Madonna Minoccia: her husband sir Stricca (not knowing the same) diuers times praised and commended Galgano, by reason whereof, in the absence of her husband, she sent for him, and yelded herselfe vnto him, tellinge him what wordes her husbände had spoken of him, and for recompence he refused to dishonest her.

IN the citie of Siena in Italie there was a rich yong gentleman called Galgano, borne of noble birth, actiue, and wel trained in al kinde of exercise, valiaunt, braue, stoute and curteous, in the maners and orders of all countries verie skilfull. This Galgano loued a gentlewoman of Siena named Madonna Minoccia, the wyfe of sir Stricca a comely knight, and wore in his apparell the colour and deuises of his lady, bearing the same vppon his helmet and armour, in all iustes, tourneyes and triumphes, obseruing noble feastes and banquettes for her sake. But for all those costly, sumptuous and noble practises, this lady Minoccia in no wyse would giue eare vnto his sutes. Wherfore Galgano at his wittes ende, was voyde of aduise what to do or saye, seing the great crueltie and rigor raigning in her breste, vnto whom hee daylie prayed for better successe and fortune than to himselfe. There was no feast, banquet, triumph, or mariage, but Galgano was there, to do her humble seruice, and that daye his minde was not pleased and contented, wherein he had not seene her that had his louing harte in full possession. Very many times (like a prince that coueted peace) he sente ambassadours vnto her, wyth presentes and messages, but she (a proude and scornefull princesse) dayned neither to heare them or receiue them. And in this state stode this passionate louer a longe time, tormented with the exceeding hote loue and fealtie that he bare her. And many times making his reuerent complaints to loue, did say: "Ah loue, my deare and soueraigne lorde, how cruell and hard harted art thou, how vnumercifully dealest thou with me, rather how deafe be thine eares, that canst not recline the same to my nightly complaintes, and dailye afflictions;

How chaunceth it that I do in this maner consume my ioyfull dayes with pining plaintes? Why doest thou suffer me to loue, and not to be beloued?" And thus oftentimes remembringe the crueltie of loue, and his ladies tyrrany, hee began to dye in maner like a wight replete with despaire. But in fine, he determined paciently to abide the good time and pleasure of loue, still hoping to finde mercie: and daily gaue himselfe to practise and frequent those thinges that might be acceptable and pleasant to his lady, but shee still persisted inexorable. It chaunced that sir Stricca and his fayre wyfe, for their solace and recreation, repaired to one of their houses hard by Siena: and upon a time, Galgano passing by with a sparhauke on his fiste, made as though he went on hauking, but of purpose onely to see his lady. And as he was going by the house, sir Stricca espied him, and went forth to meete him, and familiarly taking him by the hand, prayed him to take parte of his supper with his wyfe and him: for which curtesie Galgano gaue him thanckes, and said: "Sir, I do thancke you for your curteous requeste, but for this time I pray you to hold me excused, because I am going about certaine affayres very requisite and necessary to be done." Then sayde sir Stricca: "At least wise drincke with mee before you depart." But giuing him thankes he bad him farewell. Maister Stricca seing that hee could not cause him to tary, toke his leaue, and retourned into his house. Galgano gone from maister Stricca, sayd to himselfe: "Ah, beast that I am, why did not I accept his offer? Why should shamefastness let me from the sight of her, whom I loue better than all the world besides." And as he was thus pensife in complaints his spaniells sprong a partrich, wherat he let flee his hauke, and the partrich flying into sir Stricca his garden, his hauke pursued and seassed vpon the same. Maister Stricca and his ladye hearinge that pastime, ranne to the garden window, to see the killing of the partrich: and beholding the valiante skirmishe betweene the foule and the hauke, the lady asked whose hauke it was: her husband made aunswere that he knew well inoughe the owner, by the goodnesse and hardines of the same. "For the owner of this hauke (quoth hee) is the trimmest and most valiaunt gentleman in all Siena, and one indued with beste qualities. The

lady demaunded what he was? "Maister Galgano (said her husband,) who euen now passed by the gate, and I prayed him very earnestly to supper, but hee woulde not be intreated. And truly wyfe, he is the comliest gentleman, and moste vertuous personage, that euer I knewe in my life." With those wordes they wente from the windowe to supper: and Galgano, when he had lured his hauke, departed awaye. The lady marked those words and fixed them in minde. It fortun'd within a while after, that sir Stricca was by the state of Siena sent in ambassage to Perugia, by reason wherof, his lady at home alone, so sone as her husband had taken his iourney, sent her most secrete and trustie maide, to intreat maister Galgano, to come and speake with her. When the message was done to Galgano, (if his heart were on a merie pinne, or whether his spirits dulled with continuall sorrowe were againe reuiued, they knowe that most haue felte the painefull pangues of loue, and they also whose flesh haue beene pearced with the amorous arrowes of the little boy Cupide:) hee made aunswere that hee would willingly come, rendringe thanckes both to the maistresse and maide, the one for her paine, and the other for her good remembraunce. Galgano vnderstanding that sir Stricca was gone to Perugia, in the eueninge at conuenient time, repaired to the house of her whose sight he loued better than his owne eyes. And being come before his lady, with great submission and reuerence hee saluted her, (like those whose hartes do throbe, as foretellinge the possession of good tournes and benefites, after which wyth longe sute and trauaile they haue aspired) wherewith the lady delighted, very pleasantly took him by the hande, and imbracing him, said: "Welcome mine owne sweet Galgano, a hundred times I say welcome." And for the time with kisses, makinge truce with their affections, the lady called for confictes and wyne. And when they had dronke and refreshed themselues, the lady toke him by the hande and said: "My sweete Galgano, night beginneth to passe awaye, and the time of sleepe is come, therefore let vs yeld our selues to the seruice and commaundement of our very good ladye, madame Cytherea, for whose sake I intreated you to come hither." Galgano aunswere, that he was very wel contented. Being within the chamber, after much pleasaunte talke and louing dis-

course betweene them, the lady did put of her clothes, and went to bed. Galgano being somewhat bashfull, was perceyued of the lady, vnto whom she said: "Me thincke, Galgano, that you be fearful and shamefast. What do you lacke? Do I not please you? Doth not my personage content you? Haue you not the thing which you desire?" "Yes madame," said Galgano: "God himself could not do me a greater pleasure, than to suffer me to be eleped within your armes." And reasoning in this sorte, he put of his clothes also, and laide himselfe by her, whom he had coueted and desired of long time. Being in the bed, he said: "Madame, I beseech you graunt me one resquest." "What is that, Galgano?" (quoth she.) "It is this madame," said Galgano: "I do much maruell, why this night aboue all other, you haue sent for mee: considering how long I haue bin a suter vnto you, and although I haue prosecuted my sute, by great expence and trauaile, yet you would neuer yelde before now: what hath moued you now thus to do?" The lady answered: "I wil tell you sir: true it is, that not many dayes agoe, passing by this house, with your hauke on your fiste, my husband told me that so sone as he sawe you, he went oute to meete you, of purpose to intreate you to supper, but you would not tarrie: then your hauke pursued a partrich, euen into my garden, and I seing the hauke so egerly seasing vpon the same, demaunded of my husband whose hauke it was. He told me that the hauke did belong to the most excellent yong man of all Siena: and that he neuer in all his life knewe a gentleman better accomplished with all vertues and good qualities, and therewithall gaue vnto you singuler prayse and commendacion. Wheruppon hearing him in such wise to prayse you, and knowing righte well your affectionate minde and disposition towards mee, my hart attached with loue, forced me to sende for you that I mighte hereafter auoyde disdaine and other scornfull demeaner, to impeache or hinder your loue: and this briefly is the cause." "Is this true?" said Galgano. "Most certaine and true," aunswereed the lady. "Was there no other occassion?" "No, verely:" said the lady. "God defend," (quoth Galgano,) "that I should recompence the curtesie and good will of so noble a gentleman (as your husband is) with reproch and villany. Is it meete that good

turnes should be requited with vnkindnes? If euer man had cause to defende the honor of his vnknowne frende, cause haue I right good and apte. For now knowinge such a frende, that would by vertuous reportes haue aduaunced me to higher matters, than wherof I am in possession, should I reward with pollution of his stocke and wife? No, no, lady! my raginge sute by loue, is by vertue quenched. Vertue onely hath staunched the flames of vile affections. Seeke another frende, to glut your lecherous minde. Finde out some other companion, to coole thy disordinate loue. Shal I be disloyal to him, that hath been faithfull vnto me? Shall I be traytor to him, that frendly hath commended me? What can be more required of humane hearte, or more desired of manlike minde, but wilfull bente, and fixed to do him good, that neuer erst by iuste desert deserued the same." With which wordes sodenly hee lept out of the bed, and when he had furnished himselfe againe with his apparell, hee also put vpon him vertuous frendship, and takinge his leaue of the lady, neuer after that time he gaue himselfe to matters of loue. And maister Stricca he continually obserued both with singuler loue and dutifull frendship: wherby it is vncertaine whether was most singuler in him, his continency at the very instante by refrayning that vehement heate of loue, which so long time with great trauaile and coste he had pursued, or his regard of frendship to sir Stricca vpon wordes of commendacion spoken behinde his backe. Both no doubt be singuler vertues meete for all men to be obserued: but the subduing of his affections surmounted and passed.

THE FORTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

Bindo a notable architect, and his sonne Ricciardo, with all his familie, from Florence went to dwell at Venice, where being made citizens for diuers monuments by them done there, throughe inordinate expences were forced to robbe the treasure house. Bindo beinge slaine by a pollicie deuised by the duke and state, Ricciardo by fine subtelties deliuereth himselfe from foure daungers. Afterwards the duke (by his owne confession) vnderstandinge the sleighes, giueth him his pardon, and his doughter in marriage.

IN the goodly citie of Venice there was once a duke, that was a noble gentleman and of greate experience and wisdom, called Valeriano di messer Vannozzo Accettani. In the chieftest church of which citie called San Marco, there was a steple, very faire and sumptuous, and of greatest fame of any thinge at that time that was in Venice, which steple was like to fall downe by reason of certaine faultes and decayes in the foundation. Wherefore the duke caused to be searched thorow out all Italie, some cunning workeman that would take in hand the reparacion and amendmente of the same: with promise of so much money as he would demaund for doing thereof. Whereuppon an excellent architect of Florence, named Bindo, hearing tel of this offer, determined to go to Venice for the accomplismente of that worke, and for that purpose with his onely sonne and wyfe, hee departed Florence. And when he had seene and surueyed the steple, he went straight to the duke, and told him that he was come thither to offer his seruice for repayringe of the same, whom the duke curteously intertayned and prayed him, that he would so sone as he coulde begin that worke. Whereunto Bindo accorded, and wyth great diligence and small time he finished the same, in better forme and suretie than it was at the first: which greatly pleased the duke, and gaue Bindo so much money as he demaunded, making him besides a citizen of Venice, for the mainenance of whose state, hee allotted him a sufficient stipend:

afterwards the duke called him vnto him, and declared that he would haue a treasure house made, wherein should be disposed and layde vp all the treasure and common ornamentes for the furniture of the whole citie, which Bindo by and by toke vppon him to do, and made it of such singuler beautie, as it excelled all the monumentes of the citie, wherein all the said treasure was bestowed. In which worke hee had framed a stone by cuninge, that mighte be remoued at pleasure, and no man perceiue it: meaning thereby to goe into the chamber when he liste: whereunto none in all the world was priuie but himselfe. When this palace and treasure house was done, he caused all the furnitures of silkes, hanginges wrought with golde, canapees, clothes of state, riche chayres, plate, and other ornamentes of golde and siluer to be caried thither, whiche he called La Turpea del Doge, and was kept vnder fise keyes: whereof foure were deliuered to foure of the chiefe citizens, deputed to that office, which were called chamberlaynes of the treasure house, and the fift keye the duke himselfe did keepe, so that the chamber coulde not bee opened excepte they were all fise presente. Nowe Bindo and his famelie dwelling at Venice, and beinge a citizen there, beganne to spende liberallye and to liue a riche and wealthye life, and hys sonne Ricciardo consumed disordinatelye, whereby in space of time, they wanted garmentes to furnishe their bodies, whiche they were not able to maintaine for their inordinate expences: wherefore the father vppon a night calling his sonne vnto him, got a ladder, and a certaine yron instrumente made for the purpose, and taking also with him a litle lime, went to the hole, which Bindo artificially had made, who taking out the stone, crept in, and toke out a faire cup of gold, which was in a closet, and afterward he wente out, cowching the stone againe in the same place. And when they were come home, they brake the cup and caused it to be solde by peece meale, in certaine cities of Lombardie. And in this sorte, they maintayned their disordinate life begonne. It chaunced not long after, that a cardinall arrived at Venice, about affayres with the duke, and the state, who the more honorable to receiue him, opened the treasure

house to take oute certaine furnitures within, as plate, clothes of state, and other thinges. When the dore was opened, and had taken out the saide necessities, they founde a cuppe lesse than oughte to be, wherewith the chamberlaines contended amonge themselues, and wente to the duke, telling him that there wanted a cuppe: wherewith the duke marueiled, and said that amonges them it must needes be gone. And after many denialls, and much talke, he willed them to saye nothing, till the cardinall was departed. When the cardinall was come, hee was receyued with honorable interteignemente, and beinge departed, the duke sente for the foure chamberlaines, to consult about the losse of the cup, commaunding them not to departe the palace before the same was found, saying that amonges them it muste needes be stolen. These foure persons being together, and debating how and by what meanes the cup should be taken away, were at their wittes ende. At length one of them saide: "Let vs consider whether there be anye comminge into the chamber besides the doore." And viewinge it they coulde not perceiue anye entrie at all. And to proue the same more effectuallye, they strawed the chamber aboute with fyne sifted chaffe, setting the same on fier, which done, they shutte fast the windowes and doores, that the smoke and smoulder might not goe out. The force of which smoke was sutch as it issued through the hole that Bindo made, whereby they perceiued the waye howe the robbery was committed, and went to the duke to tell him what they had done. The duke vnderstanding the fact, wylled them to saye nothing, for that he woulde deuise a pollicie howe to take the theefe: who caused to be brought into the chamber a caldron of pitche, and placed it directly vnder the hole, commaunding that a fyre should be kept daye and night, vnder the caldron, that the same might continually boyle. It came to passe that when the money was spent which the father and sonne had receiued for the cup, one night they went agayne to the hole, and remouing the stone, the father went in as he did before, and fell into the caldron of pitche (which continually was boyling there) vp to the waste, and not able to liue any longer, he called his sonne vnto him, and

sayde: "Ricciardo myne owne sweete sonne, death hath taken me prysoner, for halfe my body is dead, and my breath also is ready to departe. Take my head with thee, and burie it in some place that it be not knowen, which done, commend me to thy mother, whome I pray thee to cherishe and comforte, and in any wyse take hede that warely and circumspectlye thou doe departe from hence: and if any man do aske for me, say that I am gone to Florence about certaine businesse." The sonne lamentably began to lament his father's fortune, saying: "Oh deare father, what wicked furie hath thus cruelly deuised sodaine death." "Content thy selfe, my sonne," sayd the father, "and be quiet, better it is that one should dye, than twoo, therefore doe what I haue tolde thee, and fare well." The sonne tooke vp his father's head, and went his waye, the reste of his bodye remayned in the caldron, like a block without forme. When Ricciardo was come home, he buried his father's head so well as he could, and afterwarde tolde his mother what was become of his father, who vnderstanding the maner of his death, began piteously to crie out, to whom her sonne holding vp his hands, sayd: "Good mother holde your peace, and geue ouer your weeping: for our life is in great perill and daunger, if your outcrie be heard. Therefore good mother quiet yourselfe, for better it were for vs to liue in poore estate, than to die with infamie, to the vtter reproche and shame of all our familie." With whiche wordes he appeased her. In the morning the bodye was founde and caried to the duke, who maruelled at it, and could not deuise what he should doe, but sayd: "Surely there be two that committed this robberie, one of them we haue, let vs imagine how we may take the other." Then one of the foure chamberlaines sayd: "I haue found out a trap to catche the other, if it will please you to heare mine aduise, which is this: Impossible it is, but this theefe that is dead, hath either wife, children, or some kinsman in the citie, and therefore let vs cause the bodie to be drawen throughout the streates, and geue diligent hede whether anye persone doe complaine or lament his death: and if any such be found, let him be taken and examined: which is the next way as I suppose, to finde out his companion." Which being concluded,

they departed. The body was drawn throughout the citie with a guard of men attending vpon the same: as the executioners passed by the house of Bindo, whose carcassee laye vpon the hurdle, his wyfe stode at the wyndowe, and seing the body of her husbände so vsed, made a great outcrie. At whiche noyse the sonne spake to his mother and sayde: "Alas, mother, what do you?" And beholding his father's corps vpon the hurdle, he toke a knife and made a great gashe into his hande, that the blood aboundantly issued out. The garde hearing the noyse that the woman made, ran into the house, and asked her what she lacked. The sonne aunswered: "I was caruing a peece of stone with this knife, and by chaunce I hurt my hande, which my mother seeyng cryed out, thynking that I had hurt my selfe more than I haue." The garde seing his hande all bloody and cut, did beleue it to be true, and from thence went round about the liberties of the citie, finding none that seemed to lament or bewaile that chaunce. And returning to the duke, they tolde him howe all that labour was employed in vayne, whereupon he appointed them to hang vp the dead body in the market-place, with secret watche in like maner, to espie if any person by day or night, would come to complaine or be sorrowefull for him. Which body was by the feete hanged vp there, and a continuall watche appointed to kepe the same. The rumor hereof was bruted throughout the citie, and euery man resorted thither to see it. The woman hearing tell that her husbändes carcassee should be hanged vp in the market-place, saide diuerse times to her sonne, that it was a very great shame for him to suffer his father's body in that shamefull sort to be vsed. To whom her sonne made answere, saying: "Good mother, for God's sake be contented, for that whiche they do is for none other purpose, but to proue me: wherefore be pacient a while, till this chaunce be past." The mother not able to abide it any longer, brake out many times into these words: "If I were a man as I am a woman, it should not be vndone now: and if thou wilt not aduenture thy selfe, I will one night giue the attempt." The yong man seing the froward nature of his mother, determined to take away the body by this policie. He borrowed twelue friers frockes or cowles and in the

euening went downe to the hauen, and hired twelue mariners, and placed them in a backe house, geuing them so much meate and drinke as they woulde eate. And when they had well whited and tippled themselues, he put vpon them those friers cowles, with visards vppon their faces, and gaue euery of them in their hands a burning torch, making them to seme as though they had ben diuels of hel: and he himself rode vpon a horse al couered with blacke, beset rounde about with monstrous and vglie faces, euerye of them hauinge a burnyng candle in hys mouthe, and riding before with a visarde of horrible shape vpon his head, sayde vnto them: " Doe as I doe:" and then marched forward to the market-place. When they came thether they ran vp and downe with roring voyces crying out like deuils being then past midnight and very darke. When the watche sawe that straunge sight they were affrayde, thinking that they had bene deuils indeede and that he on horsebacke in that forme had ben the great deuill Lucifer himselfe. And seing him runne towards the gibet, the watche toke their legges and ran away. The yong man in the shape of the great deuill toke downe the body and layd it before him on horsebacke, who calling his companie away, roode before in poste. When they were come home, he gaue them their money, and vncasing them of their cowles sent them away, and afterwarde buried the body so secretly as he could. In the morning newes came to the duke that the bodye was taken awaye, who sent for the garde to knowe what was become thereof. To whome they sayde these wordes: " Pleaseth your grace, about midnight last past there came into the market-place a companie of deuils, among whom we sawe the great deuill Lucifer himselfe, who as wee suppose did eate vp the bodye, which terrible sight and vision made vs to take our legges." The duke by those wordes perceiued euidently that the same was but a practise to deceiue them of their purpose, notwithstanding he determined once again to devise some meanes in the ende to knowe the truthe, and decreed a constitucion that for the space of xx dayes no fresh meate shoulde be solde in Venice: at which decree all the citie marueiled. Afterwarde he caused a verie faire fatte calfe to be solde, sessing the price of euery pounce at a fiorino, which amounteth to a French crowne or thereabouts, and willed hym

that solde it to note and marke them that bought it: thinking with himselfe, that he which is a theefe is licorous of mouth delicate in fare and would not stick to geue a good price, although it cost him a French crown for euery pound: making proclamation, that he which would buye any fresh meate, should resort to the market-place where was to bee solde. All the marchauntes and gentlemen repaired to buye some of the veale, and vnderstanding that euery pound would not be solde vnder a Frenche crowne, they bought none at all. This calfe and the price was bruted in all places, and came to the knowledge of the mother of this yong man, who said vnto her sonne: "I haue a minde to eate some of the veale, now solde in the market." Ricciardo aunswered: "Mother make no haste to buye it, first let it be cheapened by other, and at length I will deuise a meane that you shall haue it: for it is not wysedome for vs to be the firste that shall desire it." The mother like an ignoraunt and vnskilfull woman, was importunate to haue it. The sonne fearing that his mother would sende for some of the veale, by other, caused a pie to be made, and prepared a flagon full of wyne, both which were intermixed with thinges to cause sleepe, and taking bread, the sayd pie, and the flagon of wyne, when it was night, putting on a counterfait beard, and cloke, went to the stall where that veale was to bee solde, which as yet was whole and vn Bought. And when he had knocked at the shop dore, one of the guard asked who was there. To whom Ricciardo said: "Can you tel me wher one Ventura doth kepe his shop?" Of whom one of them demaunded what Ventura? "I know not his surname," sayde Ricciardo, "that I would he had bene hanged, when I came first to dwell with him." "Why who sent thee?" said one of the garde. "His wyfe (quod Ricciardo) who bad me cary him this meate and wyne for his supper: but I pray you (sayde Ricciardo,) let me leaue the same with you, till I goe home to know better where he kepeth his stall. And maruell not, my maisters, though I know not where his shop is, for it is not long sithens I came to dwell in this citie." And so leauing behind him the pie, and the bread with the flagon of wyne, he made haste to departe, and tolde them that he wold come againe by and by. When he was gone, one of them toke the flagon, and dranke, and afterwarde gaue it to his companion,

and said: "Drinke, for thou neuer diddest tast of better wyne in all thy life." His companion dranke, and merily communing of this matter, they fel a sleepe. Ricciardo loking in at a hole of the dore, seing them a slepe, went in, and toke the calfe, and caried it home whole as it was, and saide to his mother: "Hold mother, there is your luste, cut it out:" and by and by she cut out a great pece. The duke so sone as he heard that the calfe was stolen, and the maner howe, did wonder very muche, purposing yet to knowe what hee was: and caused a hundred poore people to come before him, whose names being written, he said vnto them: "Get ye to all the houses in Venice, vnder colour to begge almes. And marke if you see in any house fleshe dressed, or any pece in making ready to be eaten at the fier, which if you doe, ye must be importunate in begging, till they giue you either flesh or broth. And he among all you that shal bring me the first newes, I wil giue him xx crownes." These beggers dispersed themselues into euery corner of the citie, crauing their almes, amongs whom one of them asked his almes at the house of Ricciardo, and approaching nere, espied openly fleshe at the spit, and besought a morsell thereof for God's sake: to whom the vndiscrete woman seeing that she had plentye, gaue a litle pece. The poore man thanked the good wife, and prayed God to saue her life. And as hee was going down the steps of the dore, Ricciardo met him with the flesh in his hand. Wherewithall astonned, he willed him to retourne, and sayde he would giue him more. The begger glad of that, went in againe, whome Ricciardo caried into his chamber, and when he was within, he strake suche a full blowe vpon his head with an axe, as he killed hym, and threwe him into a iakes, shutting the doore after him. In the euening, these poore men retourned to the duke, according to their promise, and sayde they could finde nothing. The duke called them by their names, and compting the number founde one lesse than he had sent, whereat he maruelled. And after he had well aduised with himselfe, what should become of him that lacked, he sayde: "Certainly the poore man is slayne." Then causing the councell to be assembled, he declared what he had done: and yet sayde that it were meete the partie were knowen. Whereunto one of

about bestowed the colour vpon the faces of his felowes, who were so faste a sleepe that they did not fele him. Some he marked with two spottes, some with six and some with x. himselfe he painted but with foure besides those wherewith already he was berayed by the gentlewoman: whiche done he set the saucer agayne by the bedde's side, and when he had bidden her farewell, faire and softly he returned againe to his bedde. In the morning betimes, the damosels of the chamber came in to helpe the ladye to make her readye, which done they wayted vpon her to the duke, who asked her how the matter stode. She aunswered well, for she had done his commaundement: and tolde him howe one came vnto her three times, and euery time she gaue him a tainte in his face. The duke by and by sent for them that were of his counsell. To whome he said: "Sirs, I haue founde out this good fellow, and therefore I haue sent for you, that we altogether may goe to see him." They went all into the chamber, and viewing them round about, they perceiued all their faces coloured, whereat they fell into a great laughter: then one of them sayde to another: "Suerly this fellowe hath the subtillest head that euer was knowen:" and concluded that one of the company had set that colour in their faces. The yong men beholding one another paynted in that sorte, brake into great sporte and pastime. Afterwardes the duke examined euery of them, and seeing that he was not able by any meanes to vnderstande by whome it was done, he determined to knowe the man before he departed, and promised to him that should confesse the truthe, to giue his daughter to him in mariage, and with her a very great dowrie, and a generall pardon. Wherefore Ricciardo vnderstanding the duke's minde, toke hym asyde, and tolde hym the whole matter particularly from the beginning to the ende. The duke imbraced hym, and gaue him his pardon, and with great ioye and triumphe he solemnized the mariage betwene hym and his daughter. Wherewithall Ricciardo encouraged, proued a very stoute and valiaunt man in suche wyse almoste as the affaires of the whole state passed through his handes.

And liued a long time after, with the loue and
good wyll of the whole cominaltie of
Venice.

set down in her place, this young scholler went to take another gentlewoman by the hand, and began to daunce with her: whiche was not so sone begonne, but thus he said vnto her: "It nedeth not Madame, that by woordes I doe expresse the feruant loue which I beare you, and will so doe, so long as my poore spirite shall gouerne and rule my members: and if I could obtaine you for my maistresse and singuler ladye, I would thinke myself the happiest man on liue. Then louing you as I do, and being wholly yours, as you may easely vnderstand, refuse me not I besech you for your humble seruaunt, sithe that my life and all that I haue dependeth vpon you alone." The yong gentlewoman, whose name was Panthemia, perceiuing his meaning, did not aunswere him any thing at that time: but honestly proceded in her daunce: and the daunce ended, smyling a litle, she sat downe with the other dames. This done, amorous Philenio rested not vntil he had taken the thirde by the hand, (who was the gentlest, fairest, and trimmest dame in all Bologna,) and began to daunce with her romying abrode, to shewe his cunning before them that came to behold him. And before the daunce was finished, he saide thus vnto her: "Madame, it may so be, as I shall seme vnto you very malapert to manifest the secret loue that I haue and doe beare you at this instant, for which you ought not to blame me but your beautie, which rendreth you excellent aboue al the rest, and maketh me your slaue and prysoner. I speake not of your commendable behauiour, of your excellent and maruellous vertues, which be such and of so great effect, as they would make the gods descend to contemplate the same. If then your excellent beautie and shape, so well faouored by nature, and not by art, may seeme to content the immortall Gods, you ought not to be offended, if the same doe constrain me to loue you, and to inclose you in the priue cabane of my harte: I beseeche you then, gentle Madame (the onely comfort of my life) to haue pitie vpon him that dieth a thousand times a daye for you. In so doing, my life shal be prolonged by you, commending me humbly vnto your good grace." This faire gentlewoman called Simphrosia, vnderstanding the sweete and pleasaunt wordes vttered from the very harte of Philenio, could not dissemble her sighes, but waying her honor, because she was married,

still wayting for her minion. When night was come, Philenio toke his sworde, and went to the house of his enemy, and calling at the dore with the watchworde the same incontinently was opened: and after that they had talked a litle while together, and banketted after the best maner, they withdrew themselues into the chamber to take their reste. Philenio had no soner put of his clothes to goe to bedde, but seignior Lamberto her husband came home: which the maistresse of the house perceiuing, made as though she had bene at her wittes ende, and could not tell whether to conuey her minion, but prayed him to hide himself vnder the bedde. Philenio seeing the daunger, wherein both he and the wife were, not taking with him any other garmentes, but only his shirte, crept vnder the bed where he was so cruelly prickt and scratched with the thornes, as there was no parte of his bodye (from the toppe of his head to the sole of his foote) free from bloud, and the more he sought to defende himselfe in that darke place, the more sharpely and piteously he was tormented, and durst not crie for feare least seignior Lamberto would kill him. I will leaue to your consideration in what plight this poore wretche was in, who by reason of his miserable being, as he was brechelesse in that terrible purgatorie, euen so was he speachlesse and durst not speake for his life. In the morning when seignior Lamberto was gone forth, the poore scholler put on his clothes so well as he could, and all bloody as he was, returning to his lodging, was like to die: but being deligently cured by phisicians, in short time he recouered his former health. Shortly after, Philenio began to pursue again his loue towards the other two, that is to say, Panthemia and Simphorosia, and found conuenient time one euening to speake to Panthemia, to whom he rehearsed his griefes and continuall tormentes, praying her to haue pitie vpon him. The subtile and wise wenche Panthemia, fayning to haue compassion vpon him, excused her selfe by lacke of meanes to content his desire, but in thend vanquished with faire supplications and maruellous sighes, shee made him to come home to her house, and being vnready, dispoyled of al his apparell to go to bed with his lady she required hym to go with her into a litle closet, wher all her swete smels and perfumes were, to the intent he might be well

commaundement to doe her seruice: the aunswere read, and oportunitie found, Simphorosia caused him to come home to her house, and after many false sighes, she saide vnto him: " My deare frend Philenio, I knowe none other in all the world, that hath brought me into this state and plight wherein presently I am, but you because your beautie, good grace and pleasaunt talke, haue so sette my harte on fyre as I feele it to kindle and burne like drye woode." Which talke maister scholler hearing, thought assuredly that she consumed for loue of him: this poore Nodgecock, contriuing the time in sweete and pleasaunt wordes, with his dareleng Simphorosia, the time approched that he should go to bed with his faire lady, who said vnto him: " My swete frende Philenio, abide a whyle, and let vs make some banket and collation:" who taking him by the hande, caried him into her closet adioyning, wher was a table ready furnished with exquisit conficts and wyne of the best. This gentlewoman had made a composition in the wyne, to cause this yong gallant to sleepe for a certain time. Philenio thinking no hurte, toke the cup and filled it with the wine, and dranke it vp at one draught. His spirits reuiued with this refreshing, after he had bene very well perfumed and washed in swete waters, he went to bedde and within a while after this drinke began to woorke, and hee slepte so soundly, as canon shot, or the greatest gonnes of the worlde were not able to wake hym: then Simphorosia perceiuing the drinke beginne to woorke, called one of her sturdy maides that wel was instructed in the game of this pageant: both whiche carying this poore sleepy scholler by the feete and armes, and opening the dore very softlye, they fayre and well bestowed hym in the middeste of the streete, a good stone's caste of from the house, where he lay all the nighte. But when the dawning of the daye dyd appeare, or an houre before, the drynke lost his vertue, and the poore soule began to awake, and thinking that he had bene a bedde with the gentlewoman he perceiued hymself brechelesse and in his shirt more dead then alieue, through the colde that he had endured, by lying starke naked vpon the earth. The poore wretche was not able to help himselfe so much as with his armes and legges, ne yet to stande vpon his feete without great paine: notwithstanding, through

The gentlewomen hearing those cruell wordes, rather dead then alieue, began to repent that euer they had offended him, and besides that, they cursed themselues, for giuinge credit vnto him whom they ought to haue abhorred. The scholler with fierce and angry countenaunce, commaunded them vpon paine of their liues to strippe themselues naked: which sentence when these three goddesses heard, they began to loke one vpon another, weeping and praying him, that although he woulde not for their sakes, yet in respect of his owne curtesie and naturall humanitie, that hee woulde saue their honor aboue all thinges. This gallant reioysing at their humble and pitifull requestes was thus curteous vnto them, that he would not once suffer them to stand with their garmentes on in his presence: the women casting themselues downe at his feete wept bitterly, beseeching him that he woulde haue pitie vpon them, and not to be the occasion of a slaunder so great and infamous. But he whose hart was hardened as the diamonde, said vnto them, that this facte was not worthy of blame but rather of reuenge. The women dispoyled of their apparel (and standing before him, so free from couering as euer was Eue before Adam) appeared as beautifull in this their innocent state of nakednes, as they did in their brauerie: in so much that the yong scholler viewing from toppe to toe, those fayre and tender creatures, whose whitenesse surpassed the snow, began to haue pitie vpon them: but calling to his remembraunce the iniuries past and the daunger of death wherein he was, he reiected all pitie and continued his harde and obstinate determination. Then he toke all their apparell, and other furnitures that they did weare, and bestowed it in a little chamber, and with threatning words commaunded all three to lie in one bed. The women altogether astonned, began to say to themselues: "Alas, what fooles be we? what wil our husbands and our frendes say, when they shal vnderstand that we be found naked and miserablie slaine in this bed? It had been better for vs to haue died in our cradels, than apprehended and found dead in this state and plight." The scholler seing them bestowed one by another in the bed, like husband and wyfe, couered them with a very white and large sheete, that no part of their bodies might be seene and knowen, and shutting the chamber

doore after him Philenio went to seeke their husbands, which were dauncing in the hall: and the daunce ended, he intreated them to take the paines to goe with him: who was their guide into the chamber where the three muses lay in their bedde, saying vnto them: "Sirs, I haue broughte you into this place to shewe you some pastime and to let you see the fayrest thinges that euer you saw in your liues. Then approching neere the bed, and holding a torch in his hand, he began fayre and softly to lift vp the shete at the bed's feete, discovering these fayre ladies euen to the knees. Ye should haue seen then, how the husbands did behold their white legges and their wel proporcioned feete, which don he disclosed them euen to the stomack, and shewed their legges and thighes farre whiter than alabaster, which seemed like two pillers of fine marble, with a rounde body so wel formed as nothing could be better: consequently he tourned vp the sheete a litle further, and their stomackes appeared somewhat round and plumme, hauing two rounde breasts so firme and feate, as they would haue constrayned the great God Iupiter to imbrace and kisse them. Whereat the husbandes toke so great pleasure and contentmente, as coulde be deuised: I omitte for you to thincke in what plight these poore naked women weare, hearinge theyr husbandes to mocke them: all this while they laye verye quiet, and durst not so much as to hem or coughe, for feare to be knowne: the husbands were earnest with the scholler to discover their faces, but hee wiser in other mennes hurtes than in his owne, would by no meanes consent vnto it. Not contented with this, the yong scholler shewed their apparel to their husbands, who seing the same were astonned, and in viewing it with great admiration, they said one to another: "Is not this the gowne that I once made for my wife? Is not this the coyfe that I bought her? Is not this the pendant that she weareth about her necke? be not these the ringes that set out and garnisht her fingers?" Being gone out of the chamber for feare to trouble the feast, he would not suffer them to depart, but caused them to tarie supper. The scholler vnderstandinge that supper was ready, and that the maister of the house had disposed all thinges in order, he caused the geastes to sit downe. And whiles they were remouing and placing the

stooles and chayres, he returned into the chamber, wher the three dames lay, and vncovering them, he sayd vnto them: "Bongiorno, faire ladies: did you heare your husbantes? They be here by, and do earnestly tarie for you at supper. What do ye meane to do? Vp and rise ye dormouses, rubbe your eyes and gape no more, dispatche and make you ready, it is time for you now to repayre into the hall, where the other gentlewomen do tarie for you." Behold now how this scholer was reuenged by interteigning them after this maner: then the poore desolate women, fearing least their case would sorte to som pitiful successe, dispayring of their health, troubled and discomforted, rose vp expecting rather death than any other thing: and tourniing them toward the scholler they said vnto him: "Maister Philenio, you haue had sufficient reueng vpon vs: the best for you to do now, is to take your sword, and to bereue us of oure life, which is more lothsome vnto vs than pleasaunt: and if you will not do vs that good tourne, suffer vs to go home to our houses vnknownen, that our honours may be saued." Then Philenio thinking that he had at pleasure vsed their persons, deliuered them their apparel, and so sone as they were ready, he let them out at a litle dore, very secretly vnknownen of anye, and so they went home to their houses. So sone as they had put of their fayre furnitures, they folded them vp, and layd them in their chestes: which done, they went about their houshold busines, till their husbands came home, who being retourned they founde their wives sowing by the fire side in their chambers: and because of their apparell, their ringes and iewels, which they had seene in the scholler's chamber, it made them to suspect their wiues, euery of them demaunding his seuerall wife, where she had bin that nighte, and where their apparell was. They well assured of themselues, aunswered boldly, that they were not out of their house all the euening, and taking the keyes of their cofers shewed them their aparell, their ringes and other things, which their husbantes had made them. Which when their husbantes saw, they could not tell what to say, and forthwith reiected all suspicion, which they had conceiued: telling them from point to point, what they had seen that night. The women vnderstanding those wordes, made as though they knew nothing and

after a litle sport and laughter betweene them, they went to bed. Many times Philenio met his gentlewomen in the street and sayde vnto them : " Which of you was most afraide or w^{as} intreated ?" But they holding downe their heads, passed forth not speaking a word : in this maner the scholler was requited so well as he could of the deceites done against him, by the three gentlewomen aforesaid.

THE FIFTYETH NOUELL.

*The piteous and chaste death of one of the muleters wiues of the
Queene of Navarre.*

IN the citie of Amboise, there was a muleter that serued the quene of Nauarre, sister to king Fraunces the firste of that name, which was broughte a bedde of a sonne at Blois: to which towne the said muleter was gone to be paide his quarter's wages: whose wyfe dwell- ed at Amboise beyond the bridges. It chaunced that of long time one of her husband's seruauntes did so disordinately loue her, as vppon a certaine day he could not forbear but he muste vtter the effect of his loue borne vnto her. Howbeit shee being a right honest woman, toke her man's sute in very ill part, threatning to make her husband to beat him, and to put him away, and vsed him in such wyse, that after that time he durst not speake thereof any more, ne yet to make signe or semblance: keeping yet that fier couered within his brest, vntill his maister was ridden out of the towne, and that his maistresse was at euensong at Saint Florentine's, a church of the castle, farre from her house: who now being alone in the house, began to imagine how he might attempt that thinge by force, which before by no sup- plication or seruice he was able to attaine. For which purpose, hee brake vp a borde betweene his maistresse chamber and his: but because the curteins of his maister and maistresse bed, and of the seruaunts of the other side couered and hid the walles be- tweene, it could not be perceyued, nor yet his malice discried vntill such time as his maistresse was gone to bed, with a litle wenche of xii. yeares of age: and so sone as the poore woman was fallen into her first sleepe, this varlet entred in at a hole which he had broken, and conueyed himself into her bed in his shirt, with a naked sworde in his hande: who so sone as she felt him layed downe by her, lepte out of her bed, perswad- ing him by all possible meanes meete for an honest woman to do: and he indued with beastly loue, rather acquainted with the language of his mulets than with her honest reasons,

shewed himselfe more beastly then the beasts with whom he had of long time bin conuersant: for seing her so oft to runne about the table that he could not catch her, and also that she was so strong, that twise she ouercame him, in dispaire that he should neuer enioy her aliuie, hee gaue her a great blow with his sword ouer the raines of the back, thinking that if feare and force could not make her to yeld paine and smart should cause her. Howbeit, the contrarie chaunced: for like as a good man of armes when he seeth his owne bloud, is more set on fier to be reuenged vpon his enemies to acquire honor: euen so the chaste hart of this woman, did reenforce and fortifie her courage in double wise, to auoyde and escape the hands of this wicked varlet, deuising by all meanes possible by fayre words to make him acknowledge his fault: but he was so inflamed with furie, there was no place in him to receiue good counsell. And eftsones with his sword, he gashed her tender bodye with diuers and sondry strokes, for the auoyding wherof, so fast as her legges could beare her, she ran vp and downe the chamber: and when through want of bloud she perceiued death approch, lifting vp her eyes vnto heauen, and ioyning her hands together, gaue thanckes vnto God, whom she termed to be her force, her vertue, her pacience and chastitie, humblie beseeching him to take in good part the bloude whiche by his commandement was sheade in honor of that precious bloude, which from his owne sonne did issue vpon the crosse, whereby shee did beleue, firmlye and stedfastlye that all her sinnes were wiped awaye and defaced from the memorye of his wrathe and anger, and in sayinge: "Lorde receiue my soule which was dearely bought and redeemed with thy bounty and goodnes:" shee fell downe to the ground vpon her face where the wycked villaine inflicted her body with manifold wounds: and after she had lost her speache and the force of her body, thys most wicked and abhominable varlet toke her by force, whiche had no more strength and power to defende herselfe: and when he had satisfied his cursed desire, he fled away in such hast, as afterwards for all the pursute made after him he could not be found. The yong wench which lay with her, for feare hid herselfe vnder the bed. But when she

perceyued the villaine departed, shee came vnto her maistresse and finding her speechlesse and without mouing, she cryed out at the window vnto the nexte neighbours to come to succour her: and they which loued her and esteemed her so wel as any woman in the towne, came presently vnto her, and brought diuers surgeons with them, who findinge vpon her body xxv. mortall woundes, they did so much as in them laye to helpe her: but it was impossible. Howbeit shee laye one houre without speache, makinge signes with hir eyes and hands, declaring that she had not lost her vnderstandinge: beinge demaunded by the priest, of the fayth wherein she died, and of her saluacion, she aunswered by such euident signes, as her liuely speach and communication coulde not haue declared it better, howe that her trust and confidence was in the death of Iesus Christ, whom she hoped to see in the celestiaall cytie, and so with a ioyfull countenance, her eyes erected vp to the heauens, she rendred her chaste body to the earth, and her soule to her creator: and when shee was shrouded ready to the buriaall, as her neighbours were attending to followe her to the church, her poore husbände came home, and the first sight he sawe, was the body of his dead wife before his doore, whereof before that instant hee had no newes. And when he vnderstode the order of her death, he then doubled his sorrowe, in such wyse that he was also like to die. In this sort was this marter of chastitie buried in the church of S. Florentine, where all the honest dames and wiues of the citie endeououred themselves to accompany her, and to honour her with suche reuerence as they were able to do: accomptinge themselves most happie to dwell in that towne, where a woman of such vertuous behauiour did dwell. The foolish and wanton seing the honour done to that deade bodye, determined from that time forth to renue their former life, and to chaunge the same into a better.

THE FIFTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A king of Naples, abusing a gentleman's wife, in the ende did weare the hornes himselfe.

IN the citie of Naples when king Alphonsus raigned, in whose time wantonnesse bare chieftest sway, there was a gentleman so honest, beautifull and comely, as for his good conditions and wel known behauiour an old gentleman gaue to him his daughter in mariage, which in beautie and good grace was passingly well beloued and comfortable to her husband. The loue was great betwene them, till it chaunced vpon a shrouetide that the king went a masking into the citie, where euery man endeuoured to intertaine him the best he could. And when he came to this gentleman's house, he was best receyued of any place in all the towne, aswell for banqueting, as for musicall songes, and the gentlewoman, the fayrest that the king sawe in all the citie to his contentacion. And vpon the end of the banquet, she sang a song with her husbände, with a grace so good as it greatly augmented her beautie. The king seing so many perfections in one body, conceyued not so great pleasure in the sweete accords of her husband and her, as he did howe to deuise to interrupt and breake them: and the difficultie for bringinge that to passe, was the greates amitie that hee sawe betweene them, wherefore he bare in his hart that passion so couert, as he possibly could. But partly for his owne solace and comforte, and partly for good will of all, hee feasted all the lords and ladyes of Naples, where the gentleman and his wife were not forgotten. And because man willingly beleeueth that he doth see, he thought that the lokes of that gentlewoman promised vnto him some grace in time to come, if the presence of her husband were no let therunto. And to proue whether his coniecture were true, he sente her husbände in commission to Rome, for the space of xv. dayes or iii. wekes. And so sone as he was gone, his wyfe which hitherto had not felt any long absence from her husband, made great sorrow for the same, whereof she recomforted by the king, many times

by sweete perswasions and by presents and gifts, in such sort, that she was not onely comforted, but contented with her husbande's absence. And before the three weekes were expired of his returne, she was so amorous of the king as she was no lesse sorrowful of his comming home, then she was before for his departure. And to the intent the king's presence might not be loste, they agreed together, that when her husband was gone to his possessions in the countrie, she should send word to the king, that he might haue safe repaire vnto her, and so secretly that his honour, (which he feared more then he did the fact) might not be impaired. Vpon this hope, this ladie's hart was set on a merie pin: and when her husband was come home, shee welcomed him so wel, that albeit he knewe how the king made much of her in his absence, yet he would not beleeeue that he so did for any dishonest fact. Howbeit by continuance of time, this fier that could not be couered, by litle and litle began to kindle, in such wise as the husband doubted much of the truth, and watched the matter so neere, as he was almost oute of doubt. But for feare, least the partie which did the wrong, should do him greater hurt, if he seemed to know it, he determined to dissemble the matter: for he thought it better to liue with some grieffe, then to hazard his life for a woman that did not loue him: notwithstanding, for this displeasure, he thought to be euen with the king if it were possible. And knowinge that many times despite maketh a woman to do that which loue cannot bring to passe, specially those that haue honourable harts and stoute stomachs, was so bold without blushing, vpon a day in speaking to the queene, to say vnto her, that he had pitie vpon her, for that shee was no better beloued of the king her husband. The queene which heard tell of the loue betwene the king and his wife: "I cannot (quoth she) both enioy honour and pleasure together: I knowe well that honor I haue, whereof one receiueth the pleasure, and as she hath the pleasure, so hath not she the honor." He which knewe wel by whom those words were spoken, said vnto her: "Madame, honor hath waited vpon you euen from your birth, for you be of so good a house, as to be a queene or empresse, you cannot augment your nobilitie, but your beautie, grace, and honestie,

hath deserued so much pleasure, as she that depriueth you of that which is incident to your degree, doth more wrong to her self then to your person. For she for a glorie that hath turned her to shame, hath therewithall lost so much pleasure, as your grace or any lady in the realme may haue. And I may saye vnto you (Madame) that if the kinge were no king as he is, I thincke that he could not excel me in pleasing of a woman: being sure that to satisfie such a vertuous personage as you be, he might exchange his complexion with mine." The queene smiling, answered him: "Although the king be of more delicate and weaker complexion than you be, yet the loue that he beareth mee, doth so much content mee, as I esteeme the same aboue all thinges in the world." The gentleman said vnto her: "Madame, if it were so, I woulde take no pitie vpon you, for I know wel that the honest loue of your hart, would yeld vnto you great contentment, if the like were to be found in the king: but God hath foreseene and preuented the same, least enioyinge your owne desire, you would make him your God vppon earth." "I confesse vnto you (saide the queene) that the loue I beare him, is so great, as the like place he could not find in no woman's hart, as he doth in mine." "Pardon me, madame (saide the gentleman) if I speake more francklye, your grace hath not sounded the depth of ech man's harte. For I dare be bold to say vnto you, that I do know one that doth loue you, and whose loue is so great, as your loue in respecte of his is nothing. And for so much as he seeth the kinge's loue to faile in you his doth grow and increase, in such sort, that if your loue were agreable vnto his, you should be recompensed of all your losses." The queene aswel by his words as by his countenaunce, began to perceiue, that the talke proceded from the bottom of his hart, and called to her remembraunce that long time he had endeouored to do her seruice, with such affection, as for loue he was growen to be melancolike, which she thought before, to rise through his wiue's occasion, but now shee assuredly beleued that it was for her sake. And thus the force of loue, which is well discryed when it is not fayned, made her sure of that, which was vnknownen to all the world. And beholding the gentleman which was more amiable

than her husband, and seing that he was forsaken of his wife, as she of the king, pressed with despite and ialousie of her husband, and prouoked with loue of the gentleman, began to say with finger in eye, and sighing sobbs: "O my God, must vengeance get and win that at my hand, which loue cannot doe?" The gentleman well vnderstanding her meaning, answered: "Madame, vengeance is sweete vnto him which in place of killinge an ennemye, giueth life to a perfecte freinde. I thincke it time that trouth doe remoue from you the foolishe loue, that you beare to him which loueth you not: and that iust and reasonable loue should expell from you the feare, which out not remaine in a noble and vertuous hart. But now madame, omittinge to speake of the greatnesse of your estate, let vs consider that we be both man and woman, the most deceiued of the world, and betrayed of them which we haue most dearely loued. Let vs now be reuenged (madame) not onely to render vnto them, what they deserue, but to satisfie the loue which for my part I can no longer beare, except I should die. And I thincke, that if your harte be not harder than flinte, or diamont, it is impossible but you must perceiue som sparke of fier, which increaseth more than I am able to dissemble: and if pitie of me which dieth for your loue, doth not moue you to loue me, at least wyse let loue of your self constraine you, which (being so perfect a creature as you be) doth deserue to enioy the hartes of the noblest and most vertuous of the world. Suffer I say, the contempt and forsaking of him, [to] moue you, for whom you haue disdayned al other persons." The queene hearing those words, was so rauished, as for feare to declare by her countenance the trouble of her spirite, leaning vppon the gentleman's arme, went into a garden hard by her chamber, where she walked a long time not able to speake a woord. But the gentleman seing her halfe wonne, when he was at the ende of the alley where none could see them, hee certified her by effect, the loue which so long time he kept secrete from her. And both with one consent reioyced in reuenge, whereof the passion was importable. And there determined, that so oft as hee went into the country, and the king from his castell into the citie, he should retourne to the castel

to see the quene. Thus deceyuing the deceyuers, all foure were partakers of the pleasure, which two alone thought to enioy. The accord made, they departed, the lady to her chamber, and the gentleman to his house, with such contentacion, as they had quite forgotten al theyr troubles past. And the feare which either of them had of the assembly of the king and of the gentlewoman, was toured to desire, which made the gentleman to go more oft then he was wonte to doe into the cuntrye, being not past halfe a mile of. And so sone as the king knew therof, he fayled not to visite his lady, and the gentleman the night folowing went to the castle to salute the queene, to do the office of the kinge's lieutenant, so secretly as no man did perceiue it. This voyage endured long time, but the king because he was a publike person, could not so well dissemble his loue, but all the worlde did vnderstand it, and all men pitied the gentleman's state. For diuers light persons behinde his backe would make hornes vnto him, in signe of mockerie, which he right well perceyued. But this mockerie pleased him so wel, as he esteemed his hornes better then the king's crowne. The king and the gentleman's wife one day, could not refraine (beholding a stagge's head set vp in the gentleman's house) from breaking into a laughter before his face, saying, how that head became the house very well. The gentleman that had so good a hart as he, wrote ouer that head these words.

*These hornes I weare and beare for euery man to view,
But yet I weare them not in token they be trew.*

The king retourning againe to the gentleman's house, finding this title newlye written, demaunded of the gentleman the signification of them.

Who said vnto him :

*" If princesse secret things, be from the horned hart concealed,
Why should like things of horned beastes, to princes be reuealed.*

But content your self: all they that weare hornes be pardoned to weare their capps vpon their heads: for they be so sweete and pleasaunt, as they vncapke no man, and they weare them so light, as they thincke they haue none at all." The king knew well by his wordes that he smelled something of his doings, but he neuer

suspected the loue betwene the queene and him. For the queene was better contented wyth her husbände's life, and with greater ease dissembled her grieve. Wherefore eyther parts liued long time in this loue, till age had taken order for dissolucion thereof.

" Behold ladies (quoth Saffredante) this historye which for example I haue willingly recited to thintente that when your husbands do make you hornes as big as a goate, you maye render vnto him the monstrous heade of a stagge." " Peace (quoth Emarsuite smyling) no more wordes, least you reuiue some sleeping sweet soule, which without stur would not awake, with any whispring.

THE FIFTY-SECOND NOUELL.

*The rashe enterprise of a gentleman against a princesse of Flaunders,
and of the shame that hee receyued thereof.*

THERE was in Flaunders a lady of an honorable house, which had two husbands, by whom shee had no children that were then liuinge. Duringe the time of her widowhoode shee dwelte within one of her brothers, that loued her very well, which was a noble man, and had married a king's doughter. This yong prince was muche giuen to pleasure, louinge huntinge, pastime, and the company of fayre ladyes, accordingly as youth requireth. He had a wyfe that was curst and troublesome, whom the delectations of her husband in no wyse did contente and please: wherefore this noble man caused his sister daily to keepe company with his wife. This gentlewoman his sister was of pleasaunt conuersation, and therewithal very honest and wyse. There was in the house of this noble man, a gentleman whose worship, beautye and grace did surpasse all the rest of his companions. This gentleman perceyuing the sister of his lorde and maister to be pleasaunte and of ioyfull countenance, thoughte to proue if the attempt of an honest frende would be vouchsaued, but he founde her aunswere to be contrary to her countenance: and albeit that her aunswere was such as was meete for a princesse and right honest gentlewoman, yet because she perceyued him to be a goodly personage, and curteous, she easily pardoned his bold attempt, and seemed that she toke it not in ill part when he spake vnto her. Neuerthelesse shee warned him, after that time, to moue no such matter, which he promised, because he would not lose his pleasure, and the honour that hee conceyued to entertaine her. Notwithstandinge, by processe of time his affection increased so much as he forgot the promise which he had made her, wherefore he thoughte good not to hazarde his enterprise by wordes, for that hee had to long against his wyll experimented her wyse and discrete aunswares: and therewithall he thought if he could finde her in some conuenient place (because she was a yong

widow, of lusty yeares and good complexion) it were possible shee would take pitie vppon him, and of herself. And that he might bring his purpose to effecte, he said to his maister that he had besides his owne house very goodly game, and that if it pleased him to kill three or foure stagges in the moneth of May, he should see very good pastime. The lord aswell for the loue hee bare to the gentleman, as for the pleasure he had in hunting, graunted his request: and went to his house, which was so faire and well furnished, as the best gentleman in all the countrey had no better. The gentleman lodged his lord and lady in one side of the house, and in the other directly against it, her whome he loued better than himselfe. The chamber where his maistres laye, was so well hanged with tapistrie, and so trimely matted, as it was impossible to perceiue a falling dore, harde by the bed's side, descending to his mother's chamber, which was an old lady, much troubled with the catarre and rume. And because she had a cough, fearing to disease the princesse which laye aboue her, she chaunged her chamber with her sonne. And euery night the olde gentlewoman brought comficts to the lady for her recreation, vpon whom the gentleman wayted, who (for that he was well beloued and very familier with her brother) was not refused to be present at her rising and going to bedde. Whereby he daily toke occasion to increase his loue and affection: in suche sorte as one night, after he had caused the lady to sit vp late, (she being surprised with sleepe) he was forced to depart the chamber, and to repaire to his own. Wher when he had put on the most brauest perfumed shirt that he had, and his cap for the night so trimmely dressed, as there wanted nothing, he thought in beholding himself, that there was no lady in the world that would refuse his beautie and comlinesse. Wherefore promising himselfe a happie successe in his enterprise, hee went to his bed where he purposed not long to abide, for the desire that he had to enter into another, whiche should be more honourable and pleasure vnto him. And after he had sent his men away, he rose to shut the dore after them, and hearkened a good while, whether he could heare any noyse in the ladie's chamber aboue. And when he was sure that euery man was at rest, he began to take his

pleasaunt iourney, and by litle and litle opened the falling dore, whiche was so well trimmed with cloth, that it made no noyse at all, and went vp to the ladie's bed side, which then was in her first sleepe, and without respecte of the bonde and promise that he made vnto her, or the honorable house wherof she came, without leane or reuerence, he laid himselfe down besides her, who felt him betwene her armes before she perceiued his comming. But she which was somewhat strong, vnfolded her self out of his handes, and in asking him what he was, began to strike, to bite and scratche, in suche wyse, as he was constrained (for feare least she should crye out) to stoppe her mouth with the couerlet, which was impossible for him to do. For when she sawe him to presse with all his force to despoyle her of her honor, she spared no part of her might to defende and kepe her selfe, and called (so loude as she could) her woman of honor, that laye in her chamber, whiche was a very auncient and sober gentlewoman, who in her smock, ran straight to her maistresse. And when the gentleman perceiued that hee was discovered, hee was so fearfull to be knownen of the ladye, as sone as he could hee shifted himself down by his trapdore. And where before he conceiued hope and assuraunce to be welcome, now he was brought in despaire for retourning in so vnhappy state. When he was in his chamber, he found his glasse and candle vpon the table, and beholding his face all bloudy with the scratchings and bitinges, whiche shee had bestowed vpon him, the bloud wherof ran down his fayre shyrt, better bloudied then gilted, he began to make his moone in this wise: "O beautie, thou art nowe payed thy desert, for vppon thy vayne promise haue I aduentured a thing impossible. And that which might haue bene the augmenting of my delight is nowe the redoubling of my sorowe. Being assured that if she knewe howe contrary to my promise I haue enterprised this foolishe fact, I should vtterly forgoe the honest and common conuersation whiche I haue with her aboue al other. That which my estimation, beantie and good behauiour doe deserue, I ought not to hyde in darkenesse. To gaine her loue, I ought not to haue assayed her chast bodye by force, but rather by seruice and humble pacience, to wayte and attend till loue did vanquishe. For without loue all the vertue and

puissance of man is of no power and force." Euen thus he passed the night in such teares, griefes and plaintes, as can not be well reported and vttered. In the morning, when he beheld his bloudy face all mangled and torne, he fained to be very sicke, and that he could abide no light, til the company were gone from his house. The lady whiche thus remained victorious, knowing that there was no man in all her brother's court, that durst attempt a deede so wicked, but her hoste which was so bolde to declare his loue vnto her, knew well that it was he. And when she and her woman of honour had searched all the corners of the chamber to knowe what he was, and could not finde hym, she sayd vnto her woman in great rage: "Assure your selfe it can be none other, but the gentleman of the house, whose villanous order I wyll reueale to my brother in the morning, in such sorte, as his head shalbe a witnesse and testimony of my chastitie." Her woman seing her in that furie, sayd vnto her: "Madame, I am right glad to see the loue and affection which you beare to your honor, for the increase wherof you doe not spare the life of one, which hath aduentured himselfe so muche for the loue that hee beareth vnto you. But many times such one thinketh by those meanes to increase loue, which altogether he doth diminishe. Wherefore (Madame) I humbly beseche you to tell me the truthe of this facte." And when the ladie had recompted the same at lengthe, the woman of honour sayd vnto her: "Your grace doth say that he got no other thyng of you, but scratches and blowes with your fistes." "No, I assure you (quod the ladie) and I am certaine if hee gette hym not a good surgeon, the markes will be seene to morowe." "Wel Madame (quod the gentlewoman) sithens it is so, me thinketh you haue greater occasion to prayse GOD, then to muse vpon reuenge: For you may beleue, that sithens he had the courage to enterprise so great an exploit, and that despite hath failed him of his purpose, you can deuise no greater death for him to suffer, then the same. If you desire to be reuenged, let loue and shame alone bring that to passe, who knowe better which way to tormente him than your selfe, and with greater honor to your persone. Take heede Madame from falling into such inconuenience as he is in, for in place of great pleasure whiche he thought to haue gayned, he hath

receiued the extremest anoyance, that any gentleman can suffer. And you Madame, by thinking to augment your honor, you may decrease and diminish the same. And by making complaint, you shal cause that to be knowen, which no man knoweth. For of his part (you may be assured) there shall neuer be any thing reuealed. And when my lorde your brother at your requeste, shall execute the iustice which you desire, and that the poore gentleman shal be ready to die, the brute will runne that he hath had his pleasure vpon you. And the greatest numbere will say, that it is very difficult for a gentleman to doe suche an enterprise, except the lady minister some great occasion. Your grace is faire and yong, frequenting your life in pleasant company, there is none in all the court, but seeth and marketh the good countenaunce you beare to that gentleman, whereof your selfe hath some suspicion: which will make euery man suppose that if he hath done this enterprise, it was not without some consent from you. And your honor which hetherto hath borne your port a loft, shall be disputed vpon in all places where this historie shall be remembred." The princesse well waying the good reasons and aduise of her gentlewoman, knewe that she spake the truthe: and that by moste iust causes she should be blamed: considering the familiaritie and good countenaunce which dayly she bare vnto the gentleman. Wherefore she inquired of her woman of honour, what was beste to bee done. Who aunswered her thus. " Madame, sith it pleaseth you to receiue mine aduise, by waying the affection whereof it procedeth, me thinke you ought in your hart to reioyce, that the goodliest, and moste curteous gentleman that liueth, could neither by loue, or force, dispoile you of your greatest vertue and chastitie. For which (Madame) you are bounde to humble your selfe before God, acknowledging that it is not done by your vertue, bicause many women walking in more painefull and more vnpleasaunt trade then you do, haue humiliated and brought low by men farre more vnworthy of loue, then he which loueth you. And ye ought now to feare more then euer you did, to vse any semblance and take of amitie, bicause there haue bene many that haue fallen the second time into daungers and perils, which they haue auoyded at the first. Remember (Madame) that loue is blind, who blaseth mens

eyes in such sort, as where a man thinketh the waye moste sure, ther he is most readie to fal. And I suppose Madame, that you ought not to seme to be priuie of this chaunce, neither to him, ne yet to any els, and when he remembreth anye thing to you, doe make as though you did not vnderstande his meaning, to auoyde twoo daungers. The one of vaine glorie for the victorie you haue had, the other to take pleasure in remembring things, that be so pleasaunt to the flesh, which the most chaste haue had much a do to defend theinselues from feling some sparkes, although they seke meanes to shunne and auoyde them with all their possible power. Moreouer, Madame, to thende that he thinke not by suche hazard and enterprise to haue done a thing agreable to your minde, my counsell is, that by litle and litle, you doe make your selfe straunge, and vse no more your wonted grace vnto him, that he may know how much you despise his folly and consider how great your goodnesse is, by contenting your self with the victory which God hath geuen you, without seeking any further vltion or reuengement. And God graunt you grace (Madame) to continue that honestie whiche hee hath planted in your hart, and by acknowledging that all goodnesse procedeth from him, you may loue him and serue him, better than euer ye did." The princesse determined to credite the counsaile of her gentlewoman, slepte with so great ioye as the poore gentleman waked with sorrow. On the morrow the noble man ready to depart, asked for his hoste, vnto whom answere was made that he was so sicke, as he could not abide the light, or endure to heare one speake. Wherof the prince was sore abashed, and would haue visited him, but that it was tolde him he was a slepe, and was very loth to wake him. Wherefore without bidding him farewell, he departed, taking with him his wife and sister, who hearing the excuse of the gentleman, that would not see the prince, nor yet his companie, at their departure, was persuaded that it was he, that had done her al that torment, and durst not shew the markes which she had signed in his face. And although his maister did sende oftines for him yet came he not to the court, vntill he was healed of his woundes, except that whiche loue and despite had made in his harte. When he came to the courte and appeared before his victorious enemie, he blushed for shame of his ouer throwe.

And he which was the stoutest of all the company was so astonned as many times being in her presence, hee could not tell which way to loke or tourne his face. Wherefore she was assured that her suspicion was certain and true, by litle and litle estraunging her self from him, but it was not done so sleightly or politikely but that he perceiued it well enough, and yet he durst make no semblaunce, for feare of worse aduenture.

Notwithstanding he conserued both loue in his hart, and pacience in his minde, for the losse of his ladie's fauour, which he had right well deserued.

THE FIFTY-THIRD NOUELL.

The loue of Amadour and Florinda: wherein be contained many sleighes and dissimulations, together with the renowned chastitie of the said Florinda.

IN the countie of Arande, in Aragon, a region in Spaine, there was a ladie whiche in the best time of her youth, continued the widow of the earle of Arande, with one sonne, and one daughter, called Florinda. The sayde lady brought vp her children in all vertue and honestie, meete and conuenable for lordes and gentlemen, in such sorte, as her house was renowned to be one of the most honorable in all the region of Spaine. Many times she repaired to Tolledo, where the kinge of Spaine helde his court, and when she came to Sarragosa, which was harde adioyning to the court, she continued long with the queene, and in the courte, where she was had in so good estimation as any lady might be. Vpon a time going towards the king, according to her custome, which was at Sarragosa, in his castle of Iafferie, this lady passed by a village that belonged to the viceroy of Catalongne, who still continued vpon the frontiers of Parpignon, for the great warres that were betwene the Frenche king and him. Howebeit, at that time peace being concluded, the viceroy with all his captaines were come to do reuerence to the king. The viceroy knowing that the countesse of Arrande did passe through his countrie, went to mete her, as well for auncient amitie, as for the honor he bare vnto her being allied to the kyng. Nowe this viceroy had in his companye diuers honest gentlemen, whiche through the frequentation and continuance of the long warres, had gotten suche honour and fame, as euery man that might see them and behold them did accompt them selues happy. But amonges all other, there was one called Amadour, who although he was but xviii. or xix. yeares of age, yet he had such an assured grace and witte so excellent, as he was demed amongs a thousand persones worthy to haue the gouernement of a common wealth, whiche good witte was coupled with maruellous naturall beautie, so that there

was no eye, but did content it self eftsones to beholde hym. And this beautie so exquisite, was associated with wonderfull eloquence, as doubtfull to say, whether merited greatest honor, either his grace and beautie, or his excellent tongue. But that which brought him into best reputation, was his great hardinesse, whereof the common reporte and brute was nothing impeached or staied for all his youth. For in so many places he shewed his chivalrie, as not only Spain but Fraunce and Italie, did singularly commend and set forth his vertue: bicause in all the warres wherin he was present, he neuer spared him self for any daunger. And when his countrey was in peace and quiet, he sought to serue in straunge places, being loued and esteemed both of his frendes and enemies. This gentleman for the loue of his captaine was come into that countrey, where was arriued the countesse of Arande, and in beholding the beautie and good grace of her daughter, which was not then past XII. yeres of age, he thought that she was the fairest and most vertuous personage that euer he sawe: and that if he could obtaine her good will, he should be so well satisfied as if he had gained all the goods and pleasures of the worlde. And after he had a good whyle viewed her, for all the impossibilitie that reason could deuise to the contrary, he determined to loue her, although some occasion of that impossibilitie might ryse through the greatnesse of the house wherof she came, and for want of age which was not able as yet to vnderstande the passions of loue. But against the feare thereof he was armed with good hope, persuading himselfe, that time and patience would bring happie ende to his trauayle: and from that time gentle loue whiche without any other occasion than by his own force was entred the harte of Amadour, promised him fauour and helpe by all meanes possible to attaine the same. And to prouide for the greatest difficultie, which was the farre distance of the countrey wher he dwelt, and the small occasion that he had thereby any more to see Florinda, he thought to marry against his determination made with the ladies of Barselone and Parpignon, amonges whom he was so conuersant by reason of the warres, as he semed rather to be a Cathelan, than a Castillan, although he wer borne by Tollede, of a riche and honourable house, yet


bicause he was a yonger brother, he inioyed no great patrimonie or reuenue. Notwithstanding, loue and fortune seing him forsaken of his parentes, determined to accomlishe some notable exployt in him, and gaue him (by meanes of his vertue) that which the lawes of his countrey refused to geue. He had good experience in factes of warre, and was so well beloued of al princes and rulers, as he refused many times their goodes, being resolued not to care or esteeme the benefites of fortune. The countesse of whome I spake, arriued thus at Saragossa, was very well intertained of the king, and of his whole court. The gouernour of Catalogne, many times came thither to visite her, whom Amadour neuer failed to accompany, for the onely pleasure he had to talke with Florinda: and to make himselfe to be knownen in the company, hee went to Auenturade, whiche was the daughter of an old knight that dwelt hard by the house, whiche from her youth was brought vp with Florinda, in such familiar sorte, as she knewe all the secrets of her harte. Amadour, as well for the honestie that he found in her, as for the liuing of 111.M. ducates by the yeare which she should haue with her in mariage, determined to geue her such intertaignement, as one that was disposed to marry her. Wherunto the gentlewoman did willingly recline her eare: and bicause he was poore, and the father of the damosell rich, she thought that her father would neuer accorde to the mariage, except it were by meanes of the countesse of Arande. Wherupon she went to madame Florinda, and saide vnto her: "Madame, you see this Castillan gentleman, which so ofentimes talketh with me, I doe beleue that his pretence is to marry me: you do know what a father I haue, who will neuer geue his consent, if he be not perswaded therunto by my lady your mother and you." Florinda which loued the damosell as her selfe, assured her that shee would take vpon her to bring that matter to passe, with so earnest trauaile as if the case were her own. Then Auenturade brought Amadour before Florinda, who after he had saluted her, was like to fall in a sowne for ioy, and although he were compted the moste eloquent persone of Spaine, yet was he now become mute and dumb before Florinda, wherat she maruelled much: for albeit she was but xii. yeares of age, yet she vnderstode that there was no

man in Spaine that had a better tongue, or a more conuenable grace than he. And seing that he said nothing vnto her, she spake vnto him in this wise: "The fame which is bruted of you (sir Amadour) throughout the whole cuntry of Spaine, is such as it maketh you knowen and esteemed in this company, and giueth desire and occasion to those that know you, to imploy themselves to do you pleasure: wherefore if there be any thing wherein I may gratifie you, vse me I besech you." Amadour that gased vpon the beautie of that lady, was rapt and surprised, not well able to render thanks vnto her. And although Florinda marvelled to see him without aunswere, yet she imputed it rather to bashfulnesse than to any force of loue, and departed without further talke. Amadour knowing the vertue which in so tender yeares began to appeare in Florinda, saide vnto her whome he purposed to marry: "Doe not maruell, though my speache doe fayle before madame Florinda, for the vertues and discretion, hidden in that yonge personage, did so amase mee, as I wiste not what to saye: but I praye you Auenturade (quod he) who knoweth all her secretes, to tell me, if it be otherwyse possible, but that she hath the harte of all the lordes and gentlemen of the court: for they which know her and doe not loue her, be stones, or beastes." Auenturade whiche then loued Amadour more than all the men in the worlde, and would conceale nothing from him, said vnto him: that Madame Florinda was generally beloued: but for the custome of the cuntry, fewe men did speake vnto her. "And (quod she) as yet I se none that make any semblance of loue vnto her, but two young princes of Spaine, which desire to marry her, whereof the one is the sonne of the infant Fortune, and the other of the duke of Cadouce." "I praye you then (quod Amadour) to tell me which of them as you thinke, doth loue her best." "She is so wise" said Auenturade, "that she wil confesse or graunt her loue to none, but to such as her mother pleaseth. But yet so far as we can iudge she fauoureth muche better the sonne of the infant Fortune, than the duke of Cadouce: and for that I take you to be a man of good iudgement, this day you shall haue occasion to consider the truth: for the sonne of the infant Fortune is brought vp in court, and is one of the goodliest and perfectest

yong gentlemen in al christendome: and if the mariage do procede, according to our opinion, which be her women, he shalbe assured to haue madame Florinda: and then shalbe ioyned together the goodliest couple in the world. And you must vnderstand, that although they be both very yong, she of xii. yeares of age, and he of xv. yet is there three yeares past since their loue first began: and if you be disposed aboue other to obtaine her fauour, mine aduise is, that ye become friend and seruaunt vnto him." Amadour was very ioyfull to heare tell that his lady loued some man, trusting that in tyme he should wyne the place, not of husbände, but of seruaunt: for he feared nothing at all of her vertue, but a lacke of disposition to loue. And after this communication, Amadour bent himselfe to haunt the societie of the sonne of the infant Fortune, whose good will he sone recovered, for all the pastimes whiche the yong prince loued, Amadour could doe right well: and aboue other, he was very cunning in riding of horsse, and in handling al kindes of armes and weapons, and in all other pastimes and games meete for a yong gentleman. Warres began in Languedoc, and Amadour was forced to retire with the gouernour, to his great sorrowe and grief, for he had there no meane to returne to the place where he might se Florinda. For which cause he spake to his owne brother, whiche was steward of the king of Spaine's houshold, and declared vnto him what courtesie he had found in the house of the countesse of Arande, and of the damosel Auenturade: praying him that in his absence he would do his indeuour, that the mariage might procede, and that he would obtaine for him the credit and good opinion of the king and queene, and of al his friendes. The gentleman which loued his brother, as well by nature's instigation, as for his great vertues, promised him his trauaile and industrie to the vttermoste. Which he did in such wise as the old man her father, nowe forgetting other naturall respect, began to marke and beholde the vertues of Amadour, which the countesse of Arande, and specially faire Florinda, painted and set foorth vnto him, and likewyse the yong earle of Arande whiche increased in yeares, and therewithall in loue of those that were vertuous, and geuen to honest exercise. And when the mariage was agreed

betweene the parentes, the said steward sent for his brother whilest the truce endured betwene the two kings. About this time, the king of Spain retired to Madric, to auoyd the euil aire that was in many places, where by the aduise of diuers of his counsell, and at the request of the countesse of Arande, he made a mariage betwene the yong duchesse the heire of Medina Celi, and the yong earle of Arande, as wel for the vnion of their house, as also for the loue he bare to the said countesse. And this mariage was celebrated in the castell of Madric, whereunto repaired Amadour, who so well obtained his suite, as he married her, of whom he was muche better beloued, than his smal loue toward her deserued, sauing that it was a couerture and meanes for him to frequent the place where his minde and delight incessantly remained: after he was married, he became well acquainted and familiar in the house of the countesse, so that he was so conuersaunt amonges the ladies, as if he had bene a woman: and although hee was then but xxii. yeares of age, he was so wise and graue, as the countesse imparted vnto him all her affaires, commaunding her sonne and daughter to intertayne him, and to credite all thinges wherein hee gaue counsell. Hauing wonne this great estimation, he behaued him selfe so wyse and politike, that euen the partie whiche he loued knewe no parte of his affection: but by reason of the loue that Florinda bare to the wife of Amadour, whome shee loued more than any other woman, she was so familiar with him, as shee dissembled no part of her thought, declaring vnto him all the loue that she bare the sonne of the infant Fortune: and he that desired nothing more than thoroughly to winne her, ceased not from continuance of talke, not caring whereof he spake, so that he might hold her with long discourse: Amadour had not after his mariage continued a moneth in that companie, but was constrained to retire to the warres, where hee continued more than twoo yeares, without retourne to see his wife, who still abode in the place where she was brought vp. During the time, Amadour wrote many letters vnto his wife, but the chiefest substance therof consisted in commendations to Florinda, who for her part failed not to render like vnto him, many times writing some pretie worde or posie with her own hand, in the

letter of Auenturade. Which made her husband Amadour diligent many times to write again vnto her, but in al this doing Florinda conceiued nothing, but that he loued her with such like loue as the brother oweth to the sister. Many times Amadour went and came, but in the space of fiue yeares he neuer sawe Florinda twoo monethes together: notwithstanding, loue in despite of their distaunce and long absence, ceassed not to increase: and it chaunced that hee made a voyage home to see his wyfe, and founde the countesse farre from the court, bicause the kyng of Spain was done to Vandelousie, and had taken with him the yong earle of Arande, whiche then began to bere armes. The countesse was retired to a house of pleasure, whiche shee had vpon the frontiers of Arragon and Nauarre, and was right ioyfull when shee see Amadour, who almoste three yeares had bene absent. He was very well receiued of euery man, and the countesse commaunded that he should be vsed and intreated as her owne sonne. During the time that he sojourned with her, she communicated vnto hym all the affaires of her house, and committed the greatest trust thereof to his discretion, who wan such credite in the house as in all places where he liste, the dores were opened vnto him: whose wysedome and good behaiour made him to be esteemed like a saint or aungell. Florinda, for the loue and good wyll she bare vnto his wyfe and hym, made muche of him in all places where she sawe him: and therefore tooke no hede vnto his countenance, for that her hart as yet felt no passion, but a certen contentation in her selfe, when she was in the presence of Amadour, and of any other thing she thought not. Amadour to auoyde the iudgement of them that haue proued the difference of louers countenances, was very ware and circumspect: for when Florinda came to speake vnto hym secretly (lyke one that thought no hurt) the fier hydden in his breste, burned so sore, as he could not staye the blushyng colour of his face, nor the sparkes whiche flewe out of his eyes: and to the intent, that through long frequentation, none might espie the same, he intertaigned a very fayre ladye called Paulina, a woman in his tyme accompted so fayre, as fewe men whiche behelde her, coulede escape her bondes. This ladye Paulina vnderstanding howe Amadour vsed his loue



at Barselone and Parpignon, and how he was beloued of the fayrest ladies of the countrie, and aboue all of the countesse of Palamons, whiche in beautie was prysed to be the fayrest in all Spayne, and of many other, sayde vnto hym: "That shee had great pitie of hym, for that after so manye good fortunes, he had married a wyfe so foule and deformed." Amadour vnderstanding well by those woordes, that she had desyre to remedy her owne necessitie, vsed the best maner he coulde deuise, to the intent that in makying her beleue a lye, he should hyde from her the truthe. But shee subtile and well experimented in loue, was not contente with talke, but perceyuing well that his harte was not satisfied with her loue, doubted that hee coulde not serue his lady in secrete wise, and therefore marked hym so nere, as daylye shee had a respecte and watche vnto hys eyes, whiche hee coulde so well dissemble, as shee was able to iudge nothyng, but by darke suspicion, not without great payne and difficultie to the gentleman, to whome Florinda (ignoraunt of all their malice) dyd resorte many tymes in presence of Paulina, whose demeaner then was so familiar, as he with maruellous payne refrayned his lookes against his harte and desire: and to auoyde that no inconuenience should ensue, one daye speaking to Florinda, as they were both leaning at a wyndow, sayd these words: "Madame, I beseche you to tell mee whether it is better to speake or to die." Whereunto Florinda answered readily, saying: "I will euer geue counsell to my friendes to speake and not to dye: for there be fewe wordes spoken but that they may be amended, but the life lost cannot be recouered." "Promise me then" said Amadour, "that not onely ye will accept those wordes which I will say, but also not to be astonned or abashed, till ye haue heard the end of my tale." To whom she aunswered: "Say what it please you, for if you do affray me none other shall assure me." Then he began to saye vnto her: "Madame, I haue not yet bene desirous to disclose vnto you the great affection which I beare you, for twoo causes: the one, bicause I attend by my long seruice, to shewe you the experience thereof: the other, for that I doubted you would thinke a great presumption in me (which am but a poore gentleman) to insinuate my selfe in place whereof I am not worthy: and although

I were a prince as you be, the loyaltie yet of your harte, will not permitte any other, but him which hath already taken possession (the sonne I meane of the infant Fortune) to vse in talke any matter of loue: but Madame, like as necessitie in time of great warr constraineth men to make hauoke of their owne goodes, and to consume the greene corne, that the enemy take no profit and reliefe thereof, euen so doe I hazard to aduaunce the frute, which in time I hope to gather, that your enemies and mine may inioye thereof none aduauntage. Knowe ye Madame, that from the time of your tender yeares, I haue in such wyse dedicated my selfe to your seruice as I ceasse not still to aspire the meanes to achieue your grace and fauour: and for that occasion, I did marry her whome I thought you did loue best: and knowing the loue you beare to the sonne of the infant Fortune, I haue indeuoured to serue him as you haue sene: and that wherein I thought you dyd delighte, I haue accomplished to the vttermoste of my power. You doe see that I haue gotten the good wil of the countesse your mother, of the earle your brother, and of all those that doe beare you good wyll: in sutch sorte as in this house I am esteemed, not like a seruaunt, but as a sonne: and all the labour whiche I haue sustayned these fve yeares past, was for none other cause, but to lyue all the daies of my life with you: and vnderstand you wel, that I am none of those whiche by these meanes doe pretende to receiue of you anye profite or pleasure, other than that which is good and vertuous: I do know that I can neuer marrie you, and if I could I would not for letting the loue that you beare vnto him, whom I desire to be your husbnde, likewise to loue you in vicious sorte, like them that hope to recompence their seruice with dishonour of their ladies, I am so farre of from that affection, as I had rather be dead than to see you by desert worthy of lesse loue, and that your vertue shoulde by any meanes be diminished for any pleasure that might happen vnto mee. I do pretend and craue for the ende and recompence of my seruice, but one thing: which is, that you will continue my loyall and faithfull maistresse, neuer to withdrawe from me your wonted grace and fauour, and that you will maintaine mee in that estate wherein I am. Reposinge your trust and fidelitie in me more than in any other, making your selfe so

assured of me, as if for your honor or any cause touching your person, you stand in neede of the life of a gentleman, the same shal right willingly be employed at your commaundement: in like maner all thinges vertuous and honest which euer I shal attempt I beseech you to thinke to be done onely for the loue of you: and if I haue done for ladies of lesse reputacion than you be, any thing worthy of regard, be assured that for such a maistresse as you be, my enterprises shal increase in such sort, as the things which I found difficult and impossible, shall be easelie for me to accomplishe: but if you do not accept mee to be wholly yours, I determine to giue ouer armes, and to renounce valiaunce, because it hath not succoured me in necessitie: wherfore, madame, I humblie beseech you that my iust request may not be refused, sith with your honour and conscience you cannot well denie the same." The yong lady hearing this vnaccustomed sute, began to chaunge her colour, and to caste downe her eyes like an amased woman, notwithstandinge, being wyse and discrete she said vnto him: "If (Amadour) your request vnto me be none other than you pretende, wherfore haue you discoursed this long oration? I am afraid lest vnder this honeste pretence there lurketh some hidden malice to deceiue the ignoraunce of my youth, wherby I am wrapt in great perplexitie how to make you aunswere: for to refuse the honest amitie which you haue offered, I shall doe contrary to that I haue done hitherto, for I haue reposed in you more trust than in any liuing creature: my conscience or mine honour cannot gainesay your demaunde, nor the loue that I beare to the sonne of the infant Fortune, which is grounded vpon fayth of mariage: where you say that you pretende nothinge but that is good and vertuous, I cannot tell what thing should let me to make you aunswere according to your request, but a feare that I conceiue in hart, founded vpon the small occasion that you haue to vse that speache, for if you haue alreadye what you demaunde what doth constraene you to speake so affectuonslie?" Amadour that was not without an aunswere, saide vnto her: "Madame, you speake very wisely, and you do me so much honour, for the confidence and truste which according to your sayinge you do repose in me, as if I doe not content my selfe with such a benefite, I were the vn-

worthiest man aliue: but vnderstande madame, that he which goeth about to builde a perpetual mansion, ought to haue regard to a sure and firme foundation: wherfore I which desire perpetually to remaine your seruante, doe seeke not onely the meanes to kepe my selfe neare about you, but also to foresee that none doe vnderstand the great affection that I do beare you: for although my mind be so vertuous and honest, as the same may disclose it selfe before the whole worlde, yet there bee some so ignorant and vnskilfull of louers harts, as manye times will iudge contrary to trouth, wherof proceedeth so ill brute and report, as if the effectes were wicked: the cause which hath made me so bold to say and declare vnto you thus much, is the suspicion that Paulina hath conceyned, for that I cannot loue her: who doth nothing els but marke and espie my countenance in euerye place, and when you vse your familiar talke with me before her, I am so afraide to shewe any signe whereby shee maye grounde or verifie her iudgemente, that I fall into that inconuenience, which I would willingly auoyde: wherfore I haue thought good to beseech you (before her and those which you do know to be so malicious) to refraine from talkinge with mee so sodainlye, for I had rather dye, than anye liuinge creature should haue mistrust thereof: and were it not for the loue which I beare vnto your honour, I had not yet declared the same vnto you, for I do hold my selfe sufficiente happy and content of the onely loue and affiaunce that you put in me, crauing nought els butt the continuance of the same." Florinda wel satisfyed with this aunswere, began to feele in harte a further thing to growe than euer she did before: and hearing the honest reasons alleaged by him, said, that her honestie and vertue shoulde make aunswere for her, and therewithall assented to his demaunde: whereof whether Amadour were ioyful, louers neede not doubt: but Florinda credited more his counsell, than he woulde haue had her. For shee being fearefull and timerous, not onely before Paulina, but in all other places, vsed farre other countenance than she was wont to do: and in this alienation of her former familiarity, she misliked the conuersation that Amadour had with Paulina, whose beauty was such, that shee could not otherwise beleue, but that hee loued her: and Florinda to passe ouer

her heauinesse, daily vsed the company of Auenturade, that began maruelously to be ialous betweene her husbände and Paulina, whereof shee made complaint many times to Florinda, who comforted her so well as shee coulde, like one attached with the same disease: Amadour coniecturing by the countenance of Florinda, that not onely shee was estraunged from hym through his former aduertisement, but also that there was some other displeasure conceyued, comming vpon a time, from euensong out of the monasterie, he sayd vnto her: "Madame, what countenance do you make me?" "Such as I thincke doth please you best," answered Florinda. Then Amadour suspecting a matter, to know whether it were true, began to saye: "Madame, I haue so vsed Paulina, as she beginneth to giue ouer her opinion of you." She answered him: "Ye cannot do a better thing either for your selfe or for me: for in doing your selfe a pleasure, you do honour vnto me." Amadour iudged by these words that she thought he toke pleasure to talke of Paulina, wherewith he became so desperate, as hee could not forbear to say vnto her in anger: "Madame, you begin very sone to torment your seruante: there was neuer paine more greenous vnto mee, than to be forced to speake to her whom I loue not: and sithens al that which I do for your seruice is taken in ill part, I wil neuer speake againe vnto her, whatsoeuer happen: and to dissemble mine anger and contentacion, I wil addresse my selfe to some place hereby, till your fancie be ouer past: but I hope I shall receiue newes from my captaine, to retourne to the warres, where I will so longe continue, as you shall well knowe, that nothing els but you alone doth force me to tarrie here." And in saying so, without attending for her aunswere, hee incontinently departed, and shee remayned so sad and pensife as any woman coulde be: and loue began to shewe his greate force in such wyse, as shee knowing her wrong incessantly, wrote to Amadour praying him to retourne home, which he did within few dayes after that his choler was past: and to tell you what businesse there was, to interrupte and breake the ialousie conceiued, it were superfluous: but in the ende, he wanne the field, so that she promised him, not onely to beleene that he loued not Paulina, but also helde her selfe assured that it should be to him a martirdome intollerable, to

speake vnto her or any other, except it were to do her seruice: after that loue had vanquished this presente suspicion, and that the two louers began to take more pleasure in their mutuall talke than euer they did before: newes came that the king of Spaine was about to addres his armie to Saulse, wherfore he that was wont to be there with the first, was not like now to fayle to augment his honour: but true it is, that his grieve was presently more greate, than at other times before, aswell for losinge the pleasure which he enjoyed, as for feare to finde some mutacion and chaunge at his returne, because he saw Florinda pursued by great princes and lords, and alreadye come to the age of xv. yeares, and thought that if she were married in his absence, he should neuer haue occasion to see her againe, except the countesse of Arande would appointe his wyfe to waite vpon her: for accomplishment wherof he made such frends, as the countesse and Florinda promised him, that into what soeuer place she were married his wyfe Auenturade should attende vpon her: and although it was in question that Florinda should be married into Portugall, yet determined that his wyfe should neuer forsake her: and vpon this assuraunce, not without vnspeakeable sorow, Amadour departed and left his wyfe with the countesse. When Florinda was alone, her seruaunt departed, shee gaue her selfe to all vertuous life, hopinge thereby to attaine the fame of a most perfecte lady, and to be counted worthie the interteignemente of such a seruaunt. Amadour arriued at Barsalone, was banqueted and intertayned of the ladies after the old maner, but they finding him so altered and chaunged, thought that mariage could neuer haue had such power vpon man, as it had ouer him: for he seemed then to disdaine, what sometime he greatly desired, and specially the countesse of Palamons, whom he derely loued, could deuise by no meanes to make him go alone home to his lodging: Amadour tarried at Barsalone so little while as hee coulde, because hee might not come late to the place where hee purposed to winne and atchiue honour: and being arriued at Saulse, great and cruell warres were comenced betwene the two kinges, which I purpose not to recite, ne yet the noble enterprises done by Amadour, whose fame was bruted aboue the rest of his companions. The duke of Nagers arriuinge at

Parpignon, had charge of two thousand men, and prayed Amadour to be his lieutenante, who with that hand served so well, as no crie was hard in al the skirmishes, other than of Nagyers. It chaunced that the king of Thunis, which of long time had warre with the Spaniards, vnderstandinge howe the kinges of Spaine and Fraunce were together by the eares at Parpignon and Narbone, thought that in better time he could not anoye the king of Spaine: wherefore he sent a great number of foists and other vessels, to robbe and spoile those frontiers which were ill guarded and kept: they of Barsalone seing a number of shippes passe before the towne, aduertised the king that was at Saulse, who immediatly sent the duke of Nagyers to Palamons: and when the shippes discried that the place was well guarded, they made as though they would passe further: but about midnight they retourned, and landed so many men, that the duke of Nagyers was taken prisoner. Amadour which was very vigilant, hearing allarme, presently assembled so many men as he could, and defended him self so wel, as the force of his enemies a long time could not hurt him: but in thende knowing that the duke of Nagyers was taken prisoner, and that the Turks were determined to burne the citie of Palamons, and then to fier the house which he strongly had forced againste them, hee thought it better to render himself, than to be cause of the losse of so many good souldiors as were vnder his gouernement, and also by putting himselfe to raunsome, he hoped in time to come to see Florinda: then he submitted himselfe to a Turke called Derlyn, the gouernor of the king of Thunis, who conueyed him home to his maister, where he was well entertaigned, and better kept: for they thought that hauing him in their hands, they had gotten the only Achilles of Spaine. In this sort Amadour continued almost the space of two yeares, in the seruice of the king of Thunis: newes came into Spaine of this ouerthrow, wherof the frends of the duke of Nagyers, were very sorowfull: but they that loued the honor of their countrie, thoughte Amadour to bee the greatest losse, the brute wherof was noysed in the house of the countesse of Arande, wher at that time the poore gentlewoman Auenturade lay very sore sicke. The countesse suspecting very much the affection that Amadour

bare vnto her daughter, which he suffered and dissembled for his vertue's sake, called her daughter aside, and told her the pitious newes. Florinda which could well dissemble said vnto her, that it was a great losse for al their house, but specially she pitied the state of his poore wife, because at that time she was so sore sicke. But seing her mother weepe so bitterly, she let fal some teares to keepe her company, least through to much dissimulacion her loue might be discouered. After that time, the countesse spake to her many times, but she could neuer perceiue by her countenance, any cause of certaine suspicion. I wil leaue to speake of the voyages, the prayers, the supplications and fastings, which Florinda did ordinarily make for the safeguard and prosperitie of Amadour, who incontinently so sone as he was ariued at Thunis, sent newes to his frends, and by a sure messenger aduertized Florinda, that he was in good health and hope to retourne. Which newes was to the poore lady, the only meanes to releue and ease her sorow. And doubt ye not, but the meanes of writing, was vtterly debarred from Amadour, wherof Florinda acquitted herself so diligently, as by her letters and epistles, he receiued great consolation and comfort. The countesse of Arande receiued commaundement from the king to repaire to Sarragosa, where hee that time was arriued. And there she found the yong duke of Cardonne making sute to the king and queene, for mariage of her daughter. The countesse vnwilling to disobey the king, agreed, thinkinge that her daughter being very yonge, had none other affection, but that which already had taken sure impression. When the accorde was concluded, shee sayde vnto her daughter, that she had chosen that matche, as best worthy to ioyne with her person. Her daughter considering howe in a thing already done it was to late to take counsell, said vnto her, that God was to be praised in all things. And seing her mother so far alienated from her intent, she thought it better to shew her selfe obedient, than to take pitie vpon herselfe. And to comfort her in that sorowe, she vnderstode that the infant Fortune was at the point of death. But before her mother or any other person, she shewed not so much as one signe or token therof, straying her grieve so much, as

the teares by force retiringe to her harte, did cause the bloud to issue forth at her nose, in such abundance, as her life was in present daunger. And to recouer her of that disease, shee was married vnto him, for whose sake shee had rather haue chaunged her life for present death. After the mariage, Florinda went wyth her husbände into the duchy of Cardonne, and in her company Auenturade, to whom she secretly made complaint, as wel of her mother's rigor, as also of the sorow she conceyued for the losse of the sonne of the infant Fortune. But of her grieve for Amadour, she spake no worde, but by way of comforting her. This yong lady then determined to haue God and the respect of her honoure before her eies, and so wel to dissemble her griefes, as none at any time should perceiue that shee misliked her husband. In this sort Florinda passed long time, in a life no lesse pleasaunt than death. The report whereof she sent to her good seruaunt Amadour, who vnderstanding her great loue, and wel disposed hart, and the loue shee bare to the infant Fortune, thought that it was impossible she could liue long, and lamented her state more than his owne. This grieve augmented his paine of imprisonment, wishinge to haue remayned a slaue all the dayes of his life, so that Florinda had had a husbände respondent to her desire, forgettinge his owne grieve by feeling that his frende did suffer. And because he vnderstode by a secret freind which he had gotten in the court of the king of Thunis, that the king was minded to offer him the gibbet, or els to make him renounce his fayth, for the desire hee had to retaine him still, and to make him a good Turke, he behaued himself so well, wyth him that toke him prisoner, that he gaue him leaue to depart vpon his fayth, taxing him at so greate raunsome, as he thought a man of so small substance was neuer able to pay. And so without speaking to the king his maister, hee let him go vpon his fayth. After he had shewed himselfe at the court of the king of Spaine, he departed incontinently to his frends to get his raunsome, and went straight to Barsalone, whether the yong duke of Cardonne, his mother, and Florinda, was gone aboute certaine affaires. Auenturade so sone as she heard tell that her husband was come, declared the same

to Florinda, who seemed for her sake greatly to reioyce therat. But fearing that the desire she had to see him would make her chaunge countenance, and that they which knew not the cause therof, would conceiue some ill opinion, she stode still at a window to see him come a far of: and so sone as she espied him, shee went downe a paire of darke staires that none mighte perceiue her chaunge of colour. When she had imbraced Amadour, shee led him into her chamber, and from thence to her mother in law, which had neuer seene him before. He had not continued there two dayes, but he was so well beloued, as he was before in the house of the countesse of Arande. I will omitte the words and talke betwene Florinda and Amadour, and the complaints which he made vnto her of his ill aduenture, that hee had sustayned in his absence. And after manye teares vttered by her, for the heauines she had taken, aswel for the mariage against her wil, as for the losse of him that she loued so dearely, and for him whom she thoughte neuer to see againe, shee determined to take her consolation in the loue and fidelitie that she bare to Amadour, which notwithstanding she durst not open and declare: but he that much doubted therof, lost no occasion and time to let her know and vnderstande the great loue he bare her. And euen vppon the point that she was ready to receiue him, not as a seruaunt, but for her assured and perfect frend, there chaunced a maruellous fortune: for the king, for certaine matters of importance, incontinently sent forth Amadour, wherof his wyfe conceyued such sorrow, as hearing those newes, she souned and fell from the stayres where she stode, wherewith she hurte herselfe so sore, as neuer after she reuiued. Florinda (that by the death of her had lost all comfort) made such sorrow, as one that was destitute of good frends and kinsfolke, but Amadour toke the same in worst part: for he had not onely lost one of the most honest women that euer was, but also the meanes that he should neuer after that time haue occasion to visit Florinda. For which cause he fell into such sicknes, as he was like to haue died sodainly. The old duchesse of Cardonne, incessantly did visite him, and alledged many philosophical reasons to make him patiently to receiue death, but

it auayled nothing: for if death of thone side did torment him, loue on the other did augment his martirdome. Amadour seing that his wyfe was buried, and that the king had sent for him, (hauing no occasion of longer abode there) he entred into such dispaire, as hee seemed to be oute of his wittes. Florinda which in comforting him was almost desolate, remayned by him one whole afternone, vsinge very honest and discrete talke vnto him, thinking thereby to diminishe the greatnesse of his sorrowe, and assured him that shee would devise wayes how he might visite her more oft than he did thinke for. And because he must depart the next morning, and was so feeble and weake that he could not rise from his bed, he intreated her to come and se him at night after euery man was retired to bed: which she promised to doe, not knowing that loue's extremety was voyd of reason. And he that saw no hope euer after that time to see her againe, whom so long time he had serued: and of whom he had neuer receyued other interteignment than that you haue heard, was so beaten and ouercom with loue long dissembled, and of the despaire he conceiued, that (all meanes to vse her company taken away) he purposed to play double or quit, either to lose her, or to win her fauour for euer, and to pay himself at one instant the rewarde which he thought he had right wel deserued. Wherefore he caused the curtaines of his bed to be drawen, that they which came into the chamber mighte not see him, complayning of sicknes more than he was wont to do, wherby they of the house thought he would not haue liued xxiv. houres. After euery one of the house had visited him at night, Florinda (at the special request of her husband) came to see him, thinking for his comfort to vtter vnto him her affection, and how aboue all other she would loue him, so far as her honor did permit: and sitting downe in a chayre at the bed's head, she began to comfort him, and therewithal powred out many teares. Amadour seing her sorowful and pensife, thought that in her great torment he might easely attaine the effect of his intent, and lifted himself vp in his bed, which Florinda perceyuing, she would haue staid him, because she thought that through weakenes he was not able to moue: and kneeling vpon his knees, he said vnto her: " Must

I for euermore forgo your sight mine owne deare lady?" And in saying so he fel downe betwene her armes like one that fainted for lack of strength. Then poore Florinda imbraced him, and of long time held him vp, doing all that was possible for his comfort. But the medecine she gaue him to ease his sorow, did rather increase the same more strong: for in fayning himself half dead, without speaking any word, he attempted that which the honor of womanhode doth defend. When Florinda perceiued his ill intent, she could scarce beleue the same, considering his honest requests made before time, and therfore asked him what it was that he desired. But Amadour fearing to heare her aunswere which he knew well could be none other but chaste and vertuous, without further talke, pursued his purpose so earnestly as he could, wherwith Florinda beinge astonned did suspect he had bin out of his wittes rather than beleue that he wente about her dishonor. Wherefore with loude voice she called a gentleman that was in the chamber. Which Amadour hearing, vtterly in dispaire, threw himself so sodenly into his bed, as the gentleman thought he had beene dead. Florinda rising out of the chaire, saide vnto him: "Goe quickly and fetch some good vineger." Which the gentleman did. Then Florinda began to say vnto him: "Amadour, what follie hath inchaunted your wisdom? And what is that which you would haue done vnto me?" Amadour that through the force of loue had lost al reason, said vnto her: "Doth my long seruice merite a recompence of such cruelty?" "And wher is the honesty then," said Florinda, "which so many times you haue preached vnto me?" "Ah, madame!" said Amadour: "I beleue it is impossible your selfe more faithfully to loue your owne honour than I do. For when you were vnmarried, I could so wel subdue my harte and affection, as you did neuer vnderstand my will and desire. And now that you be married, to the intente your honour may reste in couerte, what wrong do I to aske that which is mine owne, for by force of loue I haue won you? He that first enioyed your harte, hath so ill followed the victorie of your bodye, as hee hath well deserued to lose altogether. He that possesseth your body, is not worthy to haue your hart, wherefore your body is none of his, ne yet he

hath no title in the same. But I madame, these five or six yeares haue susteyned suche paynes and trauaile for your sake, as you are not ignoraunt but to me appertayneth both your body and harte, for whose sake I haue vtterlye forgotten mine owne. And if you can finde in your hart to defende mee from my right, doubt ye not but they which haue proued the forces of loue, wil lay the blame on you, which hath in this sort robbed me from my libertie, and with your heavenly graces hath obscured my senses, that not knowing hereafter what to do, I am constrayned to go without hope for euer to see you againe. Notwithstanding warrante your selfe, that in what place so euer I am, you shall still possesse my harte, which shall continue your's for euer, be I vppon the lande or water, or betweene the hands of my moste cruell enemies. But if I could recouer before my departure, that surety of you which the greatnesse of my loue deserueth, I shall be strong enough patiently to beare the griefes of my long absence. And if it please you not to graunt me this request, you shal shortly heare tell that your rigor hath rendred vnto me a most vnhappy and cruel death." Florinda no lesse astonned than sorie, to heare such words proceede from him, of whom she neuer had any such suspicion, weeping saide vnto him: "Alas, Amadour, is this the meaning of those vertuous words which sithens the beginning of my youth ye haue vttered vnto me? Is this the honor of the conscience, which you haue many times perswaded me rather to die than lose the same? Haue you forgotten the good examples recited vnto me of vertuous dames that haue resisted foolish loue? And is this the maner of your contempt of ladies that were foolish and vaine, whose light behauiour you dissembled so much to abhorre? I cannot beleue Amadour that you are driuen into such madnes and furie, as the feare of God, your owne conscience, and the estimacion of mine honor, should be altogether out of your minde and memorie. But if it so be as you say, I do praise the goodnes of God, which hath preuented the mishap that nowe I am fallen into, in shewing me by your words, the hart which I did not know. For hauing lost the sonne of the infant Fortune, who not onely is married into another place, but also loued another, and

I now married to him, which I cannot loue, I thought and determined wholly, with al mine hart and affection to loue you, founding the same vpon that vertue which I knew to be in you, which loue by your meanes onely I haue conceived, and therefore did more esteeme my honor and conscience, than the price of mine owne life. Vppon assurance of this stone of honestie, I am com hither thinking to build a most sure foundation. But (Amadour) in one moment thou haste declared, how in place of a pure foundation, thy buildinge is reared vpon a light sand, and vnconstant ground, or els vpon a filthy and foule quaire. And where I began to erect a good part of the lodgings of this building vpon the ground of the fidelitie, hoping to dwel there for euer, sodenly thou hast ouerthrowen the whole plot. Wherefore, you must immediatly breake in sonder the hope and credit that euermore you haue found in me, and determine that in what place soeuer I be, not to pursue me either by worde or countenance. And do not thinke, that I can or will at anye time hereafter chaunge this mine opinion, reciting this my last adieu with great sorrow and grieve. But if I had made an othe of this perfect amitie and loue, I know mine harte would haue died vpon this breach, although the astonishment in that I am deceiued, is so great, as I am wel assured it will make my life either short or sorowfull: and therefore I bid you farewell and that for euer." I purpose not to tel you the sorow which Amadour felt by hearing those words, because it is impossible not only to write them, but also to thincke them, except it be of such as haue had experience of the like. And seing that vppon this cruel conclusion she would haue gone away, he caught her by the arme, knowing well that if he did not remoue that ill opinion, which by his owne occasion she had conceyued, hee should lose her for euer. Wherefore he said vnto her with a very faint chere: "Madame, al the dayes of my life I haue desired to loue a woman endued with honestie and vertue: and because I haue found so few, I would faine haue tried whether your person had bin worthy of estimacion and loue, wherof now I am wel assured, and humbly do praise God therefore, because mine hart is addressed to such perfection: beseching you to pardon this fond and bold

attempt, sith you see that the end doth redound to your owne honor and contentacion." Florinda, which began to know by him the malice of other men, like as she was hard to beleue the euill wher it was, euen so she was more difficile to credite the good where it was not, and said vnto him: " I pray to God your words be true: yet am I not so ignorant but that the state of mariage wherein I am, hath made me euidently to know the strong passion of blind loue which hath forced you vnto this follie: for if God had losed my hande, I am wel assured you would not haue plucked backe the bridle: they that attempt to seeke after vertue, do not take the way that you do tread: but this is sufficient if I haue lightly beleueed any honestie in you, it is time for me now to know the truth, that I may rid my self from you." And in saying so, Florinda went out of the chamber, and all the night long, she neuer left weeping, feeling such great grieffe in that alteration, as her hart had much to do, to sustaine the assaults of sorrow that loue had made: for although reason thoughte neuer to loue him againe, yet the hart which is not subiect to our fancie, would not accord to that crueltie: for which consideration, she loued him no lesse than she was wont to do, and knowing that loue was the cause of that fault, she purposed for satisfaction of loue, to loue him with all her hart, and yet for the obedience and fealtie due to her honor, she thought neuer to make any semblance. In the morning Amadour departed in this sort, troubled as you haue hearde, neuerthelesse his couragious heart entred not in dispaire, but renued a fresh hope once againe to see Florinda, and to win her fauour: then he toke his iourney towards the court of Spaine (which was at Tolledo) taking his way by the countesse of Arande, wher late in an euening he arriued, and found the countesse verie sicke for the absence of her daughter Florinda: when shee saw Amadour, shee kissed and embraced him, as if he had beene her owne child, aswel for the loue she bare vnto him, as for the like which she doubted that he bare to Florinda, of whom very earnestly she inquired for newes, who tolde her the best that he could deuise, but not the whole truth, and confessed vnto her the loue betweene Florinda and him, (which Florinda had still conceiled and kept secrete) praying her

ayde to bring him againe into her fauour: and so the next morning hee departed. And after he had done his businesse with the queene, he repayred to the warres, so sadde and chaunged in all his condicions, as the ladies, captaynes and all they that were wonte to keepe him companie, did not know him: his apparell was all blacke, mourning for the death of his wife, wherby he couered the sorrow which was hid in his hart: in this wyse Amadour passed three or four yeres before he returned to the court. And the countesse of Arande which heard tell that Florinda was so much altered, as it would haue moued any hart to behold her, sent for her, hoping that she would haue come, but her expectacion was frustrate, for when Florinda vnderstode that Amadour had told her mother the good will betweene them, and that her mother being so wise and vertuous giuing credite to Amadour, did beleue his report, she was in marueilous perplexitie, because of the one side she saw that her mother did esteeme him so well, and on the other side if she declared vnto her the truth, Amadour woulde conceiue displeasure: which thing she had rather die than to do: wherefore she thought herself strong inough to chastise him of his folly, without helpe of frends. Againe, she perceyued that by dissembling the euil which she knew by him, she should be constrained by her mother and her frends, to speake and beare him good countenance, wherby she feared he would be the more encoraged: but seing that he was far of, she passed the lesse of the matter: and when the countesse her mother did commaunde her, she wrote letters vnto him, but they were such as he might wel gather that they were written rather ypon obedience, than of good wil, the reading wherof bred sorrow vnto him in place of that ioye he was wonte to conceiue in her former wrytings. Within the terme of two or three yeres, after he had done so many noble enterprises as al the paper of Spain could not containe them, he deuised a new inuention, not to wyne and recouer the harte of Florinda (for he demed the same quite lost) but to haue the victorie ouer his enemy, sithens she had vsed him in that sorte, and reiecting al reason and specially feare of death, into the hazarde wherof he hasted himselfe, he concluded and determined his enterprise in such sorte, as for his behauiour towards the gouernour, hee was

madame, the fruite of my labour shall not be thus taken from me for scruples and doubt: and sithe that loue, pacience, and humble desires, cannot preuayle, I will not spare by force to get that, which except I haue it will be the meanes of mine ouerthrowe." When Florinda sawe his face and eyes so altered, and that the fairest die and colour of the world, was become so red as fier, with his most pleasaunt and amiable loke transformed into horrible hew and furious, and therewithall discried the very hote burning fier, to sparkle within his harte and face: and how in that fury with one of his strong fistes he griped her delicate and tender hands: and on the other side shee seeing all her defences to fayle her, and that her feete and handes were caught in suche captiuitie as she could neither run away nor yet defend her selfe: knewe none other remedie, but to proue if he had yet remaining in him any griftes of the former loue, that for the honour therof he might forget his crueltie. Wherefore she sayd vnto him: "Amadour, if now you doe accompt me for an enemy, I besech you for the honestie of the loue which at other times I haue found planted in your harte, to geue me leaue to speake before you doe torment me." And when shee saw him recline his eare, she pursued her talk in this wyse: "Alas, Amadour, what cause haue you to seke after the thing wherof you shall receiue no contentation, inflicting vppon me such displeasure as there can be no greater? you haue many times proued my wil and affection in the time of my youthfull dayes, and of my beautie farre more excellent than it is now, at what tyme your passion might better be borne with and excused, than nowe: in such wyse as I am nowe amased to see that you haue the harte to torment me at that age and great debilitie wherewith I am affected: I am assured that you doubt not but that my wyl and mind is such as it was wont to be: wherefore you can not obtayne your demaunde but by force: and if you sawe howe my face is arrayed, you would forget the pleasure whiche once you conceiued in me, and by no meanes would forcibly approche nere vnto me: and if there be lefte in you yet any remnantes of loue, it is impossible but that pitie may vanquishe your furie: and to that pitie and honestie whereof once I had experience in you, I do make my plaint, and of the same I do de-

maund grace and pardon, to thintent that according to the effect of your wonted perswasion and good aduise you may suffer me to liue in that peace and honestie, which I haue determined and vowed during life: and if the loue which you haue borne me be conuerted into hatred, and that more for reuengement than affection, you doe purpose to make me the moste vnhappy of the world, I assure you, you shall not be able to bryng your intent to passe, besides that you shall constrayne me against my determination, to vtter and reueale your villany and disordinate appetite towards her which did repose in you an incredible affiance: by discouering whereof, thinke verely that your lyfe cannot continue without perill." Amadour breaking her talke sayde vnto her: "If I die for it, I will presently be acquieted of my torment: but the deformitie of your face (whiche I thinke was done by you of set purpose) shall not let me to accomplishe my will: for since I can get nothing of you but the bones and carcase, I will holde them so fast as I can." And when Florinda sawe that prayers, reason, nor teares could not auayle, but that with crueltie he woulde nedes followe his villanous desire, which she had hetherto still auoided by force of resistance, she did helpe her selfe so long, till she feared the losse of her breath, and with a heauy and piteous voice she called her mother so loude as shee could crie, who hearing her daughter crie and cal with rufull voyce, began greatly to feare the thing that was true: wherfore she ran so fast as she could into the warderobe. Amadour not being so nere death as he saide he was, left of his holde in suche good time, as the lady opening her closet, founde him at the dore, and Florinda farre enough from him. The countesse demaunded of him, saying: "Amadour what is the matter? tell me the truthe." Who like one that was neuer vnprouided of excuse, with his face pale and wanne, and his breath almoste spent, sayde vnto her: "Alas, madame, in what plight is my lady Florinda? I was neuer in all my life in that amase wherin I am now: for as I sayd vnto you, I had thought that I had inioyed part of her good will, but nowe I know right well that I haue none at all: I thinke madame, that sithe the time she was brought vp with you, shee was neuer lesse wise and vertuous than shee is nowe, but fàrre more daungerous

and squeimishe in speaking and talking then behoueth, and euen now I would haue loked vpon her, but she would not suffer me: and when I viewed her countenaunce, thinking that it had bene some dreame or vision, I desired to kisse her hande, according to the fashion of the countrey, which shee vtterly refused. True it is madame, I haue offended her, wherof I craue pardon of you, but it chaunced only for that I toke her by the hand, which I did in a maner by force, and kissed the same demaunding of her no other pleasure: but she like one (as I suppose) that hath sworne my death, made an outcry for you (as you haue hearde) for what cause I know not, except that shee were afraide I would haue forced some other thing: notwithstanding madame, whatsoever the matter be, I protest vnto you the wrong is myne, and albeit that she ought to loue al your honest seruaunts, yet fortune so willeth as I alone, the moste affectioned of them all, is clerely exempt out of her fauour: and yet I purpose still to continue to-wardes you and her, the same man I came hither, beseching the continuance of your good grace and fauour, sithens that without desert I haue loste hers." The countesse which partely beleued, and partelye mistrusted his talke, went vnto her daughter, and demaunded wherfore she cried out so loud. Florinda answered that she was afrayde: and albeit the countesse subtilly asked her of many things, yet Florinda would neuer make other answere, for that hauing escaped the handes of her enemy, she thought it punishment enough for him to lose his labour: after that the countesse had of long tyme communed with Amadour, she lefte him yet once againe to enter in talke with Florinda before her, to see what countenaunce shee would make him. To whom he spake fewe wordes except they were thanks for that she had not confessed the truthe to her mother, praying her at least wise that seing he he was dispossessed out of her hart, she would suffer none other to receiue his place: but she answering his former talke, saide: "If I had had any other meanes to defend my self from you than by crying out, she should neuer haue heard me, and of me you shall neuer heare worse, except you doe constrainne me as you haue done, and for louing any other man, you shall not nede to feare: for sithe I haue not found in your harte (which I esteemed the most

vertuous in al the world) the good successe that I desired, I wyll neuer beleue hereafter that vertue is planted in any man: and this outrage shall make me free from all passions that loue can force." And in saying so she tooke her leaue. The mother which behelde her countenance, could suspecte nothing, and after that tyme, shee was persuaded that her daughter bare no more affection to Amadour, and thought assuredly that she was voyde of reason, because she hated al those things which she was wont to loue: and from that time forth there was such warre betwene the mother and the daughter, as the mother for the space of vii. yeares would not speake vnto her, except it were in anger: which she did at the request of Amadour: during which time, Florinda conuerted the misliking of her husband, into mere and constant loue, to auoyde the rigour and checkes of her mother: howbeit, seing that nothing could preuayle, she purposed to beguile Amadour, and leauing for a day or two her straunge countenance towards him, she counselled Amadour to loue a woman, whiche as she sayd, did commonly dispute and talke of their loue. This lady dwelt with the queene of Spaine, and was called Lorette, who was very ioyfull and glad to get such a seruant: and Florinda founde meanes to cause a brute of this newe loue to be spred in enery place, and specially the countesse of Arande (being at the court) perceiued the same, who afterwards was not so displeased with Florinda, as she was wont to be: Florinda vpon a tyme heard tel that a captain the husband of Loret, began to be ialous ouer his wife, determining by some meanes or other, he cared not howe, to kill Amadour. Florinda notwithstanding her dissembled countenance, could not suffer any hurt to be done to Amadour, and therefore incontinently gaue him aduertisement thereof: but he retourning againe to his former follies, answered, that if it would please her to intertaine him every day three houres, he would neuer speake again to Lorette, whereunto by no meanes shee would consent. Then Amadour saide vnto her: " If you will not haue me to liue, wherefore go ye about to defend me from death? except ye purpose to torment me aliue with greater extremitie then a thousand deathes can do: but for so much as death doth flie from me, I will neuer leaue to seeke him out, by whose ap-

proche only I shall haue rest." Whilest they were in these tearmes, newes came that the kyng of Granado was about to enter into great warres against the king of Spain: in suche wyse as the king sent against hym the prince his sonne, and with hym the constable of Castile, and the duke of Albe, twoo auncient and sage lordes. The duke of Cardonne and the counte of Arande not willing to tarie behinde, besought the kyng to geue eyther of them a charge: whiche hee did according to the dignitie of their houses, appointing Amadour to be their guide: who during that warre, did sutche valiaunt factes as they seemed rather to be desperately than hardily enterprysed: and to come to the effect of this discourse, his great valiaunce was tryed euen to the death: for the Moores making a bragge as though they would geue battayle, when they sawe the army of the Christians, counterfaieted a retire, whome the Spaniardes pursued, but the olde constable and the duke of Albe doubting their pollicie, stooode still, against the will of the prince of Spaine, not suffering him to passe ouer the ryuer, but the counte of Arande and the duke of Cardonne, (although they were countremanded) did followe the chase, and when the Moores sawe that they were pursued with so small a number, they returned, and at one recountrie kylled the duke of Cardonne, and the counte of Arande was so sore hurte as hee was lefte for dead in the place. Amadour arriuing vpon this ouerthrowe, inuaded the battayle of the Moores with sutche rage and furie, as hee rescued the twoo bodyes of the duke and countie, and caused them to be conueyed to the prince's campe, who so lamented their chaunce, as if they had bene his owne brethren: but in searching their woundes, the countie of Arande was founde to be aliue, and was sent home to his own house in a horselitter, where of long time he was sicke, and likewise was conueied to Cardonne the dead bodie of the yong duke. Amadour in rescuing those two bodyes, tooke so little heede to him selfe, as he was inclosed with a great number of the Moores, and because he would bee no more taken, as well to verifie his faith towards God, as also his vowe made to his lady, and also considering that if he were prysoner to the kyng of Granado, either hee should cruelly be put to death, or els forced to renounce his faith, he determined not to make his

death or taking glorious to his enemies: wherefore kissing the crosse of his sworde, and rendring his body and soule to the handes of almighty God, he stabbed him selfe into the body with sutch a blow, as there neded no second wound to rid him of his life: in this sorte died poore Amadour, so much lamented as his vertues did deserue. The newes hereof was bruted throughout Spaine, and came to Florinda who then was at Barselone, where her husbände in his life tyme ordeined the place of his buriall: and after shee had done his honourable obsequies, without making her own mother, or mother in law priuie, she surrendred her selfe into the monasterie of Iesus, there to liue a religious life, receiuing him for her husband and friende, whiche had deliuered her from the vehement loue of Amadour, and from a displeasaunt life so great and vnquiet as was the company of her husband.

In this wise she conuerted all her affections, to pietie and the perfit loue of God, who after she had long time liued a religious life, shee yelded vp her soule in such ioye as the bridegrom doth when he goeth to visite his spowes.

THE FIFTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The incontinencie of a duke and of his impudencie to attaine his purpose, with the iust punishment which he receiued for the same.

IN the citie of Florence (the chieftest of all Thuscane) there was a duke that married the lady Margaret the bastarde daughter of the emperour Charles the fift. And because shee was very young, it was not lawfull for him to lye with her, but taryng till she was of riper yeres, he interteigned and vsed her like a noble gentleman. And who to spare his wife, was amorous of certaine other gentlewomen of the citie. Amonges whom he was in loue with a very fayre and wyse gentlewoman, that was sister to a gentleman, a seruauant of his, whome the duke loued so well as himselfe, to whome he gaue so muche authoritie in his house, as his word was so wel obeied and feared as the duke's him self, and there was no secrete thing in the duke's minde, but he declared the same vnto him, who might ful wel haue bene called a second himself. The duke seing his sister to be a woman of great honestie, had no wayes or meanes to vtter vnto her the loue that he bare her (after he had inuented all occasions possible) at length he came to this gentleman which he loued so well, and said vnto him: " My friend, if there were any thing in all the world, wherein I were able to pleasure thee, and woulde not doe it at thy request, I should be afraid to say my fantasie, and much ashamed to craue your help and assistance: but the loue is such which I bare thee, as if I had a wife, mother, or daughter, that were able to saue thy life, I would rather imploy them, than to suffer thee to die in torment: and if thou doe beare vnto me that affection which am thy maister, thinke verely that I doe beare vnto thee the like. Wherefore I will disclose vnto thee suche a secrete and priuie matter, as the silence thereof hath brought me into sutche plight as thou seest, whereof I doe loke for none amendement but by death or by the seruice whiche thou maiest doe me, in a certayne matter which I purpose to tell thee." The gentleman hearing the reasons of his maister, and seing his face not fayned,

but all besprent with teares, tooke great compassion vpon him and sayd: "My lorde, I am your humble seruaunt: all the goodes and worship that I haue doth come from you. You may saye vnto me as to your moste approued frende. Assure your self, that all which resteth in my power and abilitie, is already at your commaundement." Then the duke began to tell him of the loue that hee bare vnto his sister, which was of sutch force, as if by his meanes he did not enioye her, his life could not long continue. For he saide, that he knew right well that intreatie and presentes were with her of no regard. Wherfore he praied him, that if he loued his life, so well as he did his, to finde meanes for him to receiue that benefite, which without him he was in despaire neuer to recouer. The brother which loued his sister and honor of his kindred, more than the duke's pleasure, made a certain reuerence vnto him, humbly beseching him to vse his trauaill and pain in all other causes sauing in that, bicause it was a sute so slaundersous and infamous, as it would purchase dishonor to his whole familie, adding further, that neither his hart nor his honor could serue him, to consent to do that seruice. The duke inflamed with vnspeakeable furie, put his finger betwene his teeth, and biting of the nayle, said vnto him in great rage: "Well then sithe I finde in thee no frendship, I know what I haue to doe." The gentleman knowing the crueltie of his maister, being sore afraide, replied: "My lorde, for so much as your desire is vehement and earnest, I will speake vnto her and brynge you aunswere of her mynde." And as he was departing, the duke sayde vnto him: "See that thou tender my life as thou wylt that I shall doe thyne." The gentleman vnderstanding well what that woorde did meane, absented him selfe a day or twayne to aduise what were best to be done. And amonges diuers his cogitations, there came to his remembrance the bounden dutie which he dyd owe to his maister, and the goodes and honours whiche he had receyued at his handes, on the other syde, hee considered the honour of his house, the good life and chastitie of his syster, who (he knewe well) woulde neuer consent to that wickednesse, if by subiltie shee were not surprised, or otherwyse forced, and that it were a thing very straunge and rare, that he should goe about to defame hymselfe and the whole

stocke of his progenie. Wherefore hee concluded, that better it were for hym to die, than to commit a mischief so great vnto his sister, whiche was one of the honestest women in all Italie. And therewithall considered how he might deliuer his cuntrye from sutch a tyrant, which by force would blemishe and spot the whole race of his auncient stock and familie. For he knew right wel that except the duke were taken away, the life of him and his affinitie could not be in securitie and safegarde: wherfore without motion made to his sister of that matter, hee deuised how to saue his life and the reproche that should follow. Vpon the second daye he came vnto the duke, and tolde hym in what sorte he had practised with his sister, and that although the same in the beginning was harde and difficult, yet in the ende he made her to consent, vpon condicion that hee would keepe the same so secrete as none but hymselfe and he myght knowe of it. The duke desirous and glad of those newes, dyd sone beleue hym, and imbracing the messenger, promised to geue him whatsoeuer he would demaunde, praying hym with al speede that hee might inioye his desyred purpose. Whereupon they appointed a tyme: and to demaunde whether the duke were glad and ioyfull of the same, it were superfluous. And when the desired night was come, wherein he hoped to haue the victorie of her whom he thought inuincible, he and the gentleman alone withdrewe themselues together, not forgetting his perfumed coif and swete shirte wrought and trimmed after the best maner. And when eche wight was gone to bed, both they repayred to the appointed lodging of his lady, where being arriued they founde a chamber in decent and comly order. The gentleman taking of the duke's night gowne, placed hym in the bedde, and sayde vnto hym: "My lorde, I wil nowe goe seeke her, which can not enter into this chamber without blushing, howbeit I truste before to morrowe morning she wyll be very glad of you." Which done, he left the duke, and went into his own chamber, where he founde one of his seruauntes alone, to whome he sayde: "Hast thou the harte to followe me into a place where I shall be reuenged vpon the greatest enemie that I haue in the worlde?" "Yea sir," aunswered his man. Whereupon the gentleman toke him with him so sodainly, as he had no leasure to arme him

selfe with other weapon but with his onely dagger. And when the duke heard him come againe, thinking he had brought her with hym that he loued so derely, hee drewe the curteine, and opened his eyes to behold and receiue that ioye which he had so long looked for, but in place of seing her which he hoped should be the conseruation of his life, he sawe the acceleration of his death, which was a naked sworde that the gentleman had drawen, who therewithall did strike the duke, which was in his shirte voyde of weapon, although well armed with courage, and sitting vp in his bedde grasped the gentleman about the body, and sayde: "Is this thy promise whiche thou hast kept?" And seeing that hee had no other weapon but his teeth and nayles, he bitte the gentleman in the arme, and by force of his owne strengthe he so defended himselfe, as they bothe fell downe into the flower. The gentleman fearing the matche, called for hys manne, who finding the duke and his maister fast together, that he wist not whether to take, he drewe them both by the feete into the middest of the chamber, and with his dagger assayde to cut the duke's throte. The duke who defended himselfe, till suche time as the losse of his bloud made him so weake and feeble that he was not able to contende any longer. Then the gentleman and his man laide him againe into his bed, where they accomplished the effect of that murther. Afterwardes drawing the curteine, they departed and locked the dead body in the chamber. And when he sawe that he had gotten the victorie of his enemy, by whose death he thought to set at libertie the common wealth, he supposed his facte to be vnperfect if he did not the like to five or sixe of them which were nerest to the duke, and best beloued of him. And to attaine the perfection of that enterpryse, he bad his man to doe the like vnto them one after another, that hee had done to the duke. But the seruauant being nothing hardie or coragious, said vnto his maister: "Me thinke, sir, that for this time ye haue done enough, and that it were better for you now to deuise waye howe to saue your owne life, than to seeke meanes to murder any more. For if we do consume so long space of time to kill euery of them, as we haue done in murdering of the duke, the day light will discouer our enterprise before we haue made an ende, yea although wee finde them naked and

without defence." The gentleman whose euill conscience made him fearfull, did beleue his seruaunt, and taking him alone with him, went to the bishop that had in charge the gates of the citie, and the vse of the postes, to whom he sayd: " This euening (my lord) newes came vnto me that mine owne brother lieth at the point of death, and crauing licence of the duke to goe se him he hath giuen me leaue. Wherefore I beseeche you commaunde the postes to deliuer me two good horse, and that you will sende worde to the porter that the gates may be opened." The bishop which esteemed no lesse his request than the commaundement of the duke his maister, incontinently gaue him a billet, by vertue wherof both the gates were opened, and the horse made ready according to his demaunde. And vnder colour and pretence of visiting his brother, he rode to Venice, where after he had cured himselfe of the duke's bitinges fastened in his fleshe, he trauailed into Turkey. In the morning the duke's seruauntes seing the time so late before their maister retourned, suspected that he was gone forth in visiting of some ladye, but when they sawe he taried so long, they began to seke for him in euery place. The poore duchesse into whose harte the loue of her husbände strongly did inuade, vnderstanding that he could not be founde, was very pensife and sorowfull. But when the gentleman which he so dearely loued, was not likewyse seene abroad, searche was made in his chamber, where finding bloud at the chamber dore, they entred in, but no man was there to tell them any newes, and following the tract of the bloud the poore seruauntes of the duke went to the chamber dore, where he was, which dore they found fast locked, who incontinently brake open the same: and seing the place all bloudy, drew the curteine, and found the wretched carcasse of the duke lying in the bedde, sleeping his endlesse sleepe. The sorrow and lamentation made by the duke's seruauntes, carying the dead bodye into his palace, is easie to bee coniectured. Wherof when the bishop was aduertised, he repaired thether, and tolde how the gentleman was gone awaye in the night in great haste, vnder pretence to goe to see his brother: whereupon it was euidently knowen that it was he that had committed the murder. And it was proued that his poore sister was neuer priuie to the facte, who although she was astonned with the

sodaynes of the deede, yet her lone towards her brother was farre more increased, bicause he had deliuered her from a prince so cruell, the enemy of her honestie : for doing whereof he did not sticke to hazard his owne life. Whereupon she perseuered more and more in vertue, and although she was poore, by reason her house was confiscate, yet both her sister and shee matched with so honest and riche husbandes as were to be founde in Italie : and afterwarde they bothe liued in good and great reputation.

THE FIFTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

One of the French kinges called Frauncis the firste of that name, declared his gentle nature to counte Guillaume, that would haue killed him.

IN Digeon a town of Burgundie, there came to the seruice of king Frauncis, (whiche was father to Henry the second of that name, whiche Henry was kyled by Mounsier Mongomerie, in a triumphe at the tilt, and graundfather to Charles the ix. that now raigneth in Fraunce) an earle of Allemaigne called Guillaume, of the house of Saxon, whereunto the house of Sauoie is so greatly allied, as in old time they were but one. This counte for so much as he was esteemed to be so comely and hardy a gentleman as any was in Almaine, was in sutch good fauour with the king, as he tooke him not onely into seruice, but vsed him so nere his persone, as he made him of his priuy chamber. Vpon a day the gouernour of Burgundie, the lorde Trimouille (an auncient knight and loyall seruaunt of the kyng) like one suspicious and fearfull of the euill and hurt of his maister, had daylie espies ouer his enemies, vsing his affaires so wysely, as very fewe thinges were concealed from hym. Among other aduertisementes, one of his friendes wrote vnto him that the counte Guillaume had receiued certain sommes of money, with promise of more, if by any meanes he could deuise which waye to kill the king. The lorde of Trimouille hearing of this, failed not to come to the kyng to giue him knowledge thereof, and disclosed it lykewyse to madame Loyse of Sauoye his mother, who forgetting her amitie and aliaunce with the Almaine earle, besought the king forthwith to put hym awaye. The kyng prayed his mother to speake no more thereof, and sayde, that it was impossible that so honest a gentleman would attempt to doe a deede so wicked. Within a while after, there came other newes of that matter, confirming the first: whereof the gouernour for the intire loue he bare to his maister, craued licence either to expel him the countrie, or to put him in warde. But the king gaue speciall

commaundement that he should not make any semblaunce of displeasure, for that hee purposed by some other meanes to knowe the truthe. Vpon a time when he went a hunting he girded about him the best sworde that hee had, to serue for all armes and assayes, and toke with hym the counte Guillaume, whome he commaunded to wayte vpon him, the firste and chiefest next his owne persone. And after he had followed the hart a certayne tyme, the kyng seing that his traynes was farre from hym, and no man neare him sauing the counte, tourned hym selfe rounde about, and when hee sawe that hee was alone, in the mydde of the forest, hee drewe out his sworde, and sayd to the counte: "How saye you (sir counte) is not this a fayre and good swoorde?" The counte feling it at the point, and well viewyng the same, aunswared that he neuer sawe a better in all his life. "You haue reason," sayde the kyng, "and I beleue that if a gentleman were determined to kyll mee, and did knowe the force of myne armes, and the goodnesse of myne harte accompanied with this sword, he would bee twyse well aduised before hee attempted that enterprise. Notwithstanding I would accompt him but a cowarde, wee being alone withoute witnesses, if he did not attempt that, which he were disposed to do." The counte Guillaume with bashfull and astonned countenance aunswared: "Sir, the wickednesse of the enterprise were very great, but the folly in the execution were no lesse." The king with those wordes fell in a laughter, and put the sword in the skaberd againe: and hearing that the chase drewe nere him, he made to the same so faste as he coulde. When he was come thether, he said nothing of that which had passed betweene them, and verelye thoughte that the counte Guillaume although that he was a strong and stoute gentleman, yet he was no man to do so great an enterprise. But the counte Guillaume, fearing to be bewrayed or suspected of the fact, next day morning repayred to Robertet the secretarie of the kinge's reuenues, and saide that hee had well wayed the giftes and annuities which the kinge would giue him to tarrie, but he perceined that they were not sufficient to interteigne him for halfe a yeare, and that if it pleased not the king to double the same, hee should be forced to

departe, praying the sayde Robertet to know his grace's pleasure so sone as he coulede, who sayd vnto him, that he himselfe could without further commission disburse no more vnto him, but gladly without further delay he would repaire to the king: which he did more willingly, because he had seene the aduertisements of the gouernor aforesaid. And so sone as the kinge was awake, he declared the matter vnto him in the presence of monsieur Trimouille and monsieur Bouinet lord admirall, who were vtterly ignorant of that which the king had done. To whom the kinge said: " Loe, ye haue bene miscontented for that I would not put away the counte Guillaume, but now ye see he putteth away himselfe. Wherefore Robertet (quoth the king) tell him, that if he be not content with the state which he receiued at his first entrie into my seruice, whereof many gentlemen of good houses would thinke themselues happie, it is meete that he seeke his better fortune, and tell him that I would be lothe to hinder him, but wilbe very well contented, that he seeke where he may liue better, accordingly as he deserveth." Robertet was so diligent to beare this aunswere to the counte, as he was to present his sute to the kinge. The counte said that with his licence he would gladly go forthwith: and as one whom feare forced to depart, he was not able to beare his abode xxiv. houres. And as the king was sitting downe to dinner, fayning to be sorye for his departure, but that necessitie compelled him to lose his presence, hee toke his leaue. He went likewise to take leaue of the king's mother, which she gaue him with so great ioy, as she did receiue him, being her nere kinsman and freind. Then he went into his countrie: and the king seing his mother and seruantes astonned at his sodaine departure, declared vnto them the alarme, which he had giuen him, saying, that although he was innocent of the matter suspected, soe was his feare greates ynoughe, to departe from a maister wyth whose conditions hitherto he was not acquainted.

THE FIFTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

A pleasaunt discours of a great Lord to enioy a Gentlewoman of Pampelunæ.

THERE was in the time of king Lewes the xii. of that name, a young lord, called the lorde of Auannes sonne to the lorde Alebret, and brother to king John of Nauarre, with whom the said lord of Auannes ordinarily remayned. Now this yong lorde was of the age of xv. yeaes, so comely a personage, and full of curtesie and good behaiour, as hee seemed to be created for none other purpose, but to be beloued and regarded: and so he was in deede of al those that did wel behold and note his commendable grace and condicion, but chiefly of a woman, dwelling in the citie of Pampelunæ in Nauarre, the wife of a rich man, with whom she liued honestly: and although she was but xxiii. yeres of age, and her husband very nere fiftie, yet her behavior was so modest, as she seemed rather a widow than a married wyfe, who vsed not to frequent and haunte any mariages, banquets, or common assemblies without the company of her husbande, the vertue and goodnes of whom she so greatly esteemed, as she preferred the same before the beautie of al others. The husband, hauing experience of her wisdom, put such trust in her, as he committed al thafaires of his house to her discretion: vpon a day this rich man with his wife, were inuited to a mariage of one that was nere kinne vnto him: to which place (for the great honor of the mariage) repaired the yong lord of Auannes, who naturally was giuen to dauncing, and for his excellencie in dauncing there was not his like to be found in his time: after dinner when they prepared to daunce, the lord of Auannes was intreated thereunto by the rich man: the said lord asked him with what gentlewoman hee should lead the daunce. He aunswared him: "My lord if there were any one more beautifull, or more at my commaundement then my wyfe, I would present her vnto you, beseeching you to do mee so much honour as to take her by the hande." Which the yong lorde did, and by reason of his youthfull courage he toke more

pleasure in vaultinge and dauncinge, then in beholding the beautie of the ladies: and she whom he ledde by the hand, contrarywyse regarded more the grace and beautie of the said yong lord, then the daunce wherin she was, albeit for her great wisdom she made therof no semblance at al. When supper time was come, the lord of Auannes badde the companie farewell and went home to the castle: whether the riche man accompanied him vppon his moile: and riding homewards together, hee saide vnto him: " My lord, this day you haue done so great honor vnto my kinsemen and mee, that it were great ingratitude if I should not offer my selfe with all the goods I haue to do you seruice: I knowe sir that such lordes as you be which haue nere and conetous fathers, many times do lacke money which we by keeping of smal household, and vsing good husbandrie do heape and gather together. Now thus it is sir, that God hauing giuen mee a wyfe accordinge to my desire he would not in this world altogether indue mee with heauenly pleasures, but hath left me voyde of one ioy which is the ioye that fathers haue of children. I know sir that it is not my dutie, and belongeth not to my state to adopt you for such a one, but if it maye please you to receiue mee for your seruauant, and to declare vnto me your small affaires, so farre as a hundred thousande crownes shall extende, I will not sticke to helpe your necessities." The yong lorde of Auannes was very ioyfull of this offer, for he had suche a father as the other had described vnto him: and after he had giuen him hartie thanckes, he called him his frendlye father. From that time forth the sayd riche man conceiued such loue in the yong lord, as daily he ceased not to inquire of his lacke and want, and hid not from his wyfe the deuocion which he bare to the said lorde of Auannes, for which she rendred vnto him double thanckes. And after that time the said yong lord lacked not what he desired, and many times resorted to that rich man's to drinke and eate with him, and finding him not at home, his wyfe rewarded him with his demaunde: whoe admonished her by wyse and discrete talke to be vertuous, because he feared and loued her aboue all the women of the worlde. She which had God and her honor before her eyes, was contente with his sight and talke, wherin consisted the satisfaction of his honestie and vertuous

loue: in such wise as she neuer made any signe or semblaunce, wherby he might thinke and iudge that shee had anye affection vnto him, but that which was both brotherlie and christian. During this couerte amitie, the lord of Auannes through the foresaid ayde, was very gorgious and trimme, and approching the age of xvii. yeares, began to frequent the company of gentlewomen more then he was wont to do: and although he had a more willing desire, to loue that wyse and discrete dame aboue other, yet the feare which he had to lose her loue (if shee misliked his sute) made him to hold his peace, and to seeke els wher: and gaue himself to the loue of a gentlewoman dwelling hard by Pampelunæ, which had to husband a yong gentleman, that aboue all thinges loued and delighted in dogges, horsse, and hawkes. This noble gentleman began (for her sake) to deuise a thousand pastimes, as torneyes, running at the tilt, mommeries, maskes, feastes and other games, at all which this yong dame was present: but because that her husband was very fantastical, and saw his wyfe to be faire and wanton, hee was ialous of her honour, and kepte her in so strait, as the sayde lord of Auannes colde get nothing at her hands but words, shortly spoken, in some daunce, albeit in litle time and lesse speache, the sayd lorde perceyued that there wanted nothing for full perfection of their loue, but time and place: wherfore he came to his new adopted father the rich man, and said vnto him that he was minded with great deuotion to visite our lady of Montferrat, intreating him to suffer his houshoulde traine to remaine with him, because he was disposed to go thither alone. Whereunto he willingly agreed: but his wyfe whose hart the great prophet loue had inspired, incontinently suspected the true cause of that voyage, and cold not forbear to saye vnto the lord of Auannes these woords: " My lord, my lorde, the pilgrimage of the lady whom you worshippe, is not farre without the walles of the citie, wherefore I beseech you aboue all thinges to haue regarde vnto your health." Hee which feared her, and loued her, blushed at her words, and without talke by his countenaunce he seemde to confesse the trothe: whereupon he departed, and when he had bought a couple of faire genets of Spaine he clothed himself like a horsekeeper and so dis-

guised his face as no man knew him. The gentleman which had married that fonde and wanton gentlewoman, louinge aboue all things (as is sayde before) fayre horses, espyed those two genets which the lord of Auannes did lead, and incontinently came to buy them: and after he had bought them, hee beheld the horse-keeper which rode and handled them passing well, and asked him if he were willing to serue him: the lord of Auannes answered yea, and added further how he was a poore horse-keeper vnskilfull of other science but of keepinge of horse, which practize hee could do so well, as he doubted not but he should content and please him: the gentleman very glad thereof, gaue him charge of all his horse, and called forth his wyfe vnto him, vnto whom he recommended his horse and horsekeeper, and told her that he himself was disposed to go to the castel: the gentlewoman so well to please her husband as for her owne delight and pastime, wente to loke vpon her horse and to behold her new horskeper, who seemed to be a man of good bringing vp, notwithstanding she knewe him not. He seing that she had no knowledge of him, came to do reuerence vnto her after the maner of Spaine, and takinge her by the hand kissed the same, and by kissing of her hand, he disclosed himself so much as she knew him: for in dauncing with her many times he vsed the like curtesie: and then she ceased not to deuise place wher she might speake to him a part: which she did the very same euening: for being bidden to a feast wherunto her husband would faine haue had her to go, she fayned herselfe to be sicke and not able: and her husband loth to faile his frends request, said vnto her: "For so much (my good wyfe) as you be not disposed to go with me, I pray you to haue regard to my dogges and horse that they may lack nothing." The gentlewoman was very wel contented with that comission: howbeit without chaung of countenance she made him answer that sith in better things he would not imploie her, she would not refuse the least, to satisfie his desire: and her husband was no soner out of the gates, but she went downe into the stable, where she founde faulte wyth diuers things: for prouision whereof she committed such seuerall busines to her men on euery side, that shee remayned alone with the master horskeper: and for feare least any should

come vpon them vnwares, she said vnto him: "Go into my garden and tarie my comming in the litle house at the ende of the alley." Which he did so diligently as hee had no leasure to thancke her, and after that she had giuen order to the yeomen of the stable, shee went to see the dogges, counterfaiting like care and diligence to haue them wel intreated: in such wise as she seemed rather a mayde of the chamber then a maistresse of the house: which done shee returned into her chamber, where she made her selfe to be so werie, as she went to bed, saying that she was disposed to sleepe. All her women left her alone except one in whom she reposed her greatest trust, and vnto whom she said: "Go downe into the garden, and cause him whom you shall finde at the ende of the alley, to come hither." The mayde wente downe and founde the maister horskeeper there, whom forthwith shee brought vnto her maistresse: and then the gentlewoman caused her mayd to go forth to watch when her husbände came home. The lord of Auannes seing that he was alone with his maistres, put of his horsekeeper's apparrel, plucked from his face his false nose and beard, and not as a feareful horsekeeper, but like such a lord as he was, without asking leaue of the gentlewoman, boldly laied him downe beside her: where hee was of that foolish woman receiued so ioyfully, as his estate and goodly personage did require, continuing with her vntil the retorne of her husband: at whose coming putting vpon him againe his counterfaite attire, left the pleasure which by policie and malice he had vsurped. The gentleman when hee was within, hearde tell of the dilligence which his wife had vsed vpon his commaundement, and thanked her very hartelie. "Husband (said the gentlewoman) I do but my dutie, and do assure you that if there be no ouerseer to checke and commaunde your negligent seruants, you shal haue neyther dogge nor horse well kept and ordred: but forasmuche as I knowe their slouth, and your good wil, you shalbe better serued then you haue bin heretofore." The gentleman who thought that he had gotten the best horsekeeper of the worlde, asked her how she liked him. "I assure you sir (quoth she) he doth his busines so well as any seruaint, howbeit he had neede to be called vpon, for you know seruantes in these dayes without an ouerseer, wilbe be slow and carelesse." Thus of

long time continued the husbände and wyfe in greater amitie and loue then before, and gaue ouer all the suspicion and ialousie which hee had conceyued, because before time his wyfe louinge feastes, daunces and companies, was become intentife and diligente about her household: and perceiued that now many times she was contented in homely garmentes to go vp and downe the house wher before she was accustomed to be iij. houres in trimming of herselfe: whereof shee was commended of her husbände, and of euery man that knew not how the greater deuill had chased awaye the lesse. Thus liued this yonge dame vnder the hypocrisie and habite of an honest woman, in suche fleshlye pleasure as reason, conscience, order and measure, had no longer resting place in her: which insaciat lust the yong lord of delicate complexion was no longer able to susteine, but began to waxe so pale and feeble, as he needed no visarde for disfiguring of himselfe. Notwithstanding the folish loue which he bare to that woman so dulled his sence, as he presumed vppon that force which fayled in the monstrous giant Hercules, whereby in the ende constrayned with sicknes and councelled by his maistresse, which loued not the sicke so well as the hole, demaunded leaue of his maister to go home to his frends: who to his great grieve graunted him the same: and caused him to make promise that when he was recouered hee should returne againe to his seruice. Thus went the lord of Auannes on foote away from his maister, for he had not paste the lenght of one streete to trauaile. And when he was come to the rich man's house his new father, he found none at home but his wyfe, whose vertuous loue shee bare him was nothing diminished for al his voyage: but when she saw him so leane and pale, she could not forbear to say vnto him: " Sir, I knowe not in what staye your conscience is, but your body is litle amended by this pilgrimage, and I am in doubtte that the way wherein you traueiled in the night, did wearie and paine you more, then that vppon the daye: for if you had gone to Hierusalem on foote, you mighte perhappes haue returned more sunne burned, but more leane and weake it had bin impossible. Now make accompt of your pilgrimage here, and serue no more such sainctes, for in place of raysinge the deade from life, they do to death those that

be on liue: moreouer I shall saye vnto you, that if your bodye were neuer so sinfull, I see well it hath suffred suche penaunce, as I haue pitie to renewe anye former payne." When the lorde of Auannes had hearde all her talke he was no lesse angrie with himselfe then ashamed, and saide vnto her: " Madame, I haue sometimes heard tell that repentaunce insueth sinne, and now I haue proued the same to my cost, praying you to excuse my youth that could not be corrected but by experience of that euill, which before it would not beleue." The gentlewoman chaunging her talke, caused him to lye downe vppon a fayre bedde, where he lay the space of xv. dayes, feedinge onely vppon restoratiues: and the husband and wyfe kept him so good companye, as one of them neuer departed from him: and albeit that he had committed those follies, (suche as you haue heard) against the minde and aduise of that wyse and discrete dame, yet shee neuer diminished the vertuous loue which shee bare him, for shee still hoped that after he had spent his yonger dayes in youthly follies, he would retire at length when age and experience should force him to vse honest loue, and by that meanes would be altogether her owne. And during those fiteene dayes that he was cherished in her house, she vsed vnto him womanly and commendable talke onely tending to the loue of vertue, which caryed such effect as he began to abhorre the follie that he committed: and beholding the gentlewoman which in beautie passed the other wanton, with whom he had delt before, he imprinted in minde more and more the graces and vertues that were in her, and was not able to keepe in harte the secrete conceipt of the same, but abandoning all feare he sayd vnto her: " Madame, I see no better meanes, to be such one, and so vertuous as you by wordes desire me for to be, but to settle my harte, and giue my selfe to be holie in loue with vertue, and the qualities therunto appertinent. I humblie beseech you therefore (good madame) to tel me if your selfe wil not vouchsafe to giue me al your ayde and fauor that you possiblief can, for thobteyning of the same." The maistresse very ioyful to heare him vse that language, made him aunswere: " And I do promise you sir, that if you wilbe in loue with vertue as it behoueth so noble a state as you be, I wil do you the seruice that I can to bring you there-

unto with such power and abilitie as God hath planted in mee." " Well madame," said the lorde of Auannes, " remember then your promise, and vnderstande that God vnknown of the Christian but by fayth, hath dayned to take flesh, like to that our sinfull which we beare about vs, to thend that by drawing our flesh into the loue of his humanity, he may draw also our minde to the loue of his diuinitie, and requireth to be serued by thinges visible to make vs loue by fayth that diuinity which is inuisible: in like maner the vertue which I desire to imbrace all the dayes of my life, is a thing inuisible and not to be seen but by outward effects: wherfore needefull it is, that she now do put vpon her some body or shape to let herselfe be knowen amonges men: which in deede she hath don by induing herself with your form and shape, as the most perfect that she is able to find amonges liuing creatures: wherfore I do acknowledge and confesse you to be not onely a vertuous creature, but euen very vertue it self. And I which see the same to shine vnder the glimsing vaile of the most perfect that euer was: I will honor and serue the same during my life, forsaking (for the same) all other vaine and vicious loue." The gentlewoman no lesse content then marueling to here those words, dissembled so wel her contented minde as she said vnto him: " My lord, I take not vpon me to aunswere your diuinity, but like her that is more fearefull of euill then beleful of good, do humblie beseech you to cease to speake to me those words of prayse, that is not worthy of the least of them. I know right wel that I am a woman, not onely as another is, but so imperfect, as vertue might do a better acte to transforme me into her, then she to take my forme, except it be when she desires to be vnknown to the world: for vnder such habite as mine is, vertue cannot be knowen, according to her worthines: so it is sir, that for mine imperfection, I wil not cease to bere you such affection, as a woman ought or maye do that feareth God, and hath respect to her honour: but that affection shal not appere, vntill your harte be able to receiue the pacience which vertuous loue commaundeth. And now sir I know what kinde of speach to vse, and thincke that you do not loue so well, your owne goodes, purse or honour, as I doe with all my hart tender and imbrace the same." The

interteigned for her husband, quicklie lept into the bed, hoping that the occasion and place would make that wise woman to chaunge her minde, which he found to be contrary: for so sone as he lept into the bed of thone side, shee speedelie went out of the other, and putting on her night gowne she repaired to the bed's head, and said vnto him: "How now sir, do you thincke that occasions can chaunge a chaste harte? beleeeue and thincke that as gold is proued in the fornace, euen so an vnspotted hart in the midst of temptacion: wherein many times an honest hart sheweth it selfe to be more strong and vertuous, then els where, and the more it is assailed by his contrary, the coulder be the desires of the same: wherefore be you assured that if I had bin affected with other minde then that which many times I haue disclosed vnto you, I would not haue fayled to finde meanes to haue satisfied the same: praying you that if you will haue me to continue the affection which I beare you, to remoue from your minde for euer not onely the will but the thought also, for any thinge you be able to do to make me other then I am." As she was speaking of these words her women came into the chamber, whom she commaunded to bring in a colacion of all sortes of comficts and other delicates: but that time hee had no appetite either to eate or drinke, hee was fallen into suche dispaire for fayling of his enterprise: fearing that the demonstracion of his desire, would haue caused her to giue ouer the secrete familiaritie betweene them. The husbände hauinge ceased the fier, returned and intreated the lord of Auannes that night to lodge in his house, who passed that night in such number of cogitacions as his eyes were more exercised with weeping then sleeping, and early in the morninge hee bad them farewell in their bedde, where by kissing the gentlewoman hee well perceiued that she had more pitie vppon his offence, then euill will against his person, which was a cole to make the fier of loue to kindle more fiercely. After dinner he rode with the king of Taffares, but before his departure he wente to take his leaue of his newe alied father and of his wyfe: whoe after the furst commaundement of her husband, made no more difficultie to kisse him then if he had bin her owne sonne. But be assured the more that vertue stayed

her eye and countenance to shewe the hidden flame, the more it did augment and become intollerable, in such wyse as not able to indure the warres which honour and loue had rayseed within her hart, (who notwithstanding was determined neuer to shewe it, hauing lost the consolacion of her sight, and forgeuen the talke with him for whom she liued) a continuall feuer began to take her, caused by a melancholicke and couert humor, in such wyse as the extreme partes of her body waxed cold, and those within burnt incessantly. The phisitions (in the hands of whom man's life doth not depend) began greatly to mistrust health by reason of a certaine opilation which made her melancholicke: who counceiled the husbände to aduertise his wyfe to consider her conscience, and that she was in the handes of God (as though they which be in health were not in his protection): the husbände which intirely loued his wyfe, was wyth their woordes made so heauye and pensife, as for his confort he wrote to the lord of Auannes, beseeching him to take the paynes to visite them, hoping that his sight would greatly ease and relieue the disease of his wife. Which request the lord of Auannes immediatly vppon the recepte of those letters, slacked not, but by post arriued at his father's house: at the entrie whereof hee founde the seruantes and women makinge great sorrowe and lamentacion accordinglie as the goodnes of their maistresse deserved: wherewith the sayde lord was so astonned as he stode stil at the doore like one in a traunce, vntil he saw his good father: who imbracing him beganne so bitterly to weepe, that he was not able to speake a worde. And so conueied the sayd lorde of Auannes vp into the chamber of his poore sicke wyfe: who casting vp her languishing eyes looked vppon him: and reaching his hand vnto her, she strayned the same with all her feeble force, and imbracing and kissinge the same made a marueylous plainte, and sayd vnto him. " O my lord, the houre is come that all dissimulacion must cease, and needes I must confesse vnto you the troth, which I to my greate paine haue concealed from you: which is, that if you haue borne vnto me greate affection, beleeeue that mine rendred vnto you, hath bin no lesse: but my sorrow hath farre surpassed your grieffe, the smarte whereof I do feelee nowe against myne hart and will: wherefore, my lord, yee shall vnderstand, that God and mine

honour would not suffer mee to disclose the same vnto you, fearing to increase in you that which I desired to be diminished: but knowe yee, my lorde, that the woordes which so many tymes you haue vttered vnto mee, haue bred in me such grieffe, as the same be the instrumentes and woorkers of my death, wherewith I am contente sith God did giue mee the grace not to suffer the violence of my loue, to blotte the puritie of my conscience and renowne: for lesse fire then is wythin the kindled harte of mine, hath ruinated and consumed most famous and stately buildinges. Nowe my hart is well at ease, sithe before I dye, I haue had power to declare myne affection, which is equall vnto yours, sauing that the honor of men and women be not a like: beseechinge you, my lorde, from henceforth not to feare to addresse your selfe to the greatest and moste vertuous ladies that you can finde: for in such noble hartes do dwell the strongest passions, and there the same be moste wisely gouerned: and God graunt that the grace, beautie and honestie, which be in you, do not suffer your loue to trauell wythout fruite: haue in remembrance good, my lord, the stabilitie of my constante minde, and do not attribute that to crueltie which ought to be imputed to honor, conscience and vertue: which are thinges a thousande times more acceptable, then the expence and losse of transitorie life. Nowe, farewell my lorde, recommendinge vnto your honour the state of my husband your good father, to whom I pray you to reherse the troth of that which you doe know by mee, to the intent that he may be certefied how dearely I haue loued God and him: for whose sake I beseech you to absente your selfe out of my sight: for from henceforth I do meane holye to giue my selfe to the contemplacion of those promises which God hath louingly decreed, before the constitution of the worlde." In saying so shee kissed him, and imbraced him wyth all the force of her feeble armes. The sayde lord, whose hart was dead for compassion, as her's was in dying through grieffe and sorrow, without power to speake one onely worde, withdrew himselfe out of her sight and laye downe vpon a bed within an inner chamber: where he fainted many times. Then the gentlewoman called for her husbande, and after she had giuen him many goodly lessons, shee recommended him to the lord of Auannes, assuringe him that

THE FIFTY-SEVENTH NOUELL.

A punishment more rigorous than death, of a husband towards his wife that had committed adulterie.

KING Charles of Fraunce, the eight of that name, sent into Germany a gentleman called Bernage, lorde of Cyure besides Amboise: who to make speede, spared neither daye nor nighte for execution of his prince's commaundement. In sutch wyse as very late in an euening he arriued at the castle of a gentleman, to demaunde lodging, which very hardly he obtained. Howbeit, when the gentleman vnderstode that he was the seruaunt of such a kyng, he prayed him not to take it in ill parte the rudinesse of his seruantes because vpon occasion of certain his wiue's frends which loued him not, he was forced to kepe his house so straight. Then Bernage tolde him the cause of his iourney, wherein the gentleman offered to doe to the king his maister all seruice possible. Leading him into his house where he was feasted and lodged very honorably. When supper was ready, the gentleman conueyed him into a parler wel hanged with fayre tapistrie. And the meate being set vpon the table, and he required to sit down, he perceiued a woman comming forth behind the hanging, which was so beautifull as might bee seene, sauing that her head was all shauen, and apparelled in Almaine blacke. After bothe the gentlemen had washed, water was brought to the gentlewoman, who when she had washed she sat down also, without speaking to any, or any word spoken vnto her againe. The lorde Bernage beholding her well, thought her to be one of the fayrest ladies that euer he sawe, if her face had not bene so pale and her countenaunce so sadde. After she had eaten a litle, she called for drinke, which one of the seruantes brought vnto her in a straunge cup: for it was the head of a dead man trimmed with siluer, wherof she drancke twice or thrice. When she had supped and washed her handes, making a reuerence to the lord of the house, shee retourned backe againe that waye shee came, without speaking to any. Bernage was so much amased at that straunge sighte, as he waxed very heauie and

sadde. The gentleman who marked hym, sayde ynto hym: " I see well that you be astonned at that you saw at the table, but seyng your honest demeanour, I wyll not keepe it secrete from you, because you shal not note that crueltie to be done without greate occasion. This gentlewoman whiche you see, is my wyfe, whom I loued better than was possible for any man to loue his wyfe. In such sorte as to marry her I forgot all feare of friendes, and brought her hither in dispite of her parentes. She likewyse shewed vnto me suche signes of loue, as I attempted a thousande wayes to place her here for her ioye and myne, where wee lyued a long tyme in suche reste and contentation, as I thought my self the happiest gentleman in Christendome. But in a iourney whiche I made, the attempt whereof myne honour forced me, shee forgot bothe her selfe, her conscience, and the loue whiche shee bare towards mee, and fell in loue with a gentleman that I brought vp in this house, whiche her loue vpon my retourne I perceiued to be true. Notwithstanding the loue that I bare her, was so great as I had no mistrust in her, tyll sutch tyme as experience did open myne eyes, and sawe the thyng that I feared more than death. For whiche cause my loue was tourned into furie and dispayre, so great, as I watched her so nere, that vppon a daye fayning my selfe to goe abroade, I hydde my selfe in the chamber where nowe shee remayneth. Into the whiche sone after my departure shee repayed, and caused the gentleman to come thither. Whome I did beholde to doe that thing, which was altogether vnmeete for any man to doe to her, but my selfe. But when I sawe him mounte vppon the bed after her, I stepped forth and tooke him betwene her armes, and with my dagger immediatly did kill him. And because the offence of my wife semed so great as the doing of her to death was not sufficient to punish her, I deuised a torment which in mine opinion is worse vnto her than death. For thus I vse her, I doe locke her vp in the chamber wherein she accustomed to vse her delightes, and in the companie of hym that she loued farre better than me. In the closet of which chamber I haue placed the anatomie of her friend, reseruing the same as a precious iewell. And to the ende shee may not forget him at meales, at the table before my face, she vseth his skulle in

steade of a cup to drinke in, to the intent she may behold him (aliue) in the presence of him whom through her owne fault she hath made her mortal enemy, and him dead and slain for her sake, whose loue she preferred before mine. And so beholdeth those twoo thinges at dinner and supper which ought to displease her moste, her enemy liuing, and her friend dead, and al through her own wickednesse, howbeit I doe vse her no worse than my self, although shee goeth thus shauen: for the ornament of the heare doth not appertaine to an adultresse, nor the vayle or other furniture of the head to an vncast woman. Wherefore she goeth so shauen, in token she hath lost her honestie. If it please you, sir, to take the payne to see her, I wil bring you to her." Whereunto Bernage willingly assented. And descending into her chamber whiche was very richely furnished, they founde her sitting alone at the fier. And the gentleman drawing a curteine, whiche was before the closet, he sawe the anatomie of the dead man hanging. Bernage had a great desire to speake vnto the ladye, but for feare of her husband he durst not. The gentleman perceiuing the same, said vnto him: "If it please you to speake vnto her, you shal vnderstand her order of talke." Therewithall Bernage sayde vnto her: "Madame, if your pacience be correspondent to this torment, I deme you to be the happiest woman of the worlde." The lady with teares trickeling downe her eyes with a grace so good and humble as was possible, spake thus vnto him: "Sir, I doe confesse my fault to be so great, as all the afflictions and torment that the lorde of this place (for I am not worthy to call him husbände) can doe vnto me, be nothing comparable to the sorrowe I haue conceiued of myne offence." And in saying so, she began pitifully to weepe. Therewithall the gentleman toke Bernage by the hande, and led him forth. The next day morning he departed about the businesse whiche the king had sent him. Notwithstanding, in bidding the gentleman fare well, he sayde vnto hym: "Sir, the loue whiche I beare vnto you, and the honor and secretes wherewith you haue made me priuie, doth force me to saye vnto you howe I doe thinke good (seing the great repentance of the poore gentlewoman your wife) that you doe shewe her mercie. And bicause you be yong and haue no children, it were a verie great losse and detriment to

THE FIFTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

A president of Grenoble aduertised of the ill gouvernement of his wife, tooke such order, that his honestie was not diminished, and yet reuenged the facte.

IN Grenoble (the chiefe citie of a countrie in Fraunce called Daulphine, which citie otherwise is named Gratianapolis) there was a president that had a very fayre wife, who perceiuing her husbande beginne to waxe olde, fell in loue with a yong man that was her husband's clark, a very propre and handsome felowe. Vpon a time when her husband in a morning was gone to the palace, the clarke entred his chamber and tooke his maister's place, whiche thing one of the presidente's men, that faithfully had serued him the space of xxx. yeres like a trustie seruaunt perceiuing, could not keepe it secret, but tolde his maister. The president whiche was a wise man, would not beleue it vpon his light report, but sayde that he did it of purpose to set discord betwene him and his wife, notwithstanding if the thing were true as he had reported, he might let him see the thing it selfe, whiche if he did not, he had good cause to thinke that he had deuised a lye to breake and dissolue the loue betwene them. The seruaunt did assure him that he would cause him to see the thing wherof he had tolde him. And one morning so sone as the president was gone to the court, and the clarke entred into his chamber, the seruaunt sent one of his companions to tel his maister that he might come in good time, to see the thing that he had declared vnto him, he himself standing stil at the doore to watch that the partie might not goe out. The president so sone as he sawe the signe that one of his men made vnto him, fayning that he was not wel at ease, left the audience, and spedely went home to his house, where he founde his olde seruaunt watching at the chamber dore, assuring him for truth that the clarke was within, and that he should with spede to goe in. The president sayd to his seruaunt: "Do not tarrie at the dore, for thou knowest ther is no other going out or comming in but onely this, except a litle closet

to weare, and to haunt and resort to company and feastes, willing the clarke to make a better countenance on the matter then hee did before, but whensoever he rounded him in the eare and bad him depart, he charged him after that commaundement not to tarry foure houres in the towne. And when he had thus done, he retourned to the palace courte, as though there hadde no sutch thing chaunced. And the space of fiftene dayes (contrary to his custome) he feasted his frendes and neighbours, and after euery those bankettes, he caused the minstrels to play, to make the gentlewomen daunce. One daye he seing his wife not to daunce, he commaunded his clarke to take her by the hande, and to leade her forth to daunce, who thinking the president had forgotten the trespasse past, very ioyfully daunced with her. But when the daunce was ended, the president faining as though he would haue commaunded him to doe something in his house, bad him in his eare to get him away and neuer to retourne. Now was the clark very sorowfull to leaue his lady, but yet no lesse ioyfull he was that his life was saued. Afterwardes when the president had made all his frendes and kinsfolkes, and all the countrey, beleue what great loue he bare to his wife, vppon a faire day in the moneth of May, he went to gather a sallade in his garden, the herbes wherof after she had eaten, she liued not aboue xxiv. houres after, whereof he counterfaieted suche sorrowe, as no man could suspect the occasion of her death. And by that meanes he was reuenged of his enemy, and saued the honour of his house.

“ ¶ I will not by this nouell (said Emarsuite) prayse the conscience of the president, but herein I haue declared the light behaiour of a woman, and the great pacience and prudence of a man: praying you good ladies all, not to be offended at the truthe.” “ If all women (quoth Parlamente) that loue their clarkes or seruantes, were forced to eate such sallades, I beleue they would not loue their gardens so well as they doe, but woulde teare and plucke vp all the herbes bothe roote and rinde, to auoyde those thinges that by death might aduaunce the honor of their stock and ligneage.” “ If sallades be so costly (quod Hircan) and so daungerous in May, I will prouoke appetite with other sawces, or els hunger shall be my chiefest.”

THE FIFTY-NINTH NOUELL.

A gentleman of Perche, suspecting iniurie done vnto him by his friend, prouoked him to execute and put in proufe the cause of his suspicion.

BESIDES the countrie of Perche, there were two gentlemen, which from the tyme of theyr youthe lyued in sutch great and perfect amitie, as there was betwene them but one harte, one bed, one house, one table, and one purse. Long time continued this perfect frendship: betwene whom there was but one will and one woorde, no difference in either of them: in so muche as they not onely semed to be two brethren, but also they appeared in al semblances to be but one man. One of them chaunced to mary: notwithstanding they gaue not ouer their frendship, but perseuered in their vsual amitie as they were wont to doe: and whan they happened to be strained to straight lodging, the married gentleman would not stick to suffer his friend to lie with him and his wife. But yet you ought for frendship sake to consider that the married man lay in the mids. Their goodes were common betwene them, and the mariage did yelde no cause to hinder their assured amitie. But in processe of time, the felicitie of this worlde (whiche carieth with it a certaine mutabilitie) could not continue in the house, which was before right pleasaunt and happy: for the married man forgetting the faithfull fidelitie of his friend, without any cause conceiued a greate suspicion betwene hym and his wyfe, from whom he could not dissemble the case, but sharply tolde her his mynde. She therewithall was wonderfully amazed: howbeit, he commaunded her to doe all thinges (one thing excepted) and to make so muche of his companion as of him selfe. Neuerthesse he forbad her to speake vnto hym except it were in the presence of many. All whiche she gaue her husbande's companion to vnderstande, who would not beleue her, knowyng that hee had neither by thought or deede done anye thing whereof his companion had cause to be offended. And likewyse because he vsed to kepe nothing secrete from hym, he tolde him what he

had sayde, praying hym to tell him the truthe of the matter, because he purposed neither in that, ne yet in any other thing, to geue occasion of breach of that amitie which of long time they had imbraced. The married gentleman assured him that he neuer thought it, and how they which had sowed that rumor, had wickedly belied him. Whereunto his companion replied: "I knowe wel enough that ielousie is a passion so intollerable as loue it selfe. And when you shall conceiue that opinion of ialousie, yea and it were of my selfe, I should do you no wrong, for your selfe were not able to kepe it. But of one thing which is in your power, I haue good matter whereof to complayne, and that is because you will concele from me your maladie, sith there was no passion or opinion whiche you conceiued, that before this time you kept secret from me. Likewise for my own parte if I were amorous of your wife, you ought not to impute it as a fault vnto me, because it is a fier which I bare not in my handes, to vse at my pleasure. But if I kepe it to my selfe from you, and indeuour to make youre wife knowe it by demonstration of my loue, I might then be accompted that vntrustiest frend that euer liued: and for me I doe assure you that shee is a right honest and a good woman, and one that my fansie doth lest fauour (although she were not your wife) of all them that euer I sawe. But nowe sithens there is no cause, I do require you that if you perceiue any suspicion, be it neuer so litle, to tell me of it, because I would so vse myself, as our frendship which hath indured so long tyme, might not bee broken for a woman: and if I did loue her aboue any thing in the worlde, yet surely I would neuer speake worde vnto her, bicause I doe esteme our frendship better then the greatest treasure." His companion swore vnto him very great othes that he neuer thought it, praying him to vse his house as he had done before. Whereunto he aunswered: "Sithe you will haue me so to doe, I am content: but I praye you if hereafter you doe conceiue any sinistre opinion in me, not to dissemble the same, which if you doe I will neuer continue longer in your companie." In processe of time, liuing together according to their custome, the married gentleman entred againe into greater ielousie than euer he did, commaunding his wife to beare no more that counte-

THE SIXTIETH NOUELL.

*The piteous death of an amorous gentleman, for the slacke comfort
geuen him to late, by his beloued.*

BETWENE Daulphine and Prouence, there was a gentleman, more riche and better furnished with beautie, vertue, and good condicions, then with the goodes of fortune: who fill in loue with a gentlewoman that for this time shall want a name, for respecte of her parentes that are come of honorable houses, and the gentleman's name also shalbe vntolde, for like respecte, although altogether not so honorably allied, as the gentlewoman that he loued, and yet the historie very certen and true. And bicause his degree was not so highe as hers, hee durst not discouer his affection: for the loue which he bare her, was so good and perfect, as rather would he haue bene tormented with the panges of death, then couet the least aduantage that might redounde to her dishonor. And seing his state to base in respecte of hers, had no hope to marry her. Wherefore he grounded his loue vpon none other foundation and intent, but to loue her with all his power so perfectlye as was possible, which in the ende came vnto her knowledge. And the gentlewoman knowing and seing the honest amitie which he bare her, to be ful of vertue, ioyned with chast and comly talke, felt her selfe right happie to be beloued and had in prise, of a personage so well condicioned, practising dayly cherefull countinaunce towards him (whiche was the best rewarde he pretended to haue) whereof he conceiued great ease and contentment. But malice the cancred enemy of all reste and quiet, could not long abide this honest and happie life. For some frowning at his good happe, (as malice euer accompanieth a well disposed mynde) tolde the mother of the mayden, howe they marueiled that the gentleman should bee so familiar in her house, inferring therewithall that the beautie of her daughter was the only cause, with whom they sawe him many times to vse secrete and priuat speach. The mother which by no meanes doubted the honestie of the gentleman, no more then shee did

this lowe estate, one of his frends certified the mother of his mistres, that was a very charitable and kinde gentlewoman, and loued so well the man, as if all their parentes and kinne had bene of her's and the mayden's opinion they would haue preferred the honestie of him, before the great substance of the other. But the frendes of the father's side by no meanes would consent vnto it. Yet the good gentlewoman and her daughter (for all the other's frowardnes) vouchsafed to visit the poore gentleman whom they founde, rather declining towards death, then in hope of life. And knowing his ende to approche, he was shriuen and receiued the holy sacrament, purposing of present passage by panges of death, neuer to see any of his frendes againe. Being in this case and yet seing her, whome he counted to be his life and sautie, felte suche soudden recouerie, as hee threwe hym selfe alofte his bedde and spake these wordes vnto her: "What cause hath driuen you hither (mistres myne) by takyng paines to visite him, who hath one of his feete alreadie within the graue, the other stepping after with conuenient speede, for execution whereof you bee the onely instrument." "Howe so, sir?" sayde the mother. "Is it possible that hee, whome we so derely loue, can receiue death by our offences? I pray you sir to tell me, what reason leadeth you to speake these wordes." "Madame," sayde he, "so long as I could, I dissembled the loue that I bare to my deare mistres your daughter: so it is that my parentes and frendes speaking of a mariage betwene her and mee, haue clattered thereof moe nedeles woordes then I desired, by waying the mishap that might insue, and nowe doth happe past all hope not for my particular pleasure, but bicause I knowe with none other she shalbe so well intreated nor beloued as she should haue bene with me. The benefit which I see she hath lost, is the most perfect frende and best affected seruauant that euer shee had in this worlde, the losse wherof sommoneth death to arrest the carcase, that should haue bene employed for her seruice, which intierly was conserued and should haue bene for her sake: but sithe nowe it can serue her to no purpose, the simple losse shall redounde to greatest gaine. I meane my selfe (good ladies bothe) that lieth bewrapped in death before your faces, whose withered

wife, and commaunde her to imbrace and kisse me." The mayden not vsed to such priuie sutes, ne yet acquainted with such secrete facts, made some difficultie, but her mother gaue her expresse commaundement to doe it, perceyuing in him no likelihode or force of a man to liue. The maiden then vpon that commaundement, aduaunced herselfe vpon the bedde of the poore pacient, saying vnto him: " Sir, I beseech you to be of good cheere." The languishing creature, so hard as he could for his extreeme debilitie, stretched forth his faint consumed armes, and with al the force of his body imbraced the cause of his death, and kissinge her with his colde and wanne mouth, helde her so long as he could, and then spake vnto the mayden: " The loue which I haue borne you hath bin so great, and the good will so honest, as neuer (marriage excepted) I wished anye other thinge of you, but that which I presentlye haue, throughe the wante whereof and with the same I will ioyfully render my spirite to God, who is the parfaite loue, and truest charitie, whoe knoweth the greatnes of my loue and the honestie of my desire: humblie beseeching him, (that nowe I hauing my desire betweene mine armes,) to interteigne my ghost within his blessed bosome." And in saying so he caught her againe betweene his armes with such vehemencie, as the feeble hart not able to abide that assault, was abandoned of all powers and mouinges: for the instant ioye so dilated and stretched forth the same, as the siege of the soule gaue ouer, making his repaire and flighte to his Creator: and because the senceles bodye rested withoute life, it gaue ouer his holde. Howbeit the loue, which the damosell had still kept secrete, at that time shewed it self so stronge and mightie, as the mother and seruauntes of the dead gentleman had much a do to separate that vnion, but by force they haled away the liuing, almost deade with the deade. And the funerall was done wyth honourable exequies: but the greatest triumph was spent in teares, weepinges and cryes, specially by the gentlewoman, which so much more were manifeste after his death, as before in his life time they were dissembled, bestowinge them as an expiacion or sacrifice, to satisfie the wrong she had done vnto him. And afterwards (as I haue heard tell) she was married to one, for mitigacion of her sorow, that neuer was par-

THE SIXTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A Gentlewoman of the Courte, very pleasauntly recompenced the service of a kinde seruaunte of her's, that pursued her with service of loue.

IN the courte of king Fraunces, the first of that name, not longe sithens Frenche king, the graunde father of Henry the III. of that name now raigning: there was a gentlewoman of good grace and interteignment, wanting not both minde and witte, such as the like of her sexe are not to seeke, vnder what climate soeuer they be borne and bred, whose comly demeanor, curteous behauiour and eloquent speache, was agreeable to her other qualities of nature's giftes: whereby she gayned the hartes and good minds of numbers of seruauntes, with whom shee was cunning ynough to spend her time, (hauing respect to the sauftie and saufgard of her honor, which she preferred before all other solace) by such delectable consumption of time, as they that could not tell howe els to imploie their leasure, thoughte themselues most blessed, if they might attaine the delightfull presence of this well nourtered dame. For they that made greatest assuraunce of her fidelitie, were in dispayre, and the most desperat were yet in some hope to winne her. Howbeit in deceyuing the most number, she could not forbear intirely to loue one, who for his part was not able to plaie the counterfait, to colour the substance of his longe pursute: but as nothing is sure and stable, their loue tourned to displeasure, and by frequent renewing of what was well knowen, the hole court was not ignoraunt, what deuocion thone did beare to thother. One day the gentlewoman, aswell to let him know that his affection was not bestowed in vaine, as to make him to feelee some smart and paine for his louing service, the more louingly to forde him on, with preety morsells of her dissembling concept, made show vnto him of greater fauour, then euer she did before: for which cause he that was faultles either in deedes of armes, or in prowesse of loue, began liuely and valiantly to folow her, to whom long before with gentlenes and humilitie he

hearing, I know full well in hart he will wishe me x.m. mischifes." This conclusion was not spoken without treble laughter: for there was no gentleman in all the courte, that had warred so much with the woman kind as hee, and yet welbeloued and esteemed of euery one, that listed not to be intrapped within his daunger. Therefore these ladies thinking to carie awaye some part of the glorie, which one alone hoped to atchieue vpon this gentleman, were contente to assent to the other's liking. So sone then as they saw her depart, that purposed this enterprise, they began to espie the countenance of the betrayed partie, who paused not long before he exchaunged the place: and when he was oute of the chamber, the ladies trayned after, to lose no part of the sport, and went the faster that he might not be out of theyr sight. And he that doubted not the successe, threw his cape about his necke to hide his face, and went downe the staiers out into the court, and afterwards mounted vp againe: but perceyuing some approche which he was loth should be a witnes, he went downe againe, returning another way on the other side: all which the ladies sawe, vnknown to him. But when he came to the stayers where he beleueed verely, that he might surely enter into his maistres chamber, the two ladies put theyr heads out of the window, and incontinently perceyued the gentlewoman alofte, crying out a lowde, "A theefe, a theefe:" wherunto they two below aunswered with so vehement voyce, doubling the other's outcrie, as all the castell ronge of it. I leaue for you to consider in what despite this gentleman fled to his lodginge, but not so closely, but that he was ouertaken by those that knew this misterie: who afterwards oftentimes reproched this fact vnto him, speciall she that had deuised the reuenge: but hee had armed himselfe with aunswers and defences so readely, as he told them that he foreknew their deuise, and mente nothing by his pilgrimage but to solace his beloued. For of her loue long time before he was out of all hope, as hauing reasonable prooffe by his longe pursute and seruice: howbeit the ladyes would not hold his excuse for a veritie, which euen to this day hangeth in suspence.

plexions and condicions were very like, and by vse of seuerall complaints made one to another, ech of them fell in earnest loue with the other: and being both thrall vnto mishap, they sought desired comforte by vertuous and honest talke: and by that vse and frequentacion greater loue increased and grew betwene them. Those which had seene the maiden so straungly retired from wonted demeanor, as she would speake to none, now marking her continuallie to interteigne the bastard gentleman, incontinently conceived ill opinion of her, and told the mother of the queene's maids (called Modesta) that she ought not to suffer such familiaritie betwene them. Which report Modesta reuealed to Rolandine, sayinge that diuers persons did speake euill of her, for that she vsed to talke with the bastard, that neither was of sufficient abilitie for her to marie, ne yet of beautie worthie to be beloued. Rolandine which daily was more rebuked for her austeritie of life, then for worldly toyes, sayd vnto Modesta her gouernesse: "Alas, mother, you see that I cannot haue a husband according to the worthines of my bloud, and that dailie I haue auoyded those which be beautifull and yonge: for feare to incurre the inconuenience wherinto I haue seene other to fall: and now hauing chosen this wise and vertuous gentleman, who preacheth vnto me words that be good and godly, what wrong do they to me that make this report, sith in this honest order I do receiue consolacion of my griefes?" The good old lady who loued the maiden (which she called maistresse) as herselfe, said vnto her: "I see well, that you are worse delt withall at your father and maistres handes then you deserue. Howbeit sith such reporte is made of your honor, you ought to refuse to speake vnto him, although he were your naturall brother." Rolandine weeping saide vnto her: "Mother, for so much as you aduise me therunto, I wil performe your request, although it be very straunge that without slaunder, a woman can haue no comfort or seeke freedome without misreport." The bastard gentleman, as he was before accustomed, came to visite her, but she told him (a farre of) those words which her gouernesse had said vnto her: and with teares prayed him to refraine for a time to speake vnto her, vntill the brute and rumor were somewhat appaised: which thing he did at her request. But

was this. The Wednesday, Fridaye and Saturday, the gentlewoman vsed to fast, and for that purpose kept her chamber with her gouernesse Modesta, where she had leysure to talke (whilest the reste did suppe) with him whom she began so earnestlie to loue: and as constrainte of time did force their talke to be shorte, the greater was their affection in vtteraunce of the same: because for the doing therof they stole time, as the theefe doth his desired praye. This order of their contentacion could not proceede so secretely, but that a certaine varlet a yeoman of the chamber, chaunced to see him resort vnto her vpon a fasting day, and told it in such place wher of some hearer, it was disclosed to the queene herself, who was so sore offended as neuer after that time the poore bastard gentleman durste once attempt to go into the maiden's chamber againe. And to thintent that he might not lose the commodity of talke with her, whom he so derely loued, oftentimes he fayned himselfe to go on pilgrimage, and in the euening returned to the church and chapell of the castel, in the habite of a frier, or Iacobin (so wel disguised and altered, as no creature could know him) and thither repaired the gentlewoman Rolandine, with her gouernesse to enterteigne him. He marking the great loue that she bare him, feared not to say vnto her: "Madame, you see the daunger which I hasard for your seruice, and the warnings that the queene hath giuen for our talke. You see on thother side what a father you haue, who careth not after what sort he bestow you in mariage: and you hauinge refused so many greate states and noble men, I know not one, either farre or neare, that is minded to haue you. I confesse my selfe to be but poore, and that you may marie diuers gentlemen of greater reputacion and riches, then I am: but if loue and good wil were deemed treasure and riches, then woulde I presume to be the richest gentleman of the world. God hath indowed you with great plentie of goodes, and you are yet in choise to haue more: and if I were so happie as you would vouchsafe to chose me for your husband, I would accompt my selfe to be vnto you both husband, frend and seruauant, all the dayes of my life: and againe, if you should take one equall to your nobilitie (a thinge very harde to finde) he woulde rule and gouerne ouer you, and haue more respecte to your goodes, then to

the bastard gentleman willingly did graunt: and vpon these promises and termes, either of them gaue eche other a ringe in the name of mariage, and did kisse together in the church before God, whom they toke to witnes of their assurance, and neuer after betwene them was any other priuie fact committed, but only kissing. This litle easement of mind did greatly satisfie the harts of these two perfect louers: and were a great while without seing ech other, liuing only by this assurance. There was no place where honour mighte be gotten, but thereunto the bastarde made his repaire with so great delight, as he thought he could neuer be poore for respect of that riche wife which God had prouided for him. Which wyfe in his absence, did euer continue her absolute amitie towards that gentleman: and although many made sute yet they receyued none other aunswere from her but deniall, and for that she had remayned so long time vnmarried, she was minded neuer to take vpon her that state. This her aunswere was so generall as the queene heard of it, and asked her for what occasion shee was so determined. Rolandine saide vnto her, that it was to obey her: for that shee knew shee would neuer suffer her to marie, because in time and place where she might haue bin honorablie matched to her well liking, she denied the same, and that the vertue of pacience had taught her to content herselfe with the state wherein she was. And still as she was sued for in mariage, she rendred like aunswere. When the warres were ended, and the bastarde returned to the courte, shee neuer spake vnto him in open presence, but wente alwayes into some church to interteigne him vnder colour of confession: for the queene had forbidden both him and her, that they should not talke together, vnlesse it were before companye vpon paine of losse of their liues. But honest loue, which feareth no defence, was more prest to find meanes, for their mutuall talke, then their enemies were ready to seporate the same: and vnder the habite or colour of all the religions they could deuise, they continued that honest amitie, vntil the king remoued into a house of pleasure, not so nere as the ladies were able to go on foote to that church, as they were to the church of the castell, which was not situate in such conueniente wyse for their purpose, as they could secretely re-

dine did, who sayd that shee might very wel see her, if it were her pleasure: and caused her to come to the window wyth her night geare vppon her head. And after they had talked a while of her sicknes they withdrew themselues: the other ladie espying the great booke of the Round Table, sayde to her yeoman of the chamber: "I do marueile much why yong men do imploie themselves to read such follies." The yeoman made aunswere, that he marueled much more, why men of good yeres, counted and esteemed wise and discrete, should haue greater delight in reading of such trifles, then those that were yong. And to iustifie that maruel hee told her how her cosin the bastard did spend iij. or v. houres in a day to read vppon the same. Vpon which words by and by she conceyued the cause of his deepe studie, and charged him to hide himself in some place to mark what he did. Which commaundement the yeoman performed, and perceiued that the booke which the bastard read vpon, was the window out of which Rolandine talked with him: and therewithal called to remembrance many words of the loue which they thought to keepe very secrete. The next day he rehersed the same vnto his maistresse, who sent for her cosin the bastard, and after many tales told him, she forbad him to resorte thither any more, and at night she gaue like warning to Rolandine, threatninge her that if she continued in her fond and foolish loue, she woulde tell the queene the whole circumstaunce of her lighte demeaner. Rolandine (nothing astonied with those woords) did sweare that sith the time she was forbidden by her maistresse the queene's maiestie, she neuer spake vnto him: the troth whereof shee might learne aswel of the gentlewomen her companions, as of other seruantes of the house: and touching the window whereof she spake, she boldly aduouched that she neuer talked with the bastard there. Who (poore gentleman) fearing that his affayres would be reuealed, kept himself farre out from daunger, and longe time after did not retourne to the courte. Howbeit, he wrote many times to Rolandine by such secret meanes as for all the espiall that the queene had put, there passed no weeke but twise at least shee hearde newes from him: and when one meanes did fayle hym, hee deuised another, and many tymes sent a litle page clothed

partly by rigor, and somewhat by faire perswasion to make him confesse the truthe: but neither through promise or threate, they could get any thing at his handes. Report hereof was brought to the queene, and one of the companie gaue aduise that searche should be made behind the gate, where he was taken: in which place they founde nothing but litle peces of letters. Then they caused the kinge's confessor to be sent for, who recouering the peces layd them vpon a table, and red the lettre throughout, where the veritie of the mariage (so much dissembled) was thoroughly discifered, for the bastard in those letters called her nothing els but wife. The queene not meaning to conceale the fault of her kinswoman, (which she ought to haue done) fil into a great rage and storme, commaunding that the poore man by al meanes possible, should be forced to confesse the true tenor of that letter, to thintent that the same by his affirmacion might not be denied: but doe what they could, they were not able to make him alter his former tale. They which had commission to examine him, brought him to the riuer side and did put him into a sack, saying that he did lie before God and the queene, and against an aproued trothe. He that had rather lose his life then accuse his maister, prayed them to suffer him to haue a ghostly father that like a christian he might ende his life, and so entre the ioyes prepared for all repentant sinners, and after that he had clered his conscience, he said vnto them: " Maisters, tell my lorde and maister the bastarde, that I recommend vnto him the poore estate of my poore wife and children, trusting his honour will haue consideration of them for my sake, for so much as with good and loyall harte, I doe imploie my life for his honor and suretie: and with me doe what you list, for you get nothing at my handes that shall redounde to his hurt and preiudice." Then to put him in greater feare, they bounde him within the sacke and threwe him into the water, crying vnto him, if thou wilt tell the trouth thou shalt be saued: but they seing that he would make no answer drew him out againe, making reporte to the queene of his faith and constancie. Who then sayd, that neither the king nor she were so happy in seruauntes as the bastarde was, that had not wherewith to recompence such fidelitie. The quene did

persones is to be regarded, that meane to accomlishe the holy state of wedlock: for you knowe that his father in nobilitie farre excelled myne. He hath of long time loued me, and made great sute vnto me, but you madame, whiche neuer pardoned me for any small offence, ne yet praysed anye good acte of myne (although you know by experience that I haue not vsed to talke of matters of loue or other worldlie affaires, and that I minded aboue all thinges to leade a more religious life then any other) doe make it an hainous matter that I should talke with a gentleman (so infortunate as my selfe) by whose loue, I thought or sought for nothing els but the ease and comfort of my minde. And seing my selfe voyde and frustrate of mine expectation, I shall imploie indeuour so well to seeke my rest and quiet, as you haue gone about to dispoyle me of the same: and then will celebrate the mariage which is already assured by promises and by a ring. Wherefore, madame, I thinke that you doe me great wrong by terming me to be a wicked woman, sithe that in so great and perfect amitie I might haue founde occasion (if I would) to haue committed euills: but there was neuer betwene him and me any priuie fact, other then that is honest, hoping that God wil shewe me such fauour, as before the mariage be consumat, I shall obtaine the fauour and good will of my lorde my father: wherby I do neither offende God, nor my conscience, for I haue taried till the age of xxx. yeares, to see what you and my father would doe for me. I haue kept my selfe so chaste and honest, as no man liuing is able to laye the contrarie to my charge. And with that reason wherewith God hath indued me, being olde and voyde of hope, to finde a husbände agreable to my nobilitie, I am determined to marie sutche a one as I like beste, not for the pleasure or satisfaction of the eye (for you knowe he is not faire) nor for lust of the flesh (for there hath bene no carnall fact committed) ne yet for pryde, and couetousnes (for he is but poore and of litle estimation) but I haue a sincere respecte and pure regarde to his vertue, honestie and good grace, for whiche the worlde doth geue him praise, and the great loue also that he beareth me, maketh me hope to finde with him great rest and quiet. And after I had deuised and considered the good and euill that might insue by

thus without feare to saye my minde is, because I am assured that he whiche seeth my harte, is the geuer of my life also, and remaineth with me. If then such a iudge and guide doe order and dispose my life, why should I be afrayd of them that be subiect vnto his iudgement? And why then madame, should I wayle or wepe, sithe mine honor and conscience without remorse or grudge do wel like of these my doings, which if they were newly to begin, I would not repent me to doe the same againe. But it is you (madame) that hath good cause to wepe, as well for the great displeasure, euer borne me from my youthfull dayes, as for the wrong you doe me now by reprehending me before the face of all the worlde for a faulte, whiche ought rather to be imputed vnto you, then vnto me. For if I had offended God, the king, or you, my parentes, or my conscience, I were well worthy to be counted very obstinate, if with great repentaunce I did not lament the same, but for a dede that is right good and vertuous, I ought not to wepe, whereof there was neuer other rumor spred but verie honorable, except the slaunder which your selfe hath raised, wherby your desire to increase my shame and dishonor appeareth to be greater then the respecte you haue to conserue the nobilitie of your house, or kindred wherof you come. But because it pleaseth you, madame, so to vse me, I purpose not to withstand you. For when you shall ordeine that punishment for me, which you like best, I shal reioyse no lesse to suffer the same without desert, then you be willing to bestowe it vpon me without cause. Wherefore madame, commaunde my lorde my father to put me to what torment you will, for the execution wherof you shall not finde him vnwilling. And I shall not be altogether without ioy, to see him prest and redie to obey your wilfull mynde. But I haue a father in heauen, who (I am sure) will geue me suche pacience, as I shall be able to abide and indure, what affliction soeuer you prepare for me, in whom only is al my hope and trust." The queene, so angrie as she could be, commaunded her out of her sight, and to be shutte into a chamber alone, that none might speake vnto her. In which imprisonment shee was not depriued from the companie of her gouernesse, by whose meanes she let the bastarde vnderstande all her fortune, and she

reasonable: for if loue and good will founded vpon the feare of God, were the true and sure knot of mariage, then she was so wel bounde and tied, as neither iron, fier, or water coulde breake that band, but death alone. Wherunto, and to none other constitution, she was determined to rendre her ring and othe, praying them not to speake, do, or proceede, to any thing that were contrarie vnto that: wherin she was so stedfastly resolved, as she had rather die by keping her faith, then liue to denie the same. The commissioners returned to the king and queene the constant answer of the gentlewoman, and when they sawe no remedie could be found to make her renounce her husband, they conueyed her home to her father, in such pitifull sorte, as by the way she passed, eche man and woman lamented her fortune. And albeit shee had offended, yet the punishment and affliction she suffred, was so great and her constancie so firmly bent, as she made her fault to be esteemed a vertue. The father receiuing those pitifull newes, would not see her, but sent her to his castell that stoode in a forest, which he had before time builded for an occasion, worthy to be rehersed hereafter, and there kept her in prison a long time, sending worde vnto her, that if shee would forsake her husband, he would take her for his doughter, and set her at libertie. Who for all that offer was firme and constant, and loued her prison the better by obseruing the bond of mariage, then al the libertie of the world, without the hauing of her husband. And it semed by her countenaunce, that al the paynes she had indured were most pleasaunt pastimes, for that she suffred the same for his sake, whome she loued best. What should I speake of men? This bastarde at length became vnmindeful of her, and fled into Alemaine, where he had many frendes. Whose inconstancie afterwarde appeared so manifest, as the vertue of true and perfit loue outwardly seming to remain in him, was conuerted into the vice of odible ingratitude, whereby it was euident, that the causes that made him so hotte a suter, were the vglie monsters of auarice and ambition, where he fill in loue with an Almaine ladie, he forgetting to visite her with letters, that for his sake had sustained so great and manifold tribulations. For what rigor or affliction soeuer fortune offred, coulde neuer before that tyme put

with her father by humble sute, that he would vouchsafe to giue her leaue to speake vnto him. Who at their request, (although he neuer spake vnto her before, during the tyme of her imprisonment) incontinently was pleased so to doe. And after that he had herde the discourse of her iuste reasons, in place of rebukes, and his promise made to kill her (which many times he threatened by woordes) he cleped her betweene his armes, and bitterly weping, sayde vnto her: " Daughter, I wel perceiue your vertue and constant mynde, which farre surmounteth any thing that is good in mee, for if there be any faulte or lacke of consideration of your estate, I am the principal occasion thereof: but sith the goodnes of God hath thus ordeined it, I wil make satisfaction for mine offence past." And afterwarde he sent her home to his house, where he vsed and interteigned her like his derest and eldest daughter. In the ende she was demaunded in mariage by a gentleman of name and armes, to her estate and bloud not inferior. Who was bothe wise and vertuous, and so louingly regarded Rolandine (whome he many times visited) as he attributed vnto her the prise of prayse for that, which others accompted worthy of rebuke, knowing that her intent of former loue was grounded vpon the foundation of vertue. The mariage was well liked of her father, was acceptable to Rolandine, and was forthwith concluded. True it is that a brother she had, the only inheritour of her father's landes, who would not agree that she should receiue her childe's porcion, objecting that she had disobeied her father. And after the death of the good old man (her father) her brother vsed her very rigorously and cruelly. For her husbände was but a yonger brother, and had wherewithal scarce able to liue: for which want, God bountifully prouided: for the brother whose greedie minde did craue in one daie to be possessor of al, by sodain death was depriued, as well of his sister's porcion as of al the rest. By whose death she remained the whole inheritor of that honorable house: and afterwarde liued an honorable and stately life, in great wealth and pleasure, and was welbeloued and duetifully intreated of her husband. Finally hauing by her husband two goodly sonnes, she very vertuously brought them vp, and finishing her aged dayes, she ioyfully rendred her soule vnto him,

THE SIXTY-THIRD NOUELL.

The wisdom of a woman to withdrawe the foolish loue of her husband, wherewith he was tormented.

MANY yeares are not yet expired sithens there was a gentlewoman of noble house (whose name I maye not disclose), so wise and vertuous as shee was wel beloued and esteemed of her neighbours: her husband (not without good cause) trusted her in all his affaires, which she ordred and gouerned so wisely, as her house by her meanes grew to be one of the richest and best apparelled, that was in the countrie wherein she dwelled. Liuing thus a long time with her husbände, by whom shee had many goodly children, their happie state and felicitie (after which daily insue their contraries) began to decaie, because that he, defatigat-ed with to much quiet, abandoned restfull life, to seeke after troublesom trauell: and had gotten a custome when his wyfe was a sleepe to rise from her side, and not to retorne vntill it was very nere morning. The gentlewoman misliking this maner of life, became very ielous of her husband, and yet made as though she mistrusted nothing: but that spiteful passion entred her stomacke so farre, as in thende shee forgot thaffayres of her house, the diligence of her person, and good gouernment of her familie, like vnto one that verely supposed that (do what shee could) she had lost the fruite of her paine and labour, which was the great loue of her husband, for continuance whereof shee spared no trauaile or toile: but losinge altogether as shee manifestly perceiued, shee grew to be so carelesse of her housholde state and huswiferie, as speedelie appeared the fruites of slouth and negligence: for her husband for his part spent without order, and she staied her trauell from matters of housholde: in such wise as the same was growen to so great penurie, as the highe and statelie woodes were felled downe to the stubbe, and the goodly maners deliuered into the handes of sir Mathewe Morgage. One of the gentlewoman's frendes and kinsemen which knew her disease, tolde her of her fault, and rebuked her for that carelesse life: sayinge, that if loue

from an vncleane and stinking place, by which wordes she was desirous to let him vnderstande his follie thereby to hate his dishonest and filthie life. But for all that wyse and pretie taunte hee amended nothing at all: howbeit she continued that ordre the space of one yere. And when she sawe, that her diligence could not reforme his vsuall trade of lyfe, on a tyme wayting for her husband, whiche taried longer then he was wont to doe, shee was desirous to seeke hym out, and went from chamber to chamber, till at lengthe shee founde hym a bedde in a back chambre and a sleepe with the moste ill fauoured, foule and filthiest slutte of her house, such a homely pece and durty beaste, as the lyke was not to be founde in a countrie. The gentlewoman beholding this manerly sight, thought to teache him a lesson howe to remembre the difference betwene the sweete and pleasaunt lodging, with a fayre and duetifull wife, and the vncleanly couching with a stinking and lothsome queane. Wherupon she caused a burden of strawe and worne rushes to be brought vnto her, setting the same on fier in the middes of the chamber, but when she sawe her husband almoste choked with the great smother, she waked hym, and plucked him out of the bed by the armes, crying: "fier, fier." If the husbände were ashamed, and offended with him selfe to be founde a bedde with such an vncleanly matche, by his faire and honest wife, I referre the iudgement to all indifferent men, that be coupled with like wiues. Then his wyfe said vnto him: "Sir I haue assaied the space of one whole yeare, to withdrawe you from this vile and wicked life, by gentlenes and pacience, and shewed example by washing you without, that you might also clense your selfe within. But when I sawe myne endeouour could take no place, I attempted to helpe my selfe with the element that shall ende and consume vs all: assuring you, sir, that if this doe not amende you, I cannot tell if the seconde time, I be able likewise to ridde you from the daunger that may happen. I praye you sir to thinke and consider that there is no greater dispayre or dispite, then that whiche is conceiued of loue: and had I not set before mine eyes the feare of God, I could not haue practised suche pacience, as I haue done." The husband very glad, that he had escaped that misfortune, promised her neuer to geue occasion,

THE SIXTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The notable charitie of a woman of Tours towards her husbände.

ANOTHER hystorie of like example I thincke meete to bee aunexed: which telleth howe in the citie of Tours in Fraunce, there was a fayre and honest wyfe which for her vertues was not onely beloued, but also feared and esteemed of her husband. So it was that he followinge the fragilitie of those men, which be wearie of delicate fare, fill in loue with a woman of the countrie that kepte his house there, and many times departed from Tours to visite his countrie woman, where he commonly taried ii. or iii. dayes before his retorne: and when he came home againe to Tours, he ordinarily did take cold, whereof his good wife had much a do to recouer him. And so sone as he was hole, hee failed not to returne to the place, where pleasure made him forget all his former grieffe and sicknes. His wife which aboue all thinges loued his life and tendred his health, seinge him commonly broughte into so poore estate, went into the countrie, where she found out the yong woman that her husband loued. Vnto whom (not in choler but with smilinge cheere and countenaunce) shee sayd: "How she knew well that oftentimes her husband repaired thither to visite her, and that she was not well content that she vsed him no more carefully, for when he came home from her he toke so great cold as long time after she had much a doe to recouer him." The poore woman as wel for the reuerence of the dame, as for the trouth of the matter, could not denie the facte, and therefore fallinge downe vppon her knees, asked her forgiuenes. The maistresse required to see the bedde and chamber, where her husband laie, which she perceiued to be so cold, ill faouored, and out of order, as she pitied and lamented the case: wherefore incontinently she sent for a good bedde furnished with sheetes, blanquets and couerlet, accordingly as she knew her husband loued, causing the chamber to be repaired, hanged, and dressed vp, after the best maner: she gaue her also plate and vessell to serue her husband at meales, together with a punchion of wyne, spice, and other

THE SIXTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

*The simplicitie of an old woman, that offered a burning candle to S.
Iohn of Lions.*


IN the church of S. Iohn at Lions, there was a verie darke chappell, and within the same a tombe made of stone, erected for great personages, with pictures liuely wroughte, and about the same tombe there doe lie manye worthie knightes of great fame and valiaunce. Vpon a hote sommer's day, a souldiour walking vp and downe the church had great delight to sleape, and beholding that darcke chappell which was colde and freshe of ayre, thoughte to reste vpon the tombe as other did, besides whom he layed him downe to sleepe. It chaunced that a good old woman very deuoute, came thether when the souldior was in the depth of his sleepe. And after shee had sayd her deuotions, wyth a waxe candle in her hand, she would haue fastened the same vpon the tombe, and repaying nere the place where the souldiour lay, desirous to sticke it vpon his forehead, thinking it had been the stone, the waxe would take no hold. The old woman, which thought the cause that her candle would not cleane was the coldnesse of the image, she warmed the souldior's forehead with the flame of the candle, to sticke it faste. But the image which was not insensible, beganne to crye oute, whereat the poore woman was so afraide, as like one straught of her wittes, she brake into exclamacion crying: "A miracle! A miracle!" They within the church hearing an outcry of a miracle, ranne in heapes as though they had been madde, some to ring the belles, and some to see the miracle: whom the good woman broughte to see the image, which then was remoued: whereat many began to laughe. But diuers priestes not willing so to giue ouer so great a miracle, determined afterwards to vse that tombe in reuerence, therby to get money.

THE SIXTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

A Doctor of the lawes boughte a cup, who by the subtiltie of two false varlets, lost both his money and the cuppe.

To conclude our number of nouels, I haue thought good (gentle reader) to bringe in place a doctour and his wyfe, to giue thee a merye farewell: because thou haste hitherto so frendly and patientlye suffred thy selfe to be stayed in reading of the reste: wherefore with a pleasaunt adieu in a short and merie tale, which discloseth the subtiltie of two false knaues to beguile a poore doctor and his wyfe, I meane to end. And therfore do saye, that in the citie of Bologna in Italie, there was a worshipful doctor of the lawes, called maister Florien, which in other things sauing his profession, was but a slouen, and of so ill behauiour as none of his facultie the like: who by sauing of many crustes, had layed vp so good store of crownes, as he caused to be made a very great and costly cup of siluer, for payment of which cup he went to the goldsmithes house, and hauinge payed for the siluer, the guilt, and for the fashion, being without his clarke to carie it home, he prayed the goldsmith to lend him his man. By chaunce there were newly come to the citie, two yonge men that were Romaynes, which ranged vp and downe the streates with eares vpright, to view and marke every thinge done in the same, bearing about them counterfait iewels and lingots, guilt of S. Martine's touche, to deceiue him that would play the foole to buy them. One of them was called Liello and the other Dietiquo. These two marchantes being at good leasure to wander the streates, beholding the passangers to and fro, by fortune espied the goldsmithes man, who (to set forth the workemanship and making of the cup) caried the same open. These gallants bearing a spite of the cup, more for the siluer than for other malice, purposed to inuent some sleight to get the cuppe, and a farre of which slie pase, followed the goldsmithes man, of whom they craftelie inquired of the owner of the cup, and where hee had lefte maister Florien. When they had concluded vpon their enterprise, Liello (the finest boye

of them both) went straight to buy a lamprey of great price, and hiding the same vnder his cloake, repayed directly to maister doctour's house, where finding his wyfe of semblable wit and behauour that her husband was, with vnshamefast face and like grace, said vnto her: "Maistresse, maister Florein your husbände hath sent you a fishe, and prayeth you to dresse it and to make dinner readie, because he bringeth a company of other doctoures with him: in the meane time he requireth you, to retorne vnto him the cuppe againe, whiche hee sente you this morning by the goldsmith's man, because he had forgotten to stampe his armes vppon it." The woman receyuinge the fishe, franckly deliuered him the cup, and went about to prepare dinner. Liello (which hunted after gaine but better caught his prey) hied him a pace and conueyed himselfe with speede to the house of one of his countriemen, and there reioyced with his companion, attending for the comming of the royster Dietiquo, who taried in the towne, wayting and viewing what pursute was made after his fellowe. Sone after maister Florian returned to his house and finding his dinner more delicate than it was wont to be, marueyled, and asked his wyfe who was at all that coste. His wyfe very scornefully aunswered: "Why sir, haue you forgotten that you sente me word this morning that you would bring home with you diuers gentlemen to dinner?" "What" (quoth the doctour) "I thincke you be a foole." "I am not" (sayde shee) "and for better witnessse you sent mee this fishe, that I would you had better aduised before you had bestowed such coste." "I assure thee:" quoth hee, "I sent thee no fishe, but belike it was some folishe knaue that had forgotten his arrant and mistaken the house: but howsoeuer it was wyfe, we at this time will be content to fare well, at other mennes charge." "Why sir (sayd his wyfe) call your selfe to better remembrance, for he that brought the lamprey, came to me for your cup, by this token that you would haue your armes engrauen vppon the same." At those words the poore doctour, after he had discharged three or foure canons laden with haile shot of scolding words wente out into the streete, running hither and thither demanding of al them he met, if they saw none carrie a lamprey home to his house. And you would haue said



HARDING AND WRIGHT,
PRINTERS,
St. John's Square, London.



R6

~~56-1~~

AD-2





